THE DARK KING

BOOK 04

Ancient Xi

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

The Dark King

(黑暗王者)

by

Ancient Xi

(古羲)

Synopsis

Disaster outbreaks which ends the civilization we know.

Sleeping in the cold storage for three hundred years Dudian wakes up into a new “world”.

Copyright

All rights reserved.

English Translation by MadSnail @ WuxiaNation

Translation Edits by CursedReader, MrMartinke, spiritsong, Green Tea, lncendairy @ WuxiaNation

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ Hasseno Blog

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 301

Dudian determined that the building was desolate for some time. The lush vines had drilled into the building like a green snake through the windowsill, the door, and other places. Vegetation covered most of the building.

“Concrete?” Dudian was startled as he saw the rough surface of the building. This building was very similar to the houses from the old era. It was like a small flat. Moreover, from the damage and color of the cement on the walls, it seemed that it had been only about fifty years that it was not used. Was it built by the barbarians?

“Old Fulin said that they are savages who drink blood. How would they create such a building?” Dudian was puzzled: “Is it possible that the descendants of the people who survived the catastrophe three hundred years ago lived here? Maybe they left fifty years ago?”

It was possible to keep the building in good condition if it was inhabited for two hundred years.

Dudian looked back at a depth of forest where splitty was lingering. He saw that it had no intention to attack him, so he stepped into the weeds and into that familiar building.

Creak~~

Dust and sand fell, as the door of the building was slowly opened.

Dudian glanced at the room. There were rusty iron locks and traps. In addition to them, there was simple furniture and bed. Moreover, there was clothing scattered on the ground. Furniture was overturned onto the ground. The room was a mess. It seemed the owner had done all these things, before leaving the place.

Step by step Dudian went into the room. Overall the room was empty, and there were no possessions that were left. It was occupied by moss and vines. There were a few snakes in the corner. These snakes with colorful patterns drilled down the holes in the corner as soon as he entered the room.

Dudian withdrew his eyes as he walked into the other room.

Bam!

Splitty followed him inside. Its huge body broke open and collapsed the door frame.

Dudian looked back in a worry. He was worried that splitty would destroy the house and bury himself under the building.

Bam!

Dudian was about to return to the living room and leave the building when splitty's huge body dropped down. The place where it was standing couldn't withstand its weight.

“Is there a basement?” Dudian was startled as he quickly rushed in to check the place.

The darkness of the place didn’t affect his vision. He was shocked to find that it was a secret room which was used as a laboratory. There were a variety of tools for experiments as well as some sharp weapons hung on the wall. In addition to them, there were several huge benches!

A secret laboratory!

Dudian hesitated for a bit, but jumped down from the edge of the hold. He fell next to the splitty. Firstly, he opened a bit of distance from it and then looked at the large area. The place was more than 300 square meters big and was as big as a small basketball court.

There was another room in the front, and it was not sealed.

Dudian didn’t rush to check the next room as he was planning to observe this room carefully. He saw the two benches stained with dry blood. The benches were diagonal in shape. There was a dent as big as twenty centimeters at the edge of one of the benches. It seems it was hit by something.

He sniffed and sensed a familiar smell coming off from a white cloth over the bench. It gave the odor of the monster bones that could be found everywhere outside the giant wall.

Dudian stepped forward and pulled the white cloth.

Crash~~

There was a human skeleton lying on top the bench, and it was revealed as he pulled the white cloth.

Dudian observed the human bones. The skeleton was no different from an ordinary human regarding height and shape of the bones. The only difference was the bones in its mouth. It had very sharp and long canine teeth. They were much longer than an average dog's tooth. They were almost the length of a finger and were similar to the ones of vampires seen in movies of the old era. Dudian visualized that the fangs of this human would be outside of its lips and close to his chin if it was alive.

"Vampires?" Dudian's brows wrinkled. He knew that he had strayed upon a dark secret. Moreover, this secret involved the virus from the outside of the giant wall or related to the barbarians.

Dudian carefully checked the other features. However, except the fangs, there was nothing else that was extraordinary. He marked the picture in his mind as he turned to check the rest of the lab. There were huge glass cylinders. Scientists would use them to soak the tissues in so that they would last longer. But the water within the cylinders had become light green. Apparently, they had already been contaminated.

One of the cylinders had a tongue, a heart, and other parts while the second cylinder had the skin of a face soaked within it.

Dudian slightly frowned as he walked towards the front.

Splitty was shaking left and right. It came to a stop before the cylinders. It seems that the organs within the cylinders had attracted it, but splitty stood still in front of the cylinders without taking any action. It seemed that splitty was able to see that the ‘food’ had gone bad, so after a short pause it went after Dudian without touching anything.

Dudian looked back and increased his pace a bit. He didn’t want to be the food for a beast in this dark environment.

Dudian came to a corner. There was a large promenade which led to another room.

He wanted to enter, but his eyes caught onto the handle by the side of the wall.

“Is it a gear of some mechanism?” Dudian pondered as he stopped in front of the promenade. He saw that splitty slowly came over. But it stopped the moment Dudian halted his action.

Dudian took off a bit of dried blood from his body and threw it into the room.

Splitty’s attention was attracted to the room, and it looked at the piece of falling dry blood, but it still stood there like a stone.

Dudian was troubled as he thought about other ways to make it enter.

Fortunately, splitty began to move slowly into the room on its own.

Dudian’s eyes lit up as he quickly grabbed onto the handle and pulled it as soon as splitty entered the room.

Kacha!

Sounds of gears revolving echoed from the top of the room. Bam! Suddenly a big cage dropped down. It wasn’t exact pinpointing to the place where the splitty was standing. The edge of the cage was pressed against its hind legs.

Because of the pain splitty shrank back.

Boom! The iron cage landed, and splitty was caught inside.

Dudian was overjoyed. He thought that the mechanism would initiate an arrow attack and didn’t expect a cage.

Chapter 302

Splitty seemed to be frightened as the iron cage suddenly covered it. It shook its scythes in anger. After several rounds of clanking sounds the iron cage ruptured.

Dudian's mouth twitched as he wryly smiled.

He slowly retreated so that splitty wouldn't vent its anger on him. However, it seems splitty wasn't angry at him. It just cut off the cage and went out.

Dudian was relieved as he went through the promenade into the room. It was a storage room with several boxes on top of each other. He looked around as he saw the table in the room covered with the spider webs. There was an oil lamp on the desk.

Dudian opened the drawer below the desk. A striped snake jumped out of it.

Dudian's hands were lightning fast as he grabbed its tail and pulled it into two. He threw the dead body of the snake to the other side of the wall.

Splitty sensed the smell of the blood and picked it up to eat.

Dudian opened another drawer. There was a book with black cover. The contents were written in strange fonts. It was similar to the font used on the giant wall, but there were differences.

Dudian picked it up to look at it closely. The words were written densely, so he didn't understand anything.

"It's neither English nor Chinese... Is it a language from some other country?" Dudian frowned as he turned a few pages. He put it away. Afterward, he was planning to see if there is any record about this language in the chip.

Dudian checked to see if anything else was left behind. He was a bit disappointed. Dudian turned to look at splitty. It was staring back at Dudian as it gently rubbed its scythes.

"I have to find a way to trap this little guy. It's just impossible to kill it. If I could communicate with Old Fulin, then I could get a good cage and lock it inside. But temporarily there is no way to contact him. I have to get back, but I have to help it to hunt too. This way splitty would not be anxious ..."

He sighed as he rubbed his fingers. Dudian was thinking about a solution.

Dudian sighed. He could only compromise with the splitty. He couldn't trap it even if he wanted. Although it was possible, but the conditions were not ripe yet.

"The Holy Church wouldn't find it so soon. Even if they did, they wouldn't be able to capture it on the first try. However, if they capture splitty then his only choice would be to go outside the giant wall to hunt the adult splitter." Dudian made up his mind as

he came to a decision.

Splitty was lightly shaking like a seaweed. It seems that splitty was dozing off. Dudian picked up the book and slowly bypassed it. He went out of the underground laboratory and began to run out of the building.

Bang! Splitty also jumped out of the basement, but it fell back as the place collapsed.

Dudian was running in a single direction.

In about the time span of a few minutes, Dudian looked back to see splitty chasing after him.

Dudian wasn’t surprised. If he tried to compete with splitty, he would never be able to win. However, he used terrain to his advantage.

A wolf appeared on his way. It was extremely tall for a normal wolf. Almost as big as a calf. Its body was stretched in sweat.

The mutated wolf saw Dudian and rushed over as it wailed.

It leaped over at Dudian. However, Dudian’s punch hit its jaw and broke its jawbone.

Dudian didn’t stop, but grabbed its tail as he moved forward. He

constantly sensed the smell as he followed them to the direction of a small lake. The lake's waters were turbid. A faint shadow was swimming in the lake.

Dudian raised the wolf and crushed its head as he kicked it. After killing it, he whipped its body on the ground. Its bones were thoroughly crushed as the blood began to ooze out.

Dudian saw the shadow move towards them as it seemed to sense the smell of the blood.

Dudian shook the mutant wolf as he let its blood spill into the lake.

Splitty also caught up.

Dudian raised the corpse of the mutant wolf as he showed it to splitty. As it was getting close, he threw it to the lake.

Splitty stopped as it stood still in front of the lake.

Dudian slowly retreated for a few steps as he observed the splitty.

Kacha! Kacha!

The wolf's corpse fell into the lake. The creatures hidden within the lake attacked it, and churning sounds of bones echoed out. It had fiercely snatched the wolf's corpse. Occasionally black scales of

a large tail would burst out from the top of the lake creating big waves.

It seems that there were more than one of those creatures within the lake. The blood began to flow and redden the water.

Splitty was stimulated by the strong smell of the blood. It directly jumped into the lake as its scythes began to stab around. The density of the blood in the water increased. Apparently, splitty was killing and cutting the creatures.

Dudian was both relieved and shocked as he saw the scene. He didn't think that splitty wouldn't be afraid of water. It had thin wings, which could support its flight for small amounts of time. In short, this monster could survive in all three habitats.

Whoosh!

He took the opportunity to leave the place.

The creatures at the bottom of the lake continued to gather over.

Splitty was thumping down as it killed the mutant creatures that were scrambling to kill it. Soon almost ten meters of an area around splitty was colored bright red. The bloody waves surged.

"I don't think the creatures in the lake could be used for a long time to contain splitty. I have to eliminate my smell to get rid of it." After a few kilometers, he picked up large leaves and cleaned

the blood of the previous young splitter off his body. He rubbed the leaves over himself so that he could delude the splitty using this smell.

Dudian pulled out weeds as he kept running. He used them to rub off the rest of the blood. Moreover, the odor of the juice scattered from the weeds would be able to cover the smell of blood.

Dudian looked back after running for ten miles. Splitty was not chasing him. He looked around and found rotten mud. There were few swamp crocodiles on the surface. He ignored them as he stopped at the swamp and used the mud to smear on his own body. One of the crocodiles swam over. Its body was about five meters long, but it seemed petite and cute in comparison to the mutated crocodiles from the swamp outside the giant wall.

Dudian didn't hesitate to reach out to the crocodile that was close to him.

The crocodile opened its mouth to try to bite Dudian.

However, Dudian had long been prepared for its attack.

The crocodile bit onto the empty air as Dudian had disappeared with lightning speed.

Dudian didn't show mercy as he clung to the front of its mouth and fiercely pulled it. He dragged the crocodile to the shore. One of his hands seized its jaw and ruthlessly broke it apart.

Puff! The crocodile wanted to take advantage of the opportunity to bite him, but its mouth was broken, and blood spattered out.

Crocodile's body twisted in pain.

Dudian smashed on its head. He used both hands as he grabbed onto its jaw and twisted it. Its head was ripped off, and the crocodile died on the spot.

Dudian didn't hesitate to take the blood and smear it on his body to cover up his smell. Afterward, he abandoned the crocodile's body and recalled the previous route he took as a reference point towards the initial fortress they had seen. The giant wall was in the south, so the residential district should be in the north.

He ran all the way.

"I'm covered in mud and blood of the crocodile. Splitty shouldn't be able to find me for a while." Dudian's eyes lit up: "I can only move directly to the city. I don't have time for seven days of checkups. If I do that the Holy Church would find out that I have some relation to the problems. They would block the death passage and link everything back to me. I got to head back and trouble Old Fulin to give testimony to prove that I have been at Ryan Castle ..." Dudian thought about the situation as he ran.

It didn't take long before he reached the fortress.

“According to the previous news from the military newspaper, the barbarians are attacking Hongshan and Syracuse forts. Although they can’t bypass them, but right now they must be heavily guarded. This desert fortress should be left with fewer troops.” Dudian looked at the fortress while he lurked nearby. He sniffed the air.

In about half a minute later he rushed out from the bushes. Everything was as he had expected.

He had found a pit in the vicinity before he came to the fortress. He used the rain water to clean off the blood and mud from his body. He did so not to arouse the attention of the guards of the fortress. However, the radiation content of his body was going to rise because of it.

Chapter 303

Whoosh!

Dudian climbed the wall of the fortress, like a gecko as the sun sets. As he stood on the wall, he saw patrol soldiers separate from each other to relocate, and he smoothly went to the other side of the wall. He used his hands to slow down the strength of the fall. There was a minimal sound as he landed on the ground.

Dudian glanced at patrols on both sides. They were pretty far away and couldn't visually detect him. He rushed as he changed his location.

This time he felt much more at home as he bypassed the border because of his previous experience of escaping from prison. Dudian went to the desolate wilderness after passing through. It didn't take long for him to reach a desolate town.

There was a wry smile on his face as Dudian sneaked into the town. He went into the backyard of a house. There were clothes which were drying in the backyard. He grabbed some of them and quickly left the town. He took advantage of the night time as he moved in the direction of the Yard town.

Dudian reached the Yard town after a few hours. At the moment the weather was dark and soon the curfew time would begin.

Dudian looked at the hill behind the town. The Ryan castle stood tall like a monster in the darkness.

…

Study room on the second floor of the Ryan castle.

Sander helped his father back to the study room after eating the dinner. Old Fulin sat down on a chair. Sander grabbed a thick quill and handed it over to his father: “It’s cold so you should cover yourself with blankets at evenings.”

Old Fulin took it and covered his knees. He sighed: “It’s been so long, but he hasn’t come back yet. God knows what has happened.”

“Although his age is not much, but he is mature and prudent. There shouldn’t be any big troubles. Don’t worry father. Most probably he will be back in a few days.”

“The monsters outside the giant wall don’t care whether someone is mature or immature.” Old Fulin shook his head.

Sander was full of anxiety as he pondered for a while: “I should go and urge those people to go and check on Mr. Dean. He had bailed them out. It’s not a civilized the way they have chosen to respond.”

“It’s within the nature of humans. No one would be willing to enter that place again.” Old Fulin slightly shook his head: “If there isn’t any news by tomorrow then find two people and temporarily

register them as hunters. Let them go out and investigate the matter."

"Alright." Sander slightly nodded.

Old Fulin slowly said: "Although we as the Ryan family are rising right now and there are lots of small aristocrats, and well-known wealthy businessmen who want to join our consortium that is flourishing but all of them are attracted because of his architect identity. It won't take long for our family to be back to our initial declining status if we lose him. Afterward, it would be very hard to stand up again!"

Sander stared at Old Fulin: "Father, we shouldn't rely on him. Wouldn't it be in vain if he changes his mind in the future? "

Old Fulin looked up and stared at Sander's eyes: "We haven't risen to any point how can we talk about a decline? I don't want to listen to any other proposition!"

Sander's face slightly changed as he saw Old Fulin's angry facial expression: "Father, I have wronged you."

Old Fulin slowly recovered his eyes as he saw Sander bow to apologize. He looked at the fire burning in the oil lamp as he delved into his thoughts.

Whoosh!

After a short time, a slight sound echoed from the window.

Old Fulin and Sander were surprised as they saw a person dressed in farmer's clothes come inside.

Sander was about to shout 'assassin, ' but he was shocked as he recognized the person.

"Can't you identify me when I change my clothing?" Dudian smiled as he came towards the table and pulled a chair to sit in front of Old Fulin. He looked at old patriarch: "My trip to outside the giant wall had made you worry. Has something new had happened in the last few days?"

Old Fulin smiled as he stared at Dudian: "You came back...Good... I thought...There is no movement from the Mellon consortium, but we are not sure about their plans. Our intelligence is too weak! "

Dudian frowned slightly as he touched his chin: "What about the new guys, have they come back?"

"The new guys?" Old Fulin slightly smiled as he heard Dudian's words: "They are not new. One of them is almost as old as me. I have sent a few people to pay addition to them. In addition to the Nicholas the butler, all the others have stayed inside the castle after coming back from the detention center. No one has gone out."

“What about the butler?” Dudian asked.

“He hasn’t gone out either. He was inside the castle all the time.” Old Fulin replied

Dudian was slightly surprised. His mouth curled up as he said: “I have come over tonight to nag you. You see, I didn’t go through the procedures and bypassed the Holy Church. I need you help me out with an alibi.”

“Illegally?” Old Fulin was surprised: “Why didn’t you go to...?” He beat his head as he was about to ask the question. Old Fulin said: “Of course. If you had been there, then I would have gotten the news... Why did you have to come back illegally? Is there something that you don’t want the Holy Church to know?”

Dudian nodded in confirmation: “There was a little problem when I passed through the passage. A monster broke through the passage and killed the Knights of light who were protecting the passage. I am worried that they will misunderstand it as they will think that it was my intention as if I deliberately brought it inside. But if there is no evidence, then there will be no misunderstanding and no need for explanations.”

Old Fulin and Sander were shocked as they looked at each other. The old patriarch said: “Are you hurt? Did the monster chase you as you returned?”

Dudian shook his head as he smiled: “It had cleverly hidden close by, and it was a coincidence that the timing of my return matched

with it.”

Old Fulin glanced back at him: “Your excuse about the coincidence would not trouble you. Right now you are an architect of the Temple of Elements, and your credit is high. If you say so, then no one will doubt you. No need for such a risky move.”

Dudian said: “That was one of the reasons. The second one is that I don’t want to make my identity as a hunter highlighted. It has become my side identity. Even if I have to go outside the giant wall, then I must secretly enter back. You can’t leak the information. You should know that aristocracy and the Temple don’t favor hunters while they look up to architects. Of course, it doesn’t mean that I’ll abandon it, but will continue to act in the darkness. ”

Old Fulin smiled: “I know that you have another reason, but let’s not delve in too deep. My personal advice is that you better don’t go hunting again. The other architects hire hunters to get the materials that they need. This way they don’t need to take risks at all. “

Dudian smiled: “I’m not going outside the giant wall to hunt for materials or money. I’m doing it to hone my own combat effectiveness. If a sword is hidden in the scabbard for a long time, it will rust.”

Old Fulin saw Dudian’s determination, so he didn’t continue to persuade Dudian: “Alright, it’s all good. But there is a bit of management problem with the people you have bailed out. I asked them to go search for you, but they refused to follow my orders.

That’s a bad attitude they are showing. Moreover, I don’t know how, but your trip to the outside has been leaked to Mellon Consortium. They have been using that information to pressure the Temple by swaying the opinion through the newspapers. However, the Temple hasn’t responded to them. The recent invention of yours has blocked their mouths so not matter what assessment it will get you should put up your new item.”

Chapter 304

Dudian sneered: “The Mellon consortium doesn’t dare to face the Temple of Elements face to face, so they are using this roundabout way. They are trying to take advantage of aristocracy’s long-term disgust and rejection of hunters to diminish my prestige and reputation. ”

“You are clear about the issue.” Old Fulin nodded: “That’s why you can’t let them succeed. You have to fight them back as you stay in the Temple!”

Dudian shook his head: “I’ll make a trip to the Temple but to buy materials. I don’t have time to stay in there.”

Old Fulin looked at him: “Alright, you have a grasp of the matter, so I assume you will be able to solve it out.”

Dudian nodded slightly as he got up: “It’s late, so I’ll go back. If the Temple or the Holy Church makes an investigation just tell them that I’ve been here all the time.”

“Alright, leave it to me.” Old Fulin agreed to Dudian’s request.

...

Old Fulin and Sander escorted Dudian up to the door to send him off. The other members of the family and servants were shocked because of Dudian’s sudden appearance. They weren’t aware when

the youth had come to the castle.

It was already curfew time as Dudian returned from Yard town to his castle. However, he was unimpeded along the way since he was using the carriage which belonged to the Ryan family.

He looked at the second floor of his castle, which was dimly lit. Apparently, they haven't gone to sleep yet.

There was a trace of coldness in his eyes. He waited for the carriage to stop. He got off it. There were two knights from the Ryan family who were transferred to his castle as guards. They recognized Dudian on sight, so they quickly approached to salute him. The doors were opened for Dudian to enter.

Dudian directly went to the hall. There were two oil lamps which were lighting the hall. The hall was empty. He glanced at the guard: "Tell the butler and the chef to come down."

The guard was nervous as he saw that Dudian's facial expressions weren't good: "Yes, sire." The guard quickly ran upstairs. Moments later sounds of rapid footsteps echoed from the second floor. The guard came down first as Nicholas rushed after him.

Nicholas's face slightly changed as he saw the familiar person sitting in the hall. However, there was a pleasant smile on his face in the next moment. He stepped forward: "Master, you came back."

Dudian glanced at him, but ignored his question: “Get me tea.”

Nicholas obeyed: “Yes!” He grabbed the teapot by the table and filled a cup of tea for Dudian.

Dudian checked the cup: “It’s not even hot. Do you call this tea?”

Nicholas’s face slightly changed: “I’m sorry, sire. I’ll get the water boiling.” He ran back to the kitchen. However, he saw Chef Allen joining the hall, so he shouted at him: “Go boil the water! The young master is back, and you are dawdling! After you boil the water prepare young master’s favorite rabbit ribs for him.”

Chef Allen was a 30-year-old middle-aged man. He had dressed in a hurry as he heard the young guard say that master was calling for him. He was startled as he heard Nicholas shout at him. He bowed and turned towards the kitchen.

“Allen, come over,” Dudian shouted out loud.

Allen was startled. He stopped immediately and looked back at Nicholas. He bowed slightly and went to stand in front of Dudian: “Master, do you have any orders?”

Dudian ignored the chef as he looked at Nicholas: “Go and boil water! I’ve something to talk with Allen.”

Nicholas’s face turned ugly as he replied: “Yes!” He went to the kitchen.

Nicholas boiled the water after a while. Fortunately, as a butler, he was very familiar with the work of servants. So he was aware of how to do simple tasks, and it didn't baffle him. He came back as he brought a pot of hot water. Nicholas saw that the hall was silent as Allen stood in front of Dudian. Dudian was sitting by the table as his fingers gently tapped the table. He looked calm, but it seemed that he was thinking about something.

Nicholas's heart turned cold: "Master, the water is ready."

Dudian nodded: "Go and call the others."

"Now?" Nicholas was startled.

Dudian indifferently said: "Why, is it late?"

Nicholas bluntly replied: "Of course not. It's not late. I will go." He went upstairs.

After a few moments, Sergei, Gwyneth, and Jin came down from the second floor. Sergei and Gwyneth glanced at each other as they came down the stairs.

Jin was the first one to get to the hall. He was wearing pajamas, and he looked surprised as he saw Dudian: "You finally came back! We thought... " He thought of something as Jin's face became ugly: "Scar...Scar...he..."

Dudian whispered as he looked back at Jin: “I tried my best.”

Jin clenched his fists: “I don’t blame you… But his body …”

Dudian was silent for a moment: “There was no way to bring it back.”

Jin bowed his head: “I blame myself…I was too weak. If I was as strong as Sergei then… Perhaps I would be able to kill that thing…”

Dudian didn’t say anything but turned to look at Sergei and Gwyneth.

Sergei grinned as he looked at Dudian: “We thought that the monster carried you away too. We waited at the entrance for three days, but saw that you aren’t coming back. Your hope of survival was very slim, so we came back. It seems your luck is good.”

Dudian stared at him: “I have heard that the patriarch of the Ryan family had ordered you to go outside the giant wall to search for me. Why didn’t you go?”

Sergei shrugged his shoulders: “We did know your location or how to search for you. I don’t have abilities regarding that field so I assume you can understand and don’t blame me for this.”

Gwyneth quietly listened to him and spoke up next: “I don’t have tracking abilities from my magic marks. So there was no way to find you.”

“Lies!” Jin, who was standing in front of Dudian shouted out in anger. He looked at both of them: “I was going to go, but both of you stopped me! You said that if Dean dies, then we will be free!”

Sergei coldly replied: “Don’t slander us without evidence.”

“Well?” Gwyneth coldly stared at Jin.

Dudian slightly raised his hand and interrupted them. He lightly said: “I know what is going on in your minds. I don’t care much about it, but let me see your loyalty in action!” Dudian looked at Sergei and Gwyneth as he continued:” Did you really think that you can walk away freely if I died? Sorry to inform you that in case I die the umbrella over your head will be gone too. I can assure you that your death would be much uglier than mine. Note down that you won’t be imprisoned again!”

Sergei and Gwyneth’s face slightly changed. Sergei spoke up: “He is lying…We did not …”

Dudian raised his hand and calmly said: “I didn’t expect you to search for me outside the giant wall, but at least you should have waited for my return at the entrance. Maybe I would have come back in a very bad condition? Wouldn’t you be able to save me if you were there?”

Sergei was startled as he couldn’t retort.

Dudian whispered: “I have already told you that I will give you three chances. Sergei, you have spent two of those. I hope you won’t be in a hurry to waste the third chance.”

Sergei snorted and turned away.

Dudian didn’t care much for his attitude as his eyes fell onto Nicholas’s body: “Butler…”

“Yes.” Nicholas quickly answered.

“Are you aware that you have used all three chances…?” Dudian narrowed his eyes as he looked at Nicholas.

Nicholas rapidly said: “Master, I don’t understand you. I remember that I had offended you once back in the carriage after you bailed us out. But since then I have been in the castle and haven’t done anything. It has to be a misunderstanding. I simply can’t stand up against you. I gave up a long time ago …”

Dudian shook his head: “I said that I needed your allegiance when I bailed you out. If you had any bad thoughts, then you should have kept them in your heart. If you wanted to act, then you should have done so that I wouldn’t be aware of it! Unfortunately, your abilities are not up to par. I am disappointed. I’m not disappointed because you betrayed me, but because there were so many loopholes in that betrayal! I thought that you had some capabilities as you were able to empty the vaults of your previous owner, but I think I overestimated you!”

Nicholas was stunned.

Sergei and Gwyneth looked at Nicholas. There was a gloomy smile on Sergei's face as he folded his arms and watched quietly.

"I don't understand. Please master elaborate more." Nicholas's tone was resolute as he looked back at Dudian.

Dudian indifferently said: "The moment you had arrived in the castle you had asked the chef to inquire about my identity. What was your intention?"

Nicholas looked at Chef Allen: "Master, he is slandering me!"

Dudian glanced at Nicholas: "Do you think that money can seal his lips? Indeed, money is useful most of the time. But you can only give him money while I don't just give him money. I give him more than that, his life! Look at it from your perspective. Your identity or my status? I think even a brainless pig will know on which side to stand."

Nicholas bowed as his face turned hard like a stone: "Master, I know I was wrong. I just wanted to serve you better..."

"No need for useless words." Dudian indifferently continued: "The third betrayal was in my room. You searched for my things. The fourth betrayal happened when you secretly informed the Mellon consortium about my trip to the outside of the giant wall to hunt."

Nicholas retorted in a hurry: “It wasn’t me. It really wasn’t me! You can’t blame that on me!”

Dudian glanced back at him: “You should be glad that I’m very busy right now and don’t have time to deal with you. I have said that there will be punishment for the people who betray me. Since you are restless at home, then you will be coming with me the next time we go out hunting.”

Nicholas’s face changed: “Master, y-you, you can’t do this to me. I’m not willing to end up like that because of empty words.”

“I love people who are unwilling.”

“Master, I …”

Dudian raised his hand to interrupt him. He waved at Chef Allen to retreat and glanced at Gwyneth and Sergei: “You guys get ready too. We will go out to hunt in two days” Afterwards he looked at Jin: “You will stay at home as a butler. Hire a few servants and remember to pick carefully. Don’t let the other consortiums know that you are searching for servants. They may take the opportunity to send people in.”

“I will.” Jin nodded. He was hesitant as he remembered the ferocious monsters from the outside. He was about to open his mouth, but then swallowed back his words.

Chapter 305

Dudian looked at Nicholas's sad face: "Bring me the newspapers from the last few days."

"Yes." Nicholas listlessly turned away.

Nicholas brought a thick stack of newspapers and put them in front of Dudian's table. Nicholas secretly glanced at Dudian's facial expression and saw that there was no joy in his face: "Master, these are the newspapers from the day you have left. I assume you haven't eaten properly because you have spent the last seven days in the inspection center. Should I prepare food?"

"I came back a long time ago and had already eaten with the Ryan family." Dudian indifferently replied.

Nicholas's eyes lit up: "Master why didn't you communicate with us? We would have come over to pick you up!"

Dudian glanced back at him: "Why should I have told you? Are you worried about your bail now? "

Nicholas's face changed, but he didn't dare to test Dudian's compassion.

Dudian held the stack of newspapers and went back to his room. There was not much news about anything. The state of war didn't change that much. The barbarians have attacked quite a few forts,

but it seems there isn't a large-scale war going on. As for the consortia they were trying to develop and enlarge their industries using the business of war. Most of them were involved in making quick money by supplying the resources for the military.

There wasn't much movement from the Temple of Elements. However, he did find out that the master of the lightning faction has come up with a sensational theory. Bio-energy!

"...Every living thing has the power of God of light surging within them. If we can guide it, then we will be able to produce a huge energy ..." Dudian sneered as he checked the papers and the evaluation. Biological magnetic fields do have a great effect, but very advanced equipment has to be used to amass it. That was far away from the description written by the architect.

"They don't have any information about micro-level knowledge and can't use electronics. Moreover, they aren't aware of the composition of the particles at the basic level. There is a long way to go. Moreover conquering the monsters outside the giant wall seems like a dream right now as there isn't enough power to sweep the areas. There are few powerful individuals because of the evolution, but the masses lack power. Father had said that science and technology are meant for the use of the masses and the public. It has to serve the public. Only in that case, will we be able to clean out the monsters."

Dudian's eyes lit up as he put away the newspapers.

He sat on the chair and pondered for a moment. Afterward, Dudian walked to the closet and opened it. He took out a plank

from behind. There was a ‘c’ shaped groove with a rotating handle. He gently twisted, and the wall slowly opened. An entrance to a small dark warehouse was in front of him. The space was very small, about two meters square. The super chip and the card reader were respectively wrapped in different clothes. He wasn’t worried about anyone finding them as his finger identification was needed to start the reader.

Dudian took both items and sat on the bed as he delved into the knowledge from the reader.

Dudian put away the reader and the chip as the first rays of the sunlight shined. He wore a set of clean clothes and went into the hall. Nicholas was already downstairs. Dudian said to him: “Immediately prepare a carriage and package the breakfast. I’ll eat on the way.”

Nicholas asked: “Master, where to?”

“To the Temple of Elements.” Dudian coldly looked at him.

“Alright master, I’ll go and get everything ready right now.” There was a trace of disappointment in Nicholas’s eyes as he turned around.

“Tell Sergei to go to the place where I had bought the steel last time. He should buy as much steel as I bought the last time.” Dudian looked back at Nicholas after getting into the carriage: “Moreover make sure that we have everything that I need before I come back.”

“Yes!” Nicholas wryly smiled.

The carriage slowly moved.

Dudian pulled the curtain: “Faster and put up the Temple’s banner.”

Coachman plugged the banner of the Temple over the compartment and whipped the horses.

It didn’t take long for them to reach the foot of Mount Church as they were unobstructed all the way because of the Temple’s flag. Dudian came into the headquarters of the Temple.

According to Dudian’s orders, the coachman directly rode the carriage to the hall.

Dudian jumped off the car and glanced around the Temple. Although he had come early on, but there were quite a few people around. Most architects lived in the Temple, so they began to work early. There were about a dozen figures in the hall.

After a glance, he found the trading station for purchasing materials.

“Hello, how may I help you?” There was a young girl behind the desk. She was holding a book called ‘Basic theory of metal

elements' in her hand. She looked up and asked as she felt someone came over. There was a polite smile on her face.

The first thing Dudian noted was the badge on her chest. She had the same status as him and was an intermediate level architect. He was surprised as he saw that the girl's age was almost the same as his. He quickly asked: "Is there a hard cage?"

The girl slightly frowned: "We sell materials in here. If you want to buy a cage, then go to the military. They have lots of options."

"I want a very strong cage. The general ones don't work for me. What is the hardest metal you guys have?" Dudian asked.

The girl lightly answered: "We don't have cages, but the hardest metal that we have is tungsten steel. You can ask a gold architect to make the cage for you. Or you can commission me to create one for you for a very small fee."

Dudian was startled as he didn't expect them to have tungsten steel. The last time when he conversed with Nightingale about aluminum alloys, there was no concept of metal smelting. It hasn't been long since Nightingale's alloy alchemy products were launched and now after a few years, the Temple has produced tungsten steel.

Dudian decided that splitty wouldn't be able to break through a cage made out of tungsten steel. If the steel pillars were thick enough, then even an adult splitter wouldn't necessarily be able to break free.

The girl looked at him: “Do you want to buy a steel cage made out of tungsten steel? The weight is not going to be small. Do you know the price of tungsten steel?”

Chapter 306

“How much will it cost?” Dudian inquired.

The girl spoke in a cold tone as she saw that Dudian wasn’t aware of the prices: “Tungsten steel is available for commercial purposes. You can use the points issued by the Temple or buy it with gold coins. If you are going to use points, then we can exchange ten kilograms for a point. If you want to buy it with gold coins, then it will cost you seven gold coins for ten kilograms. In case you want to purchase the tungsten steel outside the Temple then it will cost you ten gold coins for ten kilograms. You are an intermediate architect so that you will get a 30% discount. We could give you a 50% discount if you were a senior architect. Moreover, masters get to buy at 10% of the original price of the material.”

Dudian was surprised: “Ten gold coins for ten kilograms? The tungsten steel is almost at the same price as a copper coin!”

“It’s normal for such a precious metal alloy to be as expensive as copper.” The girl spoke with disdain as she saw Dudian’s expression: “Please leave if you aren’t planning to buy.”

Dudian thought that the metal prices of this era were higher than the old era. The first reason should be because the refining process was still at a beginner’s level. The second reason was the war with the barbarians and the hunt of the monsters outside the giant wall. There was a constant need for more weapons and armor produced which increased the demand for good steel.

Dudian thought for a moment, then said to the girl: “I’ll buy two thousand kilograms.”

The girl was stunned as she looked at the boy. However, as she saw the serious look, she frowned and got up: “Two thousand kilograms? Are you going to use points or gold coins?”

“Gold coins.” Dudian was planning to accumulate points to become a senior level architect.

The girl indifferently said: “An architect is limited in buying a thousand kilograms per day if gold coins are used for purchase.”

Dudian was surprised. But the next moment he understood why such a system was set up by the Temple. They are worried that some architects may work with wealthy businessmen to buy metals at discounted prices and resell them outside.

“Alright, a thousand gold coins then.” Dudian thought that he could ask Bernard to help him buy another thousand kilograms of tungsten steel.

The girl looked back at him: “First is the payment. I’ll submit your order afterward. Fill in the address and someone will bring it to your place.”

Dudian took out his leather wallet and pulled out seven gold notes from inside. The words “one hundred” were engraved on each of them referring to their value.

The girl's eyes narrowed as she saw the medal in Dudian's wallet: "What is that?" She asked as she rapidly breathed.

Dudian took a look at the silver medal which was the 'epoch' medal issued to him by the Temple. He stuffed it back into the wallet: "Nothing."

The girl was shocked as her mind buzzed. She was able to put together the pieces of information: "wood quickly...intermediate architect...youngest in the history..."

She looked up and down at Dudian: "You! Are you Mr. Dean?"

Dudian was frustrated as he saw that she recognized him. He was in a hurry and didn't want to be entangled. He wrote the order and wrote down his details, including the location of the castle. He gave back the form: "I urgently need this batch of tungsten steel. Please send them quickly."

The girl checked the delivery form. She saw the signature and the name. Her eyes glowed as she said: "Dean...Mr. Dean, I'm sorry that I didn't recognize you. You are the winner of 'epoch' medal so you can enjoy the same treatment as masters. Same discounts apply to you!" She handed back six notes out of the seven given by Dudian.

Dudian didn't think that he will get an advantage because of the 'epoch' medal. Although hundreds of gold coins were trivial for him, but he still readily took back the notes: "Can I buy two

thousand kilograms at once?”

“Yes, of course!” The girl quickly replied: “The upper daily limit for people such as yourself is ten thousand kilograms per day.”

Dudian smiled: “Then I’ll buy ten thousand kilograms.” He pulled out three more gold tickets from his wallet and handed them back to the girl with the initial six notes.

The girl took the golden notes. She was stunned. She wasn’t surprised because of money, but because Dudian was an architect from the wood faction. She couldn’t help but ask: “Mr. Dean, are you planning to use tungsten steel in a new research?”

If it were earlier, she would think that Dudian was working for a wealthy businessman. Most of the architects were coming from middle-class families from the commercial district, so not all of them were rich enough to buy materials as they wished. So some of them would cooperate with wealthy businessmen to make extra money to fund their own research.

But she knew that architects such as Dudian didn’t lack or were short of money. The money he earned from the military crossbow would make even many nobles jealous.

Dudian replied: “Most of it.”

The girl asked: “Are you planning to join the gold faction?”

Dudian replied: “We will see in the future. Please help me get this batch of the tungsten steel as soon as possible. The faster, the better! ”

The girl’s eyes lit up: “If you want to build a cage using tungsten steel I can help you out.” She would ask for a commission if she wasn’t aware of Dudian’s status, but right now she was willing to join as an assistant. The main reason was that she was planning to take the opportunity to observe Dudian’s research. After all, Dudian’s military crossbow was not only an item which was made out of wood faction elements. There was involvement of gold elements. Especially the structure and weight of the arrows.

Dudian thought for a moment: “Alright, but I don’t have tools for forging.”

“That’s not a problem. I have them.” The girl replied: “You can use my research room to make it.”

Dudian said: “I’ll pay the reward for troubling you.” He thought that the girl works here as a part-timer. Most probably she had difficulties with the finances.

The girl said: “You don’t have to. As an assistant, I’ll be able to see you do research. It’s a rare occasion on its own. I wouldn’t dare to ask for money.”

“A little money won’t hurt.” Dudian casually said. He didn’t want to owe anyone.

The girl no longer refused as she was really short of money.

“Who is that?”

A voice echoed from the side.

Both Dudian and the girl turned towards the source of the voice. Three people were approaching them. A handsome blonde youth led them.

The one behind the youth looked about twenty-seven or eight years old. The other one was a bit shorter with brown hair. Both of them looked like civilians while the blonde had an attitude of an aristocrat.

“Isn’t this Mr. Dean?” The blonde youth asked as there was a trace of surprise on his face.

Dudian looked at the youth whose smile was like a knife. There was malicious intent in his eyes. There was an orchid pattern on the youth’s robe. The youth belonged to the Milan family. Dudian’s eyes lit up as he smiled: “Hello.”

“Mr. Dean isn’t like other geniuses. He has become arrogant and got carried away because of a little success. It is said that such people are too irresponsible.” The blonde youth said in a humble manner.

Dudian smiled. The youth was from an aristocratic origin, so he

was trying to attack Dudian ruthlessly. The purpose of his speech was obvious. The youth was from the Milan family, which was under Mellon Consortium.

“Some people like to say irresponsible words. After all, you aren’t feeling the pain.” Dudian faintly smiled.

The blonde youth nodded: “Yes, no one would talk uselessly if they felt the pain.”

Dudian shook his head: “They would still beg and say ‘let me go’ as they feel the pain.”

Chapter 307

“Mr. Dean has an acute sense of humor.” The blonde youth continued: “I have heard that Mr. Dean isn’t just an architect but a hunter too. You have amazing talent to accomplish both jobs at the same time. Moreover, you have excellent achievements in both posts. Did you have a great harvest this time when you went outside the giant wall to hunt?”

“Hunter?” The girl next to Dudian had a trace of fear in her eyes as she looked up to him.

“Are you telling me that I’ve gone outside the giant wall?” Dudian looked at the blonde youth.

The youth laughed: “I read in a newspaper. It seems that it was misleading news. Newspapers are getting more unprofessional.”

“It’s not the newspapers that are unprofessional, but there are way too many fools.” Dudian indifferently said: “There is a proverb which says that ‘wise men don’t follow the rumors’. I believe you have heard of it after all you are a member of the Milan family. Your knowledge and understanding of worldly affairs couldn’t be shallow.”

The blonde youth’s face changed: “It was you who taught me now.”

“I have not taught you.” Dudian lightly said: “It was just an exchange! Why would you say that I taught you? ”

The blonde youth's face changed: "You said that I had misunderstood the news."

"Your family very easily misunderstands things, so I've reminded you that you also have misunderstood the newspapers. As a result of this misunderstanding, you are offending people. If this matter is spread out, you will be ridiculed. Fortunately, you have met me today, and my mouth is tight. I don't like making rumors behind the backs of people." Dudian coldly said.

The blonde youth smiled as his face changed: "Thank you."

Dudian didn't look back at him, but turned towards the girl: "When will the materials arrive?"

The girl reacted: "The fastest is two hours."

"Shall we go to your place to prepare the tools?" Dudian asked. He saw that the longer he stayed here, the bigger the chance that he would poke out trouble for himself.

"Alright, I don't have a problem." The girl said.

The blonde youth's eyes flashed with coldness as he said: "Mr. Dean, are you working on a new research? I haven't seen your silhouette in the Temple for a long time, so I just thought that you went outside the giant wall."

Dudian indifferently looked at the youth: “You don’t have to repeat the same phrase over and over. Do you think that a man with an identity similar to mine would go there? Are you trying to slander and humiliate me? ”

The blonde youth didn’t expect such a harsh and sharp answer: “Of course not. I didn’t mean to offend or slander. Please forgive me. ”

Dudian looked at the girl: “Lead the way.”

“One moment. I’ll put your order on top.” The girl said and went into a room. It didn’t take long before she returned. Another youth came up with her.

“I’m going, so you should look after this place.” The girl laughed.

The youth replied: “Alright.”

The girl looked at Dudian: “Shall we go?”

Dudian nodded and indicated her to lead the way.

The blonde youth saw that Dudian completely ignored him. There was a trace of anger in his eyes, but he strongly restrained himself. He looked at their backs as Dudian, and the girl left the Temple’s hall. His fingers had clenched into fists under his sleeves.

“Young master, let’s find someone to teach him the life! I think we should get his arm for this time!” The youth behind the blonde whispered.

The blonde youth turned to look at him: “Haven’t you listened to me? The kid is not only an architect but a hunter. Moreover, he is an intermediate level hunter! Who will we find? There are less than fifty people in the commercial district who could make a move against him. What are you planning to teach him in this case?”

“So powerful?” The youth was surprised.

The blonde youth snorted: “Those that go outside the giant wall are monsters who hunt monsters! You are just a frog at the bottom of a well.”

The youth with the brown hair scratched his head: “I’ve opened my eyes after your lesson.”

The other youth behind him said: “Young master, he is after all the winner of the ‘epoch’ medal. It is just a matter of time when he will become a senior architect. Why did we provoke such a person?”

The blonde youth indifferently answered: “He has already been provoked. Do you think that I am such a fool that I would provoke an enemy with such a potential without reason?”

Both of them were confused.

The blonde youth didn't intend to explain the struggle between aristocrats to the two. It was normal that civilians didn't understand the details even if they read the newspapers as they couldn't differentiate the source and purpose of the news.

...

Dudian walked behind the girl as they went out of the hall.

"Hey, is not that Dean?"

"Is that the genius Dean?"

"The one who got the 'epoch' medal?!"

As they walked through the path, they met lots of architects. The girl was surprised to see that most of them recognized Dudian. She wasn't aware that he had such a strong reputation within the architects.

Dudian was distressed. He smiled and greeted the people who approached him. He tried his best to be polite with the architects. Mellon consortium didn't dare to attack him as an architect because of fear of the Holy Church. So they had chosen to make a roundabout attack by exposing and pointing out his hunter identity at every corner to lower his influence and glorious image. If he made a wrong response, then the people would think that the

news reported by the Mellon consortium was true. Although it was a soft attack made through the newspaper, but the damage caused by it was more than any stabs made by the sword.

After all, words were the most terrible weapon in the world.

He politely declined the questions of different people. Dudian made the girl lead the way in a hurry as he used his sleeves to cover his face. It looked a bit strange but at least their time wasn't delayed.

It didn't take long for them to reach the castle where the maiden's research room was located.

"Here." The girl led the way in front.

Dudian walked after her as they entered the castle. The girl greeted many people. All of them were the architects who were involved in research in the same castle as her, and they were intermediate architects too. There were a few teenagers, but most of them were 30 years old or more. There was even a 50 years old white haired architect.

Chapter 308

The girl looked back at Dudian: “My research room is on the second floor.”

Dudian nodded.

Both of them went into the building and walked up to the second floor. The size of the room was as large as Dudian’s room. However, the furnishing was totally different. Even the racks were made out of metal. There were a few small metal furnaces as well as various metal containers in different shapes. There was a bookcase by the window. There were books related to the gold element faction on it. ‘Research into the gold system’, ‘Basic philosophy of gold system’ and so on.

Dudian saw that there was good enough equipment. He asked the girl: “Is there a carving knife?”

The girl was surprised: “Do you want to create the mold with the carving knife? It wouldn’t be that great.”

Dudian replied:” Your room is too small to forge and assemble the cage in here. I’ll create the molds and ship them back to my own castle. Afterward, I’ll assemble it over there.”

The girl was startled: “Alright.” There was a trace of disappointment in her eyes. She was going to witness Dudian’s actions, but she would would see only half of the process. However, she knew that everyone kept their methods top secret. If

someone else saw and plagiarized them, then there was no way to defend themselves.

Dudian noted the expression on her face, but he didn't care much.

The girl handed him an excellent quality carving knife. Dudian took the wood from the shelf and used the knife with his right hand to carve. The blade was not too sharp, but it cut easily as he smoothly carved out the parts.

"You can't draw the ..." The girl was surprised to see Dudian use the knife in his hands to depict the parts. However, she stopped the moment she saw the straight lines carved out by Dudian. There was not the slightest crook in the model. There was a trace of surprise in her eyes. She secretly sighed as she saw his solid foundation. There were many rumors that Dudian's results were based on luck. But she was aware that luck couldn't make such chisel modeling skills but instead with practice. Moreover, it was not such an easy task to master something like that.

Dudian carved some models which had varying lengths. He had long conceived the shape of the cage in his mind.

The girl stood beside Dudian quietly as she watched the process. The boy's fingers were white and slender as if it was a woman's hand. However, he cut through the wood as if he was cutting tofu. It didn't seem difficult at all and looked calm and beautiful. She suddenly said: "The former architect said that you are a hunter. Is it true that you were born as a civilian?"

Dudian looked up at her and answered: “Yes.” His black hair proved his identity as a civilian. Although most of the nobles had golden blonde hair, but there were a few who had dark hair too.

The girl’s eyes moved and fell onto his cheek. She whispered: “I have heard that hunters often deal with monsters and are very bad people. Their characters are arrogant and grumpy. You seem very different from the other hunters.”

“I have seen many hunters who are modest, wise and cautious.”

The girl cautiously asked: “Are you still a hunter?”

Dudian was carving while he slowly replied after a second of silence: “Nope.”

“Really?” The girl’s eyes lit up: “That is really good!

Dudian silently worked on the model. Because of using his left hand to practice engraving the models from wood the control of his right hand had increased a lot. He would be able to carve a fine artwork let alone a rough model such as a cage.

It didn’t take long for him to finish all the models.

Dudian took a chair and sat down to rest. He was thinking about something else as they waited for materials to be delivered.

“Bam! Bam!” The door was knocked on.

The girl was about to ask Dudian something when the knocks echoed. She stepped forward and opened the door. She indifferently asked: “What are you doing here?”

“Eli, I’ve come to see you.” The youth’s voice came inside: “Can we talk?”

“No.” The girl flatly refused. There was not the slightest politeness in her attitude. It seems that the two of them had an unpleasant past.

The youth didn’t let go: “Why are you doing this to me? I can come in as a guest anytime!”

“You are not welcome here.” Eli indifferently replied: “I know what you are trying to do.”

The youth was impatient as he saw her answer him straightforwardly: “I’ve heard that you have brought back a man. Is that true?”

The girl replied: “Real or fake! What does it have to do with you?”

“You are mine, and you have a relationship with me!” The youth

saw that she had admitted it. There was anger in his tone. He pushed the door and saw a young architect sitting by the bookshelf and reading various books. He pushed the girl away who tried to block him with her arms. He came forward into the room: “Hey, boy! Get the hell out of here!”

“Tungsten steel …” Dudian was browsing through the books when he heard the voice aimed at him. His brows wrinkled as he turned to look at the youth. The youth had pale blonde hair. He wasn’t handsome but wasn’t ugly too. Dudian knew that he should be from an aristocratic origin from his clothing and hair. But his hair was a bit diluted and brownish. It seems the kid was from the southern part of the commercial district where the climate was hot. Aristocrats generally have golden blonde hair. Only the ones whose ancestors have mated with civilians have different looks.

Dudian could identify the other’s identity just from a look. It was not because of his good eyesight, but from experience.

“I don’t know who you are but you better not yell at me!” Dudian indifferently said.

The youth saw Dudian’s appearance. There was anger in his face. He found out that the kid was a civilian from his pure black hair. Although it was very rare pure black, but he didn’t care much about it: “I will say once again. Get out of here!”

Also, he also noticed the medal on Dudian’s chest. The kid belonged to wood faction and was an intermediate architect.

“Shut up!” The girl loudly said in a hurry as she saw his rude behavior: “Apologize to Mr. Dean! I invited him as a guest. You are an aristocrat, but it doesn’t mean that you have to be so brutal! I’ll complain to the Temple that you are interfering with my research!”

“A man and a woman doing research!?” The youth’s face was flushed red because of anger as blue veins popped up on his arms.

The girl trembled as she stared into his eyes: “You! I dare you to say it again!”

There was a trace of remorse in the youth’s eyes as he saw her expression. But the regret in his heart was replaced by anger as he saw the outsider sitting inside and not moving an inch. He shouted: “Brat! Roll out!”

Dudian looked at him as he slowly closed the book. He put it on the table.

Bang!

It didn’t even take a second for a phantom-like body to sweep through the room.

The shadow stood in front of the aristocratic youth and slapped him. The youth fell to the ground and spilled a few drops of blood to the ground. Also, two yellow teeth fell to the ground.

“I had warned you before, so you should not have continued in such a manner.” Dudian slowly said.

The youth heard Dudian’s words and saw him standing close to the girl. He knew that he was in an awkward situation. He roared and tried to rush at Dudian.

Dudian kicked him in the chest and threw him out of the door. He turned towards the girl: “He had offended me, so I hit him. But you got to deal with this problem and don’t interfere with me.” He turned back and went to sit on his chair. Dudian opened the book and continued to read. It seemed that as if nothing has happened.

Eli looked startled, as there was a trace of fear on her face. She didn’t know what had happened in the blink of an eye. Is this the overwhelming power of a hunter? Is he a modest hunter?

Eli recovered as she heard the young man’s groans. She reacted and went out. After all, the youth was noble, and she couldn’t afford to offend him.

The youth stood up and rushed to the door. He shouted out: “I’ll kill you!”

“Don’t …” Eli rushed to stop him at the door.

“Excuse me, is Mr. Dean in here?” Suddenly someone asked Eli.

Chapter 309

The blonde youth and Eli turned around at the same time to look at the gentle and handsome boy. He was wearing a white robe, but his clothing was different from a general architect's robe. There were two black dragon badges on his shoulder.

The blonde youth was angry, but he pressed down his impulses as he saw the twin black dragon pattern on the youth's robe: "You have come to the wrong place. Why have you come here at all? He isn't from the wood faction."

"Just wait." Eli quickly interfered: "Mr. Dean is here. Why are you looking for him?"

The blonde youth was stunned as he heard Eli's words. An electric current passed through his mind as he remembered the medal on the chest of the youth who was sitting on the chair. The wood faction... The legendary genius Dean from the wood faction!

His face became ugly as he took a deep breath: "Do y-you mean that person is De-Dean?"

Eli sighed: "Yes, your impulsive character hasn't changed!"

The noble youth's face turned blue, then white: "I won't give up on you even if he is Dean! Although I'm not as good as him regarding research, but I'm a nobleman while he is just a civilian. I'm a better choice for you!"

Eli was startled.

“I’m sorry...” The newcomer spoke up as he interrupted the quarrel of two: “Can you please take me to see Mr. Dean? I have a message for him from my teacher.”

Eli looked back at the youth as there was a trace of shock in her eyes: “Your teacher? Master Black Dragon wants to see him?”

The noble youth was shocked too. He felt another severe slap on his face. He knew what a master meant. Even if he was a noble, it was possible that he would never communicate with a master in his lifetime. It was like the difference between earth and sky. Although the latter (Dean) was a civilian but his identity was already nobler than many aristocrats. Now, even a master took the initiative to seek him.

“Yes.” The newcomer nodded.

Eli said: “Come in. Mr. Dean is inside.” She went sideways and gestured with her hand towards Dudian.

Dudian had long heard the conversation that happened outside while he was checking the book. His eyebrows had wrinkled slightly as he was surprised. Before joining the Temple, he had learned about the status and position of masters in the Temple. For example, master Eivissa was pioneering bio-energy, and his nickname was ‘greedy’. It referred to his thirst for lightning research.

Master Black Dragon's real name was Manta. He was involved in research of coals, so he got the nickname 'Black Dragon.'

Eli led the way in, and the trio entered the room.

"Hello, Mr. Dean." The newcomer looked at Dudian who was sitting on a chair: "My name is Adrian. Teacher 'Manta' asked me to find you and invite you to the Architect council."

"The Architect council?" Dudian's eyes lit up as he was startled.

Eli and the noble were stunned.

Adrian smiled: "Teacher said that you shouldn't be tense about it as it isn't a major event. There will be a meeting of architects to talk about your business. The council is going to be held at 10 am tomorrow. Please make sure that you attend."

Dudian calmly said: "I will."

The youth smiled: "I'll go back then." He bid farewell to Dudian, Eli, and the noble youth.

Eli and the young noble recovered after the youth went away. Eli was shocked to see Dudian be invited to Architect council. Only master level architects were invited to the council for participation which showed the 'weight' of the council. Most probably Dudian

would be the lowest level architect to be invited to the council in the history of the ‘Temple of Elements’.

The young noble’s facial expression was complex as he whispered: “Mr. Dean, I’m sorry…I’ve…offended you.” He lowered his head in humiliation. He didn’t want to apologize, especially in front of the person who he loved. But he realized that the teenager sitting in front of him had the power to easily destroy his family. He wasn’t going to offend such an individual.

Eli was shocked to see the noble youth apologize. He was arrogant and a noble. She had never seen an aristocrat to bow and apologize in front of a civilian.

Dudian indifferently replied: “There is nothing to be offended, just don’t bother me.”

The youth’s face changed as he squeezed out a smile. He bit his lips and turned away.

Dudian looked at Eli: “The material should be outside by now. Go out and check.”

Eli replied with an ‘ah’ sound. She went out on instinct. However, as she was halfway out, she recovered and realized that she wasn’t Dudian’s servant. Eli felt angry and funny at the same time.

“The Architect council wants to discuss my business? It should be

related to my being a hunter. I didn't expect that the Temple can be affected and swayed by the public opinion." There was a trace of a smile on Dudian's face as he put away the book and checked the furnace for its heating. The smell of tungsten steel was already detected by Dudian. He would be able to make the cage before sunset. However, it would take the whole night to find splitty.

Dudian wouldn't dare to travel by night if splitty were outside the giant wall. However, he didn't care much about the danger in the radiation zone. Although there were a few times when senior hunters were killed by mutated monsters in the radiation zone, but that would happen once in a few decades, and a chance of such an event was very low.

It didn't take long before Eli came back with a few civilian workers. They were carrying the raw materials.

"Put it here." Dudian pointed with his finger.

The workers carefully brought in the raw materials.

Eli saw that Dudian had already started the furnace. She laughed: "You are really anxious. Fortunately, they have sent it on time." She came towards another furnace: "I'll help you."

"Alright." Dudian didn't refuse her.

A steel cage wasn't an innovative item. Even a primary architect would be able to produce one on their own. A large number of raw

materials were poured into the molds and cast into thick steel columns. The workers carried them outside to the carriage which transported them back to Dudian's castle.

At about three o'clock in the afternoon, Dudian smelted three thousand kilograms of raw material. He had made hundreds of steel pillars made out of tungsten steel. All of them were taken by the civilian workers of the Temple to his castle.

"Thank you for today." Dudian bid farewell to Eli as he sat in the carriage to carry back the last batch of the materials. The rest of the welding could be done in his castle.

Chapter 310

The remaining seven thousand kilograms of tungsten steel were sent to the castle as Dudian returned. He ordered Nicholas to arrange people to transport the raw materials behind the castle. As for the already melted three thousand kilograms of tungsten steel, they were stacked next to the training ground.

Dudian commanded Sergei and Jin to carry the furnace from the basement to the training field. It was a small melting pot about three meters high. He had bought it for ten gold coins from the market. Although ten gold coins weren't worth mentioning to him, but for civilians, it was the amount of savings in the span of seven or eight years.

Sergei brought the coals that were bought by Nicholas. In the absence of electricity, they were using coal as fuel for the fire to weld steel.

"Master, why are you making such a big cage?" Jin asked out of curiosity as he saw the length of steel columns.

Dudian poured raw materials into the furnace: "It will be used as a trap to hunt monsters outside the giant wall."

Sergei laughed as he used the blower: "It's going to cost a lot if you are willing to use such a rough method."

Dudian didn't answer as he concentrated on welding.

In about an hour the cage was made. It was six meters long. Dudian had made it twice as tall as splitty's height as he took into account its super growth rate.

Dudian engraved eight chains to the sides of the cage. He linked the chains to the cage and bent them.

Sergei and the others were curious about what type of monster Dudian was planning to hunt because of the size of the cage.

Dudian had ordered a beast carriage. This type of carriage was prohibited from entering the commercial district's main streets. It could only move through the suburbs, because of the size of the beast that pulled it. It was a mammoth about seven meters high. It was a tamed beast, which was as good as a horse if tamed. Its nature was brutal, but because of taming them from youth they would rarely attack humans.

In spite of this, the mammoths were still prohibited from entering the main area of the commercial district. The first problem was that they were worried about losing the control over the beast. It could stampede over pedestrians as if walking over ants. The second problem taken into account was its weight. It would easily cause damage to the street pavement.

Dudian commanded Gwyneth and Sergei to put the cage onto the carriage. They fixed the cage using more than ten rough ropes and covered it with a huge black cloth.

It was dusk, and the sun was setting in the west.

Dudian sat alone as he didn't bring the others with him. The coachman was a 30 year old middle-aged man. He was wearing strange clothing and instead of a whip, he was carrying a flute. He played a melodious song as the carriage began to be pulled by the mammoth. Dudian learned that the mammoth had a strong voice recognition ability and it was controlled through the melody.

Dudian chatted with the driver all the way. Although the other man was a small time business owner, but he had benefited a lot.

They reached the border fortress by night.

"Mr. Dean, I can only travel up to this point." The coachman stopped using the flute.

Dudian nodded in understanding. Because of mammoth's footprints, it would be very easy for barbarians to track them. Moreover, if the mutant beasts attacked them in a group, then the mammoth would easily fall under the attack. It would only end up as a large piece of meat source for the beasts.

Dudian jumped off the beast and showed his hunter medal.

The guard checked the medal and handed it back to him. He looked at the black cloth covering the carriage: "What is inside?"

"It's a tool for hunting." Dudian took off the black cloth. He

dragged the cage from the carriage and gently put it on the ground. It was difficult for him as the cage weighed three thousand kilograms.

The coachman was stunned as he saw Dudian lift the cage on his own.

The guard was also surprised. There was a deep fear in his eyes as he looked at Dudian: “Please, please…”

Dudian grabbed two columns and began to carry the cage on his back. He walked out from the large gate of the fortress into the radiation zone.

Dudian walked for thousands of meters when he reached a windy area. He sniffed shortly to capture the odors. After walking for an hour, he smelled a familiar odor. It was splitty’s smell.

Dudian’s eyes lit up as he lifted the cage and walked in the direction of the smell. It didn’t take long for Dudian to reach a location where he smelled the odor that was coming off from a few miles away. Splitty was somewhere close. He paused and threw the cage onto the ground. His hands were sore and stiff. He was wearing the hunter armor from the last time which had the blood of the dead young splitter on it. The blood had stiffened, and the distribution of the smell was weak.

Dudian lifted the cage again and went towards splitty’s direction.

Many beasts had come out to hunt in the radiation zone.

Dudian met several of them on his trip and easily killed them off.

“Huh?” Dudian sensed the smell of the splitty getting richer with every passing second. He knew that the latter was aware of his existence and was closing down on him. His eyes were cold as there was a trace of tension in his heart. But he was excited too. Dudian put down the cage. After a moment, the rustling sounds echoed as a huge shadow jumped out. All of its body was like razor sharp scythes.

It was a hideous creature!

Dudian was surprised as he didn’t expect that in a time less than a day the splitty would grow up so much. Isn’t its growth rate too fast?

Splitty stood in front of the cage as its two emerald green eyes stared at Dudian.

Dudian was nervous as he couldn’t figure out the changes in the behavior of splitty. If it tried to attack him, then Dudian could only hide in the cage.

Splitty slowly moved around the steel cage.

Dudian’s heart was relieved as he saw splitty act so. He grabbed the cage and began to drag it away towards the abandoned building

from the last time. Although he could trap splitty inside the cage, but he wouldn't be able to drag it away if its weight was added. He had decided that the abandoned building was an excellent place to hide splitty.

Splitty took few steps back as it saw the cage getting dragged. However, it reacted afterward and chased after. From time to time it would raise its scythe-like arm and try to cut the cage. Dudian would be scared each time he would hear the sound issued from the metal.

Radiation clouds covered the sky as the black snow season was getting closer. The sky wasn't visible, and neither were the stars.

Dudian was fortunate that he had a night vision.

Dudian sensed a lot of smells belonging to a variety of beasts as they moved according to the direction in his memory. But these mutant beasts seemed to be aware of splitty's existence and lurked away from them without taking any action.

It didn't take long for Dudian to find the mountainous area. He dragged the cage close to the abandoned building. After a close inspection, he brought the cage into the basement. However, he couldn't take it to the second room as the passage from first room to the second was too narrow.

Dudian used the hooks on the chains to pierce them onto the ground. The place was made out of cement, but it was moist and soft. He wasn't planning to rely on the cement which had lost its

quality. Instead, he went out and cut off some trees. He cleaned their branches and sharpened their bottom. He dug out pits in the basement and buried the wooden frames in them.

Splitty was always around. It would hone its scythes once in a while as it used the cage as a practice tool.

The pits were seven or eight meters deep. He hooked the wooden frames onto them and connected two chains from each corner. Afterward, he closed the pits with the soil. He used big stones to pressure the soil.

Dudian was tired and sweating after the hard work. It was already three or four in the morning.

Dudian saw that splitty was lying on the ground and sleeping. He took out a bit of gauze from his shoulder which was mixed with blood. He sprinkled it into the cage and went out of the basement. He found the snake hole in the entrance to the basement and poked the hole with the short knife. He pulled out two sturdy soil snakes.

Dudian cut them off and carried them back to the basement.

Splitty woke up because of the smell of blood. It rolled over as it stared at Dudian.

Dudian threw one of the snakes to its front while throwing the other one into the cage.

Splitty ate the snake in front of it and went into the cage to pick the other snake to eat.

Bang!

Dudian instantly closed the door of the cage and tightly locked it.

Splitty hurried back in an instant as it heard the sound of the door. It hissed loudly as it waved its scythe-like arms to hit the columns. Occasionally metal sparks would fly out.

Dudian heard its anxious call and slowly retreated. He was relieved to see that its attacks would only leave shallow scratches on the steel pillars. He didn't expect that everything will go so smoothly.

"Squeak~~!" Splitty called up as it attacks the cage. However, there was no effect as it fiercely struggled inside the cage. The cage gently trembled as the soil on the ground cracked.

Dudian's brows wrinkled as he saw the scene. He left the basement and after moments came back with large rocks.

Bang!

He pushed the rocks onto the chains.

Splitty struggled fiercely as the other three chains violently shook.

Dudian immediately went out to bring more rocks. He pressed them to other corners. After being suppressed by the huge stones, the chain was no longer pulled out.

There was an inexplicable feeling in his heart as Dudian heard the anxious, low roar of the splitty. It seems that it was asking for help from him. He sighed as he turned around and went out. He found some leaves and covered the entrance to the basement. He hunted few mutant beasts and brought back to the basement and threw them into the cage.

Splitty began to eat them up as it detected their bodies.

After eating it made a low growl. It seemed that splitty had restored strength, so it continued to hit the cage.

Dudian turned and left the basement. He looked out at the sky. It seems that dawn was upon him. He didn’t expect that the night would go away so fast. He thought of the Architect Council that was going to be held today. He quickly went back to the border fortress.

He passed through the border without officially entering it. If he wanted to go through normal procedures, then he had to show proof from the detention center.

Dudian didn’t return to his castle, but instead took off his hunter armor and found a small pub. He ate and drank. Afterward, he directly went to the Church Mountains.

The carriage arrived at Mount Church in a few hours.

Dudian walked through the mountain path as he carried the hunter’s armor in the baggage. He went back to his research room and checked the materials inside the room. He looked at the lightning rod. Afterward, he directly went to the Temple’s hall.

Chapter 311

“Hello, Mr. Dean.”

“Hello, Mr. Dean.”

Dudian met one architect after another as he passed through the slope. These people would take the initiative to greet him. After all, it has been a long time that Dudian has been a celebrity. The military crossbow invented by the teenager would make sure that he would be a senior architect shortly. Moreover, there was a trace of hope that he would become a master!

Dudian talked to them one by one and went directly towards the castle where the council was going to be held.

“Mr. Dean, are you going to attend the council?” A brown haired intermediate level architect carefully asked Dudian.

“Yes.” Dudian smiled and nodded but didn’t feel surprised. Although he hadn’t read today’s newspapers, but he presumed that the invitation to attend the council would have already spread throughout the Temple.

The youth’s eyes brightened with respect and awe as he saw Dudian admit to the occasion: “Mr. Dean is worthy to be called the outstanding genius of the last fifty years! I’ll walk with you.”

Although the identity of the man was same as Dudian’s, but his

attitude towards Dudian was more polite than he would act towards a senior architect.

“I’m flattered.” Dudian was polite as he answered to the youth.

The brown haired youth continued: “The Temple has recognized the contribution the military crossbow had made in the recent regional war. It played an important role in solving the urgent needs of the military. It is a great item! ”

Dudian kept the smile on his face, but wanted to end the conversation: “I’m flattered.” He knew that if he said more, it would be like pushing a stick at snakes. The others would rush at him without end. At this time he suddenly understood why the masters preferred to move with their assistants. They would keep the others away from them.

Soon there were about a dozen architects following after Dudian. In addition to primary and intermediate architects, there were two senior architects too. But both of them were from a civilian background. Their status was low in the Temple, and the connections they had were far less than architects from noble backgrounds.

There were approximately hundreds of figures in front of the castle where the council was going to be held. Without a doubt, they were waiting for the end of the council. The outsiders were prohibited from watching the process of the council. However, in the end, a summary would be announced by the council members. So if there was anything big that was happening, then the people could get information from the source.

Dudian's arrival attracted everyone's attention. The previous brown haired youth escorted Dudian as if he was his personal bodyguard.

Dudian passed through the crowd and stepped up the stairs. He stood in the front of the council's building.

There was a primary architect at the door. He still indicated for Dudian to show his identity. After verification Dudian was respectfully invited into the building.

This was the first time Dudian had come to the council. The building was extremely magnificent and solemn. He knew that the few who could determine the fate of all architects would be sitting in the council.

A maid guided him inside the building. They came to the second floor where the meeting was going to be held.

The council was to be held in a rectangular room which was ten meters long. The items placed inside were colorful and gave a different rendering to the room's style.

At the same time, he saw four people sitting in the room. All of them seemed to be over fifty years old as their hair had white in them. One of them even looked seventy years old, all because his hair was fully white and his skin was wrinkled.

The people who were discussing stopped and looked at him as Dudian entered the room.

“Dean greets the predecessors.” Dudian took the initiative to greet them with a modest attitude.

One of the old men who had a mustache and chunky body frame stood up: “I didn’t expect the genius from the rumors was so young.”

Another one laughed: “Dean. Wait for a while as the others haven’t arrived yet.”

Dudian saw that there was no maliciousness in the person’s smile. Moreover, he wasn’t called to a seat, so he smiled and stood at the side.

The chunky old man didn’t order him to be seated which meant that Dudian hadn’t done anything wrong in their eyes. However, his identity wasn’t big enough to be seated in front of them. So he didn’t want to be rude and ask for a seat.

The ritual rules were particularly important in some places. And the council was one of them.

After a moment three people entered the room. Two men and a woman joined the other four.

“Everyone is here!” The chunky man glanced at Dudian and

swept through the crowd: “The council is called to discuss two things. First is the youngest genius of the temple. Mr. Dean.”

Dudian didn’t move as he quietly listened.

“Dean, please come over.” The old man said in a gentle tone.

Dudian nodded and walked to stand beside the man.

“It’s our first meeting. My name is Cedley Lun.” The old man smiled: “Today this small meeting is held to discuss a thing with you. We knew that you were a hunter when you joined our Temple. The latest newspapers have been focusing on your identity. Although it’s only circulated in noble circles and civilians aren’t aware of your identity, but your identity is questioned in the eyes of the aristocracy!”

Dudian’s eyes lit up as he knew that his guess was not wrong.

“We hope that you can give up the hunter profession and focus on being an architect. Of course, if you want to learn or study something else then there are other hobbies such as music, poetry and so on. We are welcome to such professions and hobbies. Moreover, I have heard that you are quite talented in poetry and won the praise of master Taize. Even my granddaughter likes your poem!” Master Cedley laughed.

The chunky man added:” You are way too young and being a hunter is very dangerous. If an accident occurs outside the giant

wall, it will be a loss to all of us!”

“You should wholeheartedly focus on research and spread the word of God.” The former seventy-year-old man indifferently said.

Dudian smiled. He knew that the aristocrats deeply loved musicians and poets because of their art. Moreover, it would give a better aura to his identity.

“Alright!” Dudian promised them: “But you should also know that Ryan family has been very kind to me in the past. Now, the Ryan family has founded the New World consortium, and had rented a passage to the outside of the giant wall. Now there aren’t other hunters under their command, so Ryan family hopes that when they can recruit new hunters, I will teach them through my hunting experience and tell them about the world outside the giant wall. They don’t need me as a hunter, and I’ll completely give up on hunting!”

“Hmpf!” The seventy-year-old man snorted: “Hunter! You are a dignified architect! How can you mix with such low people as hunters? They are crazy! Haven’t you heard the proverb: “The eyes that spy at darkness will get used to it.” If you dwindle with them for a long time, you will become violent and brutal as them too. You should completely stay away from such people and focus on your research. Purify your mind!”

“First of all, I don’t think my mind needs purification! Secondly, I don’t distinguish people as low and high! Finally, I have heard a proverb that says ‘light will eventually defeat the darkness.’ If the light doesn’t touch the darkness then what kind of a war are we

talking about? How can light win?”

Chapter 312

“Young man, do you think that by getting the ‘epoch’ medal you can have such an arrogant attitude? When the sun rises the darkness hides away. Why a war? You should work on your research and create items of the Lord. How many people can benefit from you if you spread the word of the Lord? If you focus on killing monsters then how many will benefit from it? Can’t you tell which is more important out of the two?”

“I have already said that I’m going to quit being a hunter and concentrate on my research. But I hope that you don’t despise the hunter profession. If there were no hunters to go outside the giant wall and kill the monsters what would you research? Would you mind explaining me that?” Dudian asked.

“Presumptuous!” The seventy-year-old man shouted in anger: “How can you speak like that without following the etiquette? No wonder, that even though you have joined the Temple, you still can’t get rid of bad habits!”

Dudian face was cold as he replied: “If you want me to respect you because of your age then act in accordance with it.”

“You!” The seventy-year-old man’s eyes went wide from anger.

“Well, Mr. Dean let’s not be rude! Arsen Mr. Dean is from a civilian family and has been a hunter before. It’s normal that his temper is different from yours. You should forgive him for that and don’t dwindle on it.” The previous master interrupted their

talk and even advised the old man.

Arsen looked at him and restrained his anger. He coldly looked at Dudian: “Because of your remarks I will say my conclusion, that it will be very difficult for you to touch the tips of Lord’s shoes!”

In the Temple of Elements, the term ‘lord’ referred to God of Light while ‘tips of shoes’ referred to the master. The origin of the phrase was stamped a long time ago when the Temple was constructed. It was a self-deprecating and humble reference used by the masters to refer to themselves. It meant that even though they were masters, they could only see the tip of the iceberg, but weren’t aware of the whole picture. Afterward, this phrase became popular as masters began to use it.

“Don’t make an early judgment as life is long.” Dudian took it lightly.

The seventy-year-old man sat back on the chair and no longer replied.

The previous master wryly smiled as he looked at both of them. He thought of Dudian’s temper, so he didn’t want to persuade him. He didn’t want to lose face because of Dudian’s sharp retorts. Moreover, he had seen many geniuses, and all of them were proud and arrogant. In this case, Dudian was undoubtedly the most dazzling one. The youngest architect to be awarded the ‘epoch’ medal. He took a deep breath: “Both of you...forget it. Mr. Dean has already agreed to withdraw from his hunter career and will no longer go outside the giant wall.”

Arsen sneered and turned away.

“In addition to this matter, we have another, which is more important. The second problem at hand is the battle that is happening at the border. The continuous fighting has caused pressure on the military and the people. Representatives from the military hope that we can create new military items to defeat the barbarians completely. All of you who have been invited here had made achievements in the military field. I hope that you will focus your research on military items, either to create new products or improve the old ones.” The master smiled as he looked around the crowd.

Dudian’s eyes lit up, but he kept silent.

The masters were silent as they delved into their thoughts. The previous chunky old man touched the beard on his chin and slowly said: “I haven’t been involved with military items since the last time I created the ‘shadow bow.’ I had heard that an intermediate architect made an improvement and enhanced the item. Right now it should achieve a four-star level.”

The master (the guy who runs the circle) smiled: “Four-star item is more than enough. I didn’t expect that shadow bow would reach such a height. It is a substantial improvement.”

The chunky old man smiled and waved his hand.

The master looked at Dudian: “Mr. Dean your military crossbow

is very good. It would be very helpful on the battlefield if it can be improved once again. I hope you will research it after you go back. ”

Dudian nodded: “I will.”

“Well, this is the end of the meeting.” The master announced.

Everyone got up and walked by Dudian’s side. Some of them slightly nodded as they passed by him but the others directly went past without taking a look. As the master architects, they were proud and arrogant. Even though Dudian had a great potential as an architect, but unless he becomes a master, they wouldn’t make advances and make contact with him.

After all of them departed, the master patted Dudian’s shoulder: “Arsen has a bit of temper so don’t take it to your heart. I trust in your abilities, but don’t forget that etiquette has to be followed.”

Dudian knew that the man didn’t have bad intentions and could be considered as a friend.

“Yes.” Dudian nodded but didn’t say anything more.

Their students met the masters that had left the council room on the first floor. They escorted them until the masters reached their carriages.

The people waiting in front of the castle made way for them to

pass. Most of them looked at the glorious masters with awe in their eyes. There were more than a hundred people, but you could hear the wing flaps of the mosquitoes.

Dudian and the master came out from the castle side by side as the other masters left in carriages.

The crowd went into a stir as they saw Dudian with the master. Apparently, no one had expected the genius boy from the recent newspapers to be able to walk side by side with a master.

Dudian regretted that he hadn't come with a carriage as he looked around the crowd.

"I'll go first. Take your time and work on new items." The master laughed as he sat in the compartment.

Dudian nodded.

The crowd was silent until the old man's carriage began to move, but afterward, it turned into an uproar. Everyone looked at Dudian with envy and jealousy.

Dudian dashed out as the carriage went away.

The crowd immediately reacted to catch up, but Dudian quickly ran away. The frail architects didn't have a chance to catch up with a scavenger let alone a hunter.

Dudian came back to his own research room in the castle. He dismantled the lightning rod and packed the parts into suitcases. He directly took them out of the castle.

Dudian used the carriage to carry the suitcases back to the hall.

There were more than a dozen architects in the hall standing in line to submit their own works.

Dudian came to stand in the queue too.

“Huh?” The man standing in front of him was puzzled as he saw Dudian. He was surprised: “Are you, Dean? The genius Dean?”

“Hello.” Dudian politely greeted the man.

The man was pleased with Dudian’s polite attitude: “Hi, Hi, are you here to submit your new research?”

Dudian nodded.

“Please, go on.” The man sidestepped as he gave his place to Dudian.

Dudian quickly refused, “No, you first.”

“It’s alright. I have lots of time.”

“Alright.”

Dudian and the man changed the position. The three people in front of them heard the man’s conversation with Dudian. The girl standing in front of Dudian was excited as she said: “I’ll change my place with you too.”

Dudian saw the primary architect medal on her chest. Such an achievement at a young age was considered an excellent result. He exchanged the places with her too.

The other two standing in front of him gave their positions to Dudian too.

“Please submit your work …” The young man behind the counter turned back to get the form and saw that the youth from behind the line had appeared in front of him. He was startled but felt a bit familiar with the tender youth: “You are?”

Dudian handed over the suitcases: “My name is Dean, and this is my work.” Afterward, he handed out another folder: “There is a sketch of the design and drawings for the assembly.”

“Dean…” There was another woman beside the young man. She was surprised as she suddenly remembered something: “Is it your new item?”

“Yes.”

The woman was excited. She received the luggage and quickly handed another form. She said in a pleasant tone: “Fill in this identity table and brand it with your medal.” (I think they use medals to make a stamp)

Dudian quickly filled the form. He removed his medal and put it in the pink box on the counter. Afterward, he pressed his medal onto the form, and soon his name and pattern on his medal appeared on the form.

“Assessment usually takes from one to three days. If there is a prayer day in between then, the evaluation will be delayed for one day.” The woman smiled.

“Thank you.” Dudian smiled and thanked her as he left the counter. Moreover, he thanked the other four who had given their places in the queue and returned to his castle.

The woman didn’t wait for the other four architects to submit their works instead picked out the form filled by Dudian and went into a small room in the back. There was a middle-aged woman in the room. She excitedly spoke to her: “Lisa this is the new invention by architect Dean. It’s that genius Dean!”

Lisa was surprised: “Him?” She reached out to take the form from the woman’s hand. She saw the stamp on the form: “Alright, you go back.”

The woman nodded and left the room.

Lisa called out to guards to help her with the suitcases: “Carry those suitcases and follow after me.”

“Yes.” The guards replied.

Half an hour later.

Lisa and guards appeared in front of another castle. They submitted the folder and suitcases to the staff at the counter.

The staff saw that the trunk of the suitcases was marked with the red logo. They knew that it meant priority over other works during the assessment.

...

The dining room in the ninth castle.

A slender woman sat in front of the piano and played a melody. The music was like a gurgling spring that flowed through the hall.

There was a tea table in front of the piano. Master Eivissa was enjoying tea as the seventy-year-old Arsen was sitting opposite to him.

“Aren’t you annoyed?” Arsen took a few sips from the cup: “He thinks that he can look down at everyone because he got ‘epoch’ medal! Humph!”

“All of the geniuses are like that.” Eivissa laughed.

Arsen was in a gloomy mood: “What genius? All of us were considered geniuses when we were young. Did we act this way too?”

There was a sly smile on Eivissa face: “It took sixty years for old Copenhagen to soar from primary architect into a master.”

“It is what I’m talking about!” Arsen rolled his eyes: “Today there are primary architects who are older than 40. They burned out years ago as they have indulged in the way of nobles. All they think about is singing and dancing which confuses their minds. They are the parasites in the Temple! They should be fired!”

“It is indeed a long and boring road. But there are a few who are like Copenhagen.” Eivissa exclaimed.

Arsen snorted: “Without a determination, the only result will be a failure! Like this kid. He is just too arrogant! He won’t amount to anything in a few years!”

Eivissa smiled but didn’t say anything.

At the same time, a butler came and respectfully said: “Master

Eivissa there is a new invention from Lightning department. You have been asked to evaluate it.”

Chapter 313

“The Lightning department?” Eivissa was startled.

Arsen couldn’t help but smile as he saw Eivissa’s expression: “Congratulations. Although there aren’t much of items in your faction but every time a new invention is made it’s rated at least two stars. If the new work is a military item, then it is bound to play a great role in the battlefield.”

“I heard Halley’s work was almost completed. I assume it’s his research. ”

“Alright, I’ll come back later on.” Arsen got up.

Both of them left the castle. Arsen went back to his castle while Eivissa’s carriage went to the Temple’s hall.

...

Dudian returned to his castle. He ordered Sergei and Gwyneth to continued smelting tungsten steel. This time he wasn’t making a cage but preparing spears which were ten meters long. The tips of the spears had sharp shark fins. The end of the spear had a hole which would have a chain made of tungsten steel attached to it. The steel chains would be more than 150 meters long. Including the chains, every spear would weigh thousands of kilograms.

Gwyneth, Sergei, Jin, Nicholas and others were taken aghast as

they saw the first finished shark spear. Its size was extraordinary, and it was the first time that they saw such a thing.

“Are you going to use this for the hunt?” Sergei was shocked as he looked at the shark spear. He looked at the teenager who had come up with another extraordinary weapon.

Dudian didn’t answer as he continued to carve out the mold. It was necessary to keep the use a secret. The main reason he was making the shark spears was to hunt the adult splitter. Maybe he could use them to hunt other giant monsters in the future too. He learned from the super chip that in the middle ages of the old era some fishermen had used large spears to hunt white sharks, whales, and other marine beasts. However, the sizes were not so big, and the materials used weren’t so solid.

Sergei and the others were taken aback but continued to work.

It didn’t take long for seven thousand kilograms of tungsten steel to run out. Dudian contacted the Temple to buy another batch of tungsten steel. This time he didn’t find Eli but looked for someone else. He was worried that the other consortiums would misunderstand his contact with Eli and it would be a headache for her.

Dudian made the molds while the shark spear production continued from the afternoon until the evening. He let Sergei, Gwyneth, Nicholas, and others do the smelting. Although they didn’t have experience, but there was not much of skill involved in the process.

Dudian went back to his room as Sergei, and the others continued to melt the tungsten steel. Dudian took out a few pieces of snow paper. This was the best quality paper which was produced in this era. He poured ink into the quill pen and pondered for a while. Afterward, he began to sketch the drawings on the snow paper. The other architects would be surprised if they saw what Dudian drew. His hands were stable, and his painting was very accurate. Even Sergei and Gwyneth would have been surprised too, because not so many hunters had such fine control of power.

Dudian had long been accustomed to exercising his right hand along with his left hand. He did exercises even in the prison. The prisoners in the Thorn Flower Prison, most of the time, would abandon everything, but Dudian would plan his escape and think about a variety of hunting skills. He would exercise the flexibility of his body too. The main reason was that he believed that one day he would get out of the prison, while others were firm on thoughts of their death in the prison!

Persistence is an advantage in some situations!

Brush!

A silhouette of a model gradually appeared as the pen drew on the snow paper. Only Dudian was aware of the change that this item would bring into the world. It would not completely change the world but the Temple too! It would be the first step that he would take to conquer the world!

All the snow papers were painted after a few hours. There were no alterations. All the nuances of the structure were in the details. As well as the specific roles of the various parts were explained. There was a sense of harmony to the design.

After drying them up, he put the snow papers into silk bags and placed them back in the black box.

Dudian came to a stop in front of the windowsill after he finished the design. He looked back at the training field where Sergei and others continued to melt the tungsten steel. They were not slacking so he retracted his eyes and took out the wood. Dudian continued his daily exercise of carving. Although he had been carving for a long time, there was not too much of a significant effect on his left hand.

Dudian didn’t lack patience.

…

The next day.

Dudian found another person and ordered another batch of tungsten steel. This time he wasn’t planning to refine a shark spear, but a crossbow. Throwing the heavy shark spear at the enemy would be impossible. To accurately hit the target, he had to use a crossbow. The structure of the crossbow was more or less same as cannons. However, it relied on ropes to pull the spear.

The best quality rope that could be found was called ‘reinforced eagle tendon rope.’ It was a synthetic rope mixed with different materials. The army used it on giant crossbows in the border war. However, that giant crossbow was trivial in comparison to the one made by Dudian. The one that army had was more traditional and could be used to kill barbarians. Often a shot would kill seven or eight people as it would pierce through their chests. However, Dudian’s aim was to shoot an adult splitter.

Moreover, the arrows used by the army were made out of wood while Dudian made everything from tungsten steel. The weight of the product was totally different from army’s item.

Dudian engraved the mold and produced the crossbow first. After the other materials had been shipped back, he put on the reinforced eagle tendon. They came back to the hill at the back of the castle to test the new spear and crossbow.

Whoosh!

The sharp spear flew as the steel chain followed behind it. However, in about 100 meters the momentum was greatly reduced. The spear fell and stabbed onto the ground. It ran through for four or five meters before coming to a stop.

Chapter 314

Sergei and others saw that scene. Sergei shook his head while Nicholas sighed: “The weight of the spear is too heavy. The rope isn’t able to pull it properly. The distance of the 100 meters isn’t much, and the shooter would be in a dangerous situation.”

Sergei nodded: “yes.”

Dudian looked at the shark spear as he delved into thoughts. Although he had expected that there will be a problem with the rope but still decided to try it out. Now it was a fact, and there were to solutions that came to his mind at the moment. The first was to reduce the weight of the spear. The second solution was to increase the elasticity of the crossbow. If he went with the first solution, then the lethality of the spear would reduce. In that case, even if the shark spear hit the target it didn’t mean that it would be able to pierce through.

As for the second solution. The reinforced eagle tendon rope was already the best product that he could get.

Sergei, Gwyneth, and others put away these things as Dudian looked at the spear and crossbow. He needed more time to think about a solution.

Dudian commanded Nicholas to serve breakfast. He checked the newspapers to see the movements from the Temple and Mellon Consortium.

“The youngest ‘epoch’ medal winner in the history, the inventor of the legendary new textile machine, a four-star military cross has come up with new work. We have learned that the new item is not belonging to wood element faction but to another rare faction… ”

Dudian saw the special newspaper by the Temple. The top of the front page was occupied by headlines which highlighted himself. It had to be noted that only the master level figures were in the headlines in the past. This alone would surprise a lot of people and would raise his identity as an architect.

Although he was aware that the information, about him submitting a new work would leak out sooner or later, but Dudian didn’t expect that it would cause such a big concern. He had two inventions, and the military crossbow was the lowest, while the new type of the textile machine was a legendary item and opened up a new era of thought. Now his third work was the topic of discussion. If it were evaluated as a two star or a three-star item, then he would enter a buffer phase. Moreover, his ‘genius’ myth would burst, and he would fade away from the attention of the public.

Dudian put down the newspaper and gently rubbed his fingers. He took another newspaper, which was published by an agency under Mellon consortium’s wings. The vast majority of the ordinary civilians weren’t aware that consortia were behind the shadows and controlled the newspaper agencies. So the power of influence from the newspapers propaganda was at an all time high.

“According to the internal staff from the Temple of Elements “genius” Dean has come up with a new invention. The success rate

is very low… ”

“According to the showgirl Inna working in Moulin Rouge, Mr. Dean has accompanied her to sing and dance… ”

Dudian checked the other pages before putting away the newspaper. He thought that the girl Inna was perhaps an unknown singer. People from Mellon consortium had invited her to discredit his reputation. Most probably the girl wanted to be famous in the short term, so she had agreed. Although Dudian had expected the Mellon consortium to make a move, but he would never imagine that they would go with such a despicable method. Everything was nonsense, but he couldn’t fight back. If he sued the newspaper, then they would shirk the responsibility upon the singer. If he sued the girl, then his image was bound to be entangled with the girl. He was defeated no matter which method he chose to counterattack.

The public loved gossips such as this, and it was the best topic for people to talk after a sip of wine. The only way to counterattack was through new inventions.

“A group of rat excrement …” Dudian slightly narrowed his eyes. Although he was a calm and rational person, but as a teenager, he was agitated. His chest was boiling with fury and rage.

Dudian finished his breakfast and came back to the training field. He stroked the crossbow as he thought about methods to improve his chances.

…

Temple of Elements.

Master Eivissa stood in an empty room. He was, like a frozen structure as he held on to the design. He carefully observed the various parts of the drawing. Theoretically speaking there were a thing or two which he couldn't understand as he wrinkled his brows. He turned to the second drawing and afterward continued to check the first.

"This …" Master Eivissa blinked: "Who has come up with this?"

No one answered to his question.

The servant standing by the side gave a grave look.

Master Eivissa turned over the manuscript once more. He looked back at the servant: "Who is the architect that has invented this?"

"Sorry Master but it is confidential. I'm not aware of the identity of the architect." The servant respectfully replied.

Eivissa was startled. He bowed his head in anxiety. He was confused! He looked at manuscripts: "There are clouds in the sky… Tomorrow it should rain, and we can check the effect of this item against the thunder…If successful…" His eyelids flapped like the wings of a bird: "The value of this item is too big."

Thunderbolts would hit the houses of many residents and castles of nobles during the rainy season and black snow season. The damage to the houses was a small matter, but the death of civilians was a great problem. Every year the number of people dying through this would amount to one-third of the people who died because of the plagues.

“Yes.” The waiter respectfully nodded as he heard the words of master Eivissa.

Ibiza put down the design manuscript and turned away from the open room.

In the blink of an eye, two days passed.

The biggest news for the last two days in the paper published by the Temple was the new research of Dudian. However, the largest news in the other newspapers was the fierce competition and friction between Mellon Consortium and Scott consortium. Both of them were involved in the mining industry, and there was a price war going between them right now. Because of the war, there was a great need for raw materials and these two consortia fought for the largest share. The military newspaper highlighted the events from the battlefield. Moreover, they recorded heroic deeds of some soldiers.

Chapter 315

July 29th.

Cloudy weather.

Dark clouds had covered over the area within the giant wall. The weather was cold. Pedestrians had wrapped themselves in clothes as the Black Death season was ending. The members of the Holy Church were in the huge squares in the slums, residential and commercial districts. They even came over to the Temple. The members were worshiping God of Light. The second day of the August would be the first day of the annual snow season. It was a routine prayer day where civilians, nobles and high-profile members of the Holy Church amassed into crowds to pray for the protection of humans from suffering.

Several architects were busy as they built a giant steeple at the highest place of a castle which was on top of a hill. The cold wind hit their faces as their hair fluttered in the air.

“Hurry up! Hurry! Bury the wires properly!” An old man in high spirit was commanding them. It was master Eivissa.

Architects rapidly pulled the wires.

“Eivissa, do you really think this thing will work out?” Another old man who was shorter than Eivissa casually asked.

Master Eivissa slightly shook his head: “It’s hard to say at this point. We will know when the lightning hits it. Anyway, the concept that is put forward is breathtaking. Even if it fails, the invention shall be no less than a three-star item.”

“This is true.” Short man nodded: “Whoever the inventor is he has studied the power of lightning very deeply. Moreover, he knows how to use the wires as insulators. Perhaps it is the work of Bel. He has studied lightning for decades so it should be time for him to be promoted to the master level.”

Eivissa faintly smiled but didn’t answer. Bel was a friend of the short old man. Naturally, the man was going to favor the latter but in his viewpoint, it was an architect from the next generation. The problem was that there were no more than three talents who could be a candidate to produce such an invention. The only thing that made him regret was that for the past two days he had asked all his students but none of them were the inventors. Otherwise not just his student but he would come into the light because of this product too.

Rumble Rumble

Low roars of thunder echoed from the sky.

Eivissa and the short old man were startled. But their eyes lit up as Eivissa quickly said: “Everyone come back! Quickly prepare for the outcome!”

The architects made the final touches to the work and quickly

retreated back. Eivissa and the old man left together to the neighboring high-rise. Both master Eivissa and the short old man were using telescopes covered in a protective plastic layer as they looked up at the gloomy dark clouds. The rain was going to pour at any minute.

A staff from the temple produced few large umbrellas so that they could use them when the rain began.

Eivissa looked back in fear. He screamed out: “Bastard! Get these things away! Do you want to kill us?”

The architects noted the mistake of the staff from the Temple. There were tension and loss in the latter’s face. They quickly approached and snatched the umbrellas from his hands and threw them back to the corridor. The umbrellas had a metal skeleton which could attract the lightning. One of the architects said in a ridiculing tone: “Idiot! Do you have the brains of a dog? How dare you bring such things out here when a lightning could strike us at any moment! Roll away and get several sets of raincoats!”

The young staff from the Temple suddenly realized his mistake. His legs trembled as he turned away and ran in haste.

After a moment, Eivissa and others put raincoats as they stood on the floor.

Rumble Rumble

The lightning jumped from one cloud to the other as if it was a snake. The heaven and earth shined like in the daytime because of it.

The short old man looked at the steeple opposite to them. He whispered: “Even though that item is made out of fine iron it’s sure to split after the lightning hits it!”

Eivissa narrowed his eyes as he looked at the lightning rod.

Boom!

The sound of the thunder echoed out.

The air pressure dropped as the moisture got stronger. In about seven or eight minutes Eivissa felt the coolness of the air. The first drop of rain fell and he looked up at the sky. He put on his hat as he quietly waited.

Boom! Bang!

A thick purple lightning split out from the clouds and dropped down along with the rain. It shot down and hit the metal rod at the top of the giant pole. A dazzling purple electric light burst out. It seemed like the giant pole was a hand which captured the snake from the clouds and clutched it in its hand.

Eivissa and the others narrowed their eyes as they intensely looked at the sight. Their scalp and skin were numb and they got

goose bumps. Their blood boiled at the sight. They weren't just affected and shocked be the strange image in front of them but also stimulated by the electrostatic field attached to the pole by the lightning.

The image gradually disappeared after less than two seconds. However, the giant steeple was still intact.

Eivissa and the short old man raised their telescopes to observe the iron pole. There was no trace of damage. The ground below was no different. They jumped in euphoria! They knew that the test was successful!

Boom! Bang!

Another lightning shot down and wrapped the metal road.

Once more it disappeared and the ground was still unscathed.

At this point, the rain gradually intensified as the lightning got fiercer.

Rumble Rumble

The sound of thunder echoed as the lightning from the clouds was pulled down and hit the giant pole. Ordinary lightning rod couldn't have such a possibility to attract so many bolts of lightning. However in order to verify the effect of the lightning rod master Eivissa had arranged a number of iron ores close to the

pole. It would increase the probability of lightning striking down at that area. Moreover, because of the giant wall, the climate within was different than outside. The height of the clouds was generally lower within the wall rather than outside. That was one of the reasons for major natural disasters to have more effect inside rather than outside of the giant wall.

The lightning rod was unscathed after continuous thunder and lightning.

Eivissa and other observed the shining picture which happened because of the lightning. They were initially shocked but gradually immersed in the magnificent thunder and lightning. It was like they were watching a great art exhibition.

The rain lasted for more than three hours. Eivissa and the short old man stood there and looked at the rain for more than three hours. Even the best operas or musicians couldn’t force people to willingly stand in the rain and watch for three hours long.

…

In the castle.

The oil lamp quietly burned on the wall. Fragrant light warmed the whole hall. All the windows were closed as rain gently knocked down on the windows. Two maids quietly stood still. Their legs were hurting but they insisted. Sergei, Gwyneth, and Jin were sitting close to the sofa and eating fruits. Dudian stood in front of the window as he looked out at the rain. Although it looked clean

and bright but the water on the floor was colored light black.

“Master, are you cold?” Nicholas respectfully asked as he came forward.

Dudian didn’t look back: “Thanks for coming.”

Nicholas took a small step forward.

Dudian asked: “What do you see?”

Nicholas looked outside through the gap of the window. He was puzzled: “The rain?”

“Where does the rain come from?”

“From the dark clouds, of course.”

“Where do the dark clouds come from?”

“Uh … this slave doesn’t know.”

Dudian seemed like he was lost in thought. He whispered: “What do you think? What’s the purpose of our lives?”

Nicholas’s eyes lit up: “This slave doesn’t understand the answer to the philosophical question. But this slave knows that my

purpose is to serve you. Although I have offended you before for many times and my heart was rebellious but I'm an old man who no longer wants to fight. I hope you can trust me once again."

Dudian retracted his eyes and looked at Nicholas. Nicholas's eyes were calm and full of sincerity. Dudian took his eyes and patted his shoulder: "Go and prepare my carriage. I'll go to the Ryan family."

"Yes," Nicholas replied.

Sergei and others heard that Dudian was going to go out. Jin said: "I'll go with you."
"No need."

Sergei cut the fruit: "These days you have been going to the Ryan family every night and coming back at dawn. Who is the lucky lady from the Ryan family?"

Dudian didn't reply to him as he waited for Nicholas to prepare the carriage. He put on the raincoat and got on the carriage.

He went to a butcher in a remote town. Dudian spent two silver coins and bought an iron back pig which weighed two hundred pounds. It was a high-end pig whose meat rivaled beef.

As like the last time Dudian asked the butcher to slaughter the pig. Afterward, he put the parts of the pig in the compartment. He drove the carriage to a small town hotel near the fortress and parked there. He dragged the pig through the grass outside the

town. It didn't take long for him to reach the barrier. As he had expected the patrols were looser in the rainy days. The barbarians never attacked this part of the fortress because of its terrain. There were not so many garrison members in here.

Dudian quietly passed the barrier. The weight of two hundred pounds was nothing significant for him. After crossing the barrier he quickly went towards the location where splitty was kept.

Dudian drilled into the desolate building. He opened the hole covered with the leaves and branches from the trees. He jumped into the basement with the ironback pig. Splitty was sleeping inside the cage.

Splitty looked at him the moment it heard Dudian's movement. It 'squeaked' few times in excitement. Its scythe-like arms gently rubbed the cage.

Dudian pulled out a dagger as he cut the ironback pig into small parts so that he could throw them through the iron pillars of the cage.

Dudian cut the ironback pig as if he was cutting tofu. He cut it into many parts and threw them into the cage to feed splitty. After a few days, splitty's body color looked darker than the previous color. However, the color of its shell was looking unevenly coated.

For the past five days, Dudian had brought an ironback pig to feed Splitty. He had seen it change in the last few days. Its scythes looked stronger and harder in comparison to its newborn state.

However, it still looked miserable. It hadn't grown much and its crust hasn't transformed at all. The main reason was malnutrition and less food.

"Little guy be obedient for a few more days. I'll kill you mother and we will be able to go outside the giant wall. I'll let you roam around freely afterward." Dudian murmured as he threw the pork meat.

Splitty quickly ate the pork meat in excitement. After all, it was the only meal which it had every day.

Splitty was fed and Dudian put on a raincoat. He removed the sachet from his neck. It was different from others as it was had a dry shell of blood.

Dudian rushed back to the barrier wall after leaving the basement.

Because of five days of experience, Dudian was very familiar with the route. Half an hour later he bypassed the desolate mountain. However, he saw that shadows were moving at the foot of the mountain. It was like ghosts were moving around.

There was a trace of fear in his eyes as he observed a dozen silhouettes as they moved. They had long sticks in their hands as they walked towards a different direction.

Dudian quietly looked at them: "Barbarians?" He quietly poked

the grasses as he went close to the figures. He saw that all of them were tall but had a dark complexion. They looked like the tribes from India from the old era. They had collars made out of animal teeth hanging on their necks. The sticks that they held onto were made out of bones from beasts. There were fine knives on their waists.

Dudian saw that these knives were the same as the knife he had picked up back in the battlefield.

The barbarians didn't use raincoats as the rain freely spilled onto their bodies. They didn't seem to care about rain at all.

After a moment the barbarians reached a weedy cliff. The one in the front poked the weeds and drilled inside. The other followed the first one. The last one carefully put back the weeds. Dudian thought that if he hadn't seen them enter the place he would never think that this place would be a barbarian den.

He gently sniffed. Although the rain would dilute the odors but he was still able to sense the smell which was a mixture of human and beast. He remembered the odor and quietly left the place.

Although people had always had hatred against the barbarians and they thought of them as enemies but Dudian didn't have strong feelings about them. In his eyes, the only enemy were the monsters. He wouldn't provoke the barbarians if there wasn't a collision of interests. Moreover, his intuition told him that the foundation of the barbarians was no worse than the military.

Chapter 316

July 30, cloudy weather.

The air was more humid after the heavy rain. The breeze that blew was cold. The climate change indicated that the terrible black snow season was coming. The square for worship was built and there were a large number of people gathered in the place. The platform was surrounded by the statues. Although the prayer day hasn't officially started yet, but the pious believers had come for the prayers.

At dawn. The same day.

The main castle of the Scott consortium. A figure entered the secret underground passage from the side of the castle. The man was led to the secret room by another shadow which was waiting for him. The man took out a sign which was familiar to everyone from the nobles to the civilians in the giant wall. The symbol of the Temple of Elements.

The old man in the secret chamber knew the identity of the person who had a black mask covering his face. The old man quickly took the secret report and opened it. There was a short poem of a famous poet at the top. His eyes swept through it and suddenly his pupils shrank. His fingers trembled but he restrained himself. He spoke in a hoarse sound: "Go."

The shadow didn't speak but nodded his head. He quickly turned away and left.

The old man watched him leave the secret chamber through the passage. He used another exit and went around a few corridors. The old man reached the basement and twisted the wall. He walked through the stairs of the basement and came to the castle hall.

He looked at the clock on the wall which was more than sixty years old. It was early. He gently sucked his breath in and out. He felt calm as he found a maid: “Get to work, it’s not early anymore.”

“Yes, butler.” The maid respectfully replied to the old man.

The warm sun rays shined through the windows in the castle. Miss Rostov, young master, second generation and third generation members had woken up. Some of the third generation members were still huddled in bed as they were reluctant to get out of bed.

It was seven o’clock. All the ladies and gentlemen were present in the hall. Even the third generation descendants who were eager to sleep were present. The reason was that their grandfather Chai Rostov would be present. The members of the family would always get up on time and crowd in the lobby to enjoy the breakfast. It was the iron rule of the family and their way of life. No one dared to violate this unwritten rule.

However, everyone was anxious and surprised today as after a long time their grandfather had yet to come down. Their grandfather had never been late in his lifetime. It only meant that

there were more important things which were related to the consortium that made him come down late.

Everyone in the hall had different thoughts and speculations about the issue.

In Chai Rostov's room.

Chai Rostov rubbed his eyes as he looked at the secret report the old butler handed out to him. The butler picked up the glasses and gave it to Chai.

Chai put on glasses and slowly opened the secret report. He read through the content and handed it back to the old butler. There was not much of a change on his face. His thick eyebrows gave a majestic feel to Chai's face. It seemed that Chai was in deep thought and thought about countless ideas. He looked like a man who could see through endless people.

"Master ..." butler called out to old Chai.

Chai was silent for a time: "This time we have to get this thing at all costs!"

"Yes." The butler nodded.

Chai put on his shoes and got out of bed. He put on the clothes and came to the hall as his butler followed after him. The young ladies and gentlemen of the family all stood up as they descended

into the hall.

The others sat behind the table according to their seniority after old Chai sat at the top.

Old butler handed the newest newspaper to Chai. He knew that Chai liked to read the newspaper at breakfast. Old Chai found this attitude more efficient and time-saving.

The newspaper handed out to him wasn't the one which belonged to their own consortium or to the newspapers that belonged to other consortia. It was the newspaper published by the military. He already knew about the information that would be published by the newspaper of their own consortium. Actually, for old Chai, there were two powers which could shake the status and foundation of Scott consortium. The first one was the military while the second was the Holy Church. The border was in a state which made it difficult to predict. He could only rely on his own judgment to understand the process. This war will sacrifice tens or even hundreds of thousands of soldiers. He didn't care about their life or death but the amount of money which could be made in the process.

He had a famous saying: "There is money to be made in the place where there is a struggle."

This simple sentence had affected thoughts of a lot of wealthy businessmen. Moreover, it was the reasoning behind his business criteria.

“Military fell into a disadvantage even though they have the geographical advantages and military equipment?” Old Chai thought: “These barbarians seem to have learned using tricks and plans in addition to brute force…Interesting…”

…

The other five consortia including Huasheng consortium, Mellon consortium, and Krylov consortium had received the secret reports from the internal staff of the Temple which had ties to them. Everyone was silent at dawn as the information was confirmed.

The daily newspaper published by the Temple of the Elements has been distributed out. The silence was suddenly replaced by an uproar. All the nobles were shocked.

The front page of the newspaper had four very big words imprinted on it: “Architect Dean’s new invention!”

Especially the phrase ‘lightning rod’ was imprinted in color!

The same newspaper was sent to Dudian’s castle. There was a trace of a smile on his face as he read the newspaper. Because of yesterday’s heavy rain, he expected that the results would come out today.

“Mr. Dean is 16 years old. He is the youngest ‘epoch’ medal winner in the history. His third invention is born. Following the legendary item – the new textile machine, four-star item – the

military crossbow, this is his third work of art which is – the lightning rod!”

“A lot of people would be puzzled by the name of the product which is called the lightning rod. Everyone knows that Mr. Dean is a member of the wood element faction! I also thought so but Mr. Dean had shown me with facts the difference between the ‘genius’ and ‘extraordinary’! Your guess is not wrong. As the name literally says this product belongs to the lightning faction! Yes, we are now able to mine the most destructive lightning!”

“According to master Eivissa and two other masters the lightning rod has been confirmed as a superior grade four-star item!”

Dudian knew that there were some exaggerated words in the newspaper which have been modified but generally, everything was alright. The thing is that the lightning rod has been graded even higher than his military crossbow!

It was a superior grade four-star item which was very close to five-star items!

Dudian knew why lightning rod was assessed more valuable than the military crossbow. The military crossbow was a military equipment. Although its role was quite large in the war but its use was limited. Moreover, it was a tool for war but the lightning rod is for civilians. It is able to keep safety and protection of civilians. This point alone would offset it from the military crossbow. Moreover, there were many weapons used in the war. The main role of the military crossbow was to be used at middle-range. There could be more excellent weapons which could replace military

crossbow in this position. It was valuable as long as it was usable. If there was some other concept that could outdo it then the military crossbow would be deemed useless for production.

“But the lightning rod is different. It is also the first item in so many years that could be used to defend from thunder and lightning. However, they have underestimated its usage as they have rated it as a superior grade four-star item. If they understood the core principles of the lightning rod then it would not be excessive to rate it as a five-star item... Magnetic field...” Dudian whispered.

Moreover, it seemed that the Temple did assess the items not only about its own value but they also evaluated the current situation, environment and other factors in their judgment.

Dudian saw that the second page of the newspaper was dedicated to him!

“The statistics in the Temple have been renewed. Mr. Dean has accumulated enough points to reach senior architect status. From today he has been promoted to senior architect...” Dudian woke up as he read the content. He had forgotten about the point system of the Temple. It was enough to be promoted to senior architect level if he produced two four star items. Most of the architects who had been promoted to senior level had only produced one four star item and relied mainly on producing a large number of two-star items. Or they would rely on three-star items. Moreover, the Temple was rigid in terms of requirements. It didn’t matter how many points you had accumulated. Unless you have made one four-star item then there was no chance to be promoted to the

senior architect level.

Similarly, the intermediate architects should have at least a three-star invention.

In addition, to be a master in the Temple, the architect must produce two items which must be assessed as five-star items. Therefore the difference between masters and normal architects was like the difference between heaven and earth.

Nicholas who was standing behind Dudian looked at the newspaper. His eyes narrowed as he was shocked. Although he had little information about the Temple but he had business relations with a primary architect. Dudian seemed to be promoted to a senior architect. Moreover, his status was higher than an ordinary senior architects...

...

Church Mountain.

Eivissa's face had turned ugly as he held the newspaper in his hands. He hadn't inquired about the inventor of the item before the newspaper was out. Actually, he was too lazy to use his relationships to get information about the inventor. The item wasn't his so he didn't care much. Moreover, the item belonged to the lightning faction which was under his command so he thought he would get attention too. But he never thought that it would be 'this' person who would be the inventor!

How can it be?

How can a sixteen-year-old boy invent a lightning faction product which was a superior grade four-star item?!
He was from tailor family so it was alright for him to produce the new type of textile machine. It was alright for him to produce a military crossbow if his background (hunter) was taken into account. But an item which belonged to the lightning faction!?? What kind of person is he? A geek? A Devil?

Suddenly, master Eivissa thought about the boy who had first joined the temple. The kid had come to visit him and expressed his wish to be his assistant and participate in his project. But he had refused and didn't expect that today the latter would achieve such a success. Looking at his resume it was clear that there was no other architect who had attained senior architect level the way Dudian had done.

He bit his lips as he threw the newspaper onto the table.

...

Another castle in the Temple.

Master Arsen was eating breakfast. The butler handed him the daily newspaper to read. He was seventy years old this year and was aware that he didn't have much time left to live. So he would often remind himself to live every day as a happy day. In fact, there were few things that caused his resentment in the last few years. He didn't care much even if his inventions failed. In his long

life, he had so many failures that he had learned to laugh at it and pass it on. He also taught this mentality to his students as well.

However, the smile on his face stiffened the moment his eyes fell onto the first page of the newspaper.

There was no smile on his face as he had read the content of the news half way down. His mouth twitched for a moment. He took his coat, got up and left the castle.

...

Ryan family castle.

Old Fulin looked at the daily newspaper published by the Temple. His eyes shined as he looked at Sander who was next to him: “Do you see now? I knew that he wouldn’t do anything unless he grasped the situation in his hands. The remarks released by the Mellon consortium will have to be swallowed back. I assume by tomorrow the newspapers under Scott consortium will ridicule Mellon consortium. Can a man who spends all his time with a showgirl invent something such as this? All those remarks by them would be discredited.”

Sander laughed out as he heard his father’s joke: “So the most powerful counterattack is to fight back with your own strength!”

“It’s good that you understand it.” Old Fulin spoke in a polite tone.

Sander said with emotion: “It is hard to imagine that a 16-year-old civilian teenager would be in the line of sight of aristocrats every day! Moreover, he has been featured on the first page of the Temple’s newspaper! We shall rename this date as ‘Dean’s day!’”

Old Fulin’s eyes lit up: “Yes, this is a good opportunity. Contact Huasheng and other consortia. As long as the iron is hot we could use it to affect their newspapers. Let them publish in tomorrow’s newspapers today as ‘Dean’s day!’”

Chapter 317

Prayer day.

Three pastors from the Holy Church boarded the high platform to begin the ritual of worship. They began to recite the words of blessings from the book of light. Thousands of words were said in a manner that was poetry like that praised the God of Light. Almost everyone knew by heart the content since every household had a book of light and every year they heard the worship prayers.

Even in the old era days things such as this were happening as people gathered as crowds in support of their religion.

People had crossed their fingers as they clasped their hands. They carefully listened to the pious prayer.

In the castle.

Dudian stood in front of the windowsill as he looked at a crowd of people gathered in groups in the nearby square in front of the castle. These people were the residents of the nearby town who had come over for the prayer. He was aware that his reputation and status hasn't been passed to the ears of ordinary civilians yet. Today should be regarded as the second day of the last three months and the days that had the worst sales of the newspapers. However, his fame should already be spread throughout the top brass of the consortia.

After a day all these civilians and second rate nobles would be

aware of his name.

In many cases, money can't buy fame but fame can be converted into wealth, privileges, convenience and other things.

"Master, there is someone looking for you." Nicholas respectfully said as he came to stand behind Dudian.

Dudian nodded as he had already seen through the window that an aristocratic carriage had come over. The banner of Scott consortium was plugged on top of the carriage's compartment. It was a clear sign that Scott consortium had the best intelligence which was working more intensively in comparison to the other consortia.

He walked downstairs back into the hall. Dudian made a hand gesture for Nicholas to go out and meet the guest. Even if Scott was a large consortium right now they weren't able to personally drive him out to meet them at the door. It wasn't related to arrogance but majesty and etiquette.

After a few moments, Nicholas led the way while a young woman followed after him into the hall. She was slender and had expensive jewelry on her neck. She looked simple and elegant.

Dudian saw and identified her.

"Mr. Dean, it's me, Rosie. We meet again." The young woman saw the teenager sitting inside the hall. She took the initiative to

move forward to greet him.

Dudian smiled and slowly got up. He waited for her to reach out and he gripped her hand in a shallow manner and released it afterward: “Please have a seat.”

“You have treated me very kindly each time as a guest.” Rosie smiled and sat onto the seat opposite to him. Her eyes observed the hall and she looked back at Dudian: “I like the style of your castle. It has a minimalist atmosphere which is my favorite.”

Dudian smiled: “Since you like so much then move over to live here anytime you want. I have plenty of rooms.”

Rosie was polite but didn’t expect Dudian to be so hospitable. Rather than hospitality, it could be said that he was too offensive. She quickly responded with a smile: “Well if my husband allows then I will certainly move over. It’s just I’m afraid that my temper will cause a headache to you. I wouldn’t be able to die in peace if I interfered with your inventions.”

Dudian smiled: “Miss Rosie shouldn’t have come today to look at my castle. Did you?”

Rosie giggled: “There are two different reasons. But the main one is to congratulate you for promotion to senior architect. As far as I know you are the youngest senior architect in the last 150 years of history of the Temple. Tracy was the senior architect at age nine years ago. If not for her then you would be the record holder. Even if you don’t do anything for the rest of your life, your name will be

engraved with big letters in the Temple's history."

Dudian nodded as he was no stranger to the name Tracy. Although it has happened hundred and fifty years ago but the girl was a genuine child prodigy. She had produced two pieces of four-star items at the age of nine and was appointed as a senior architect. Unfortunately, she was suffering from a rare disease which couldn't be cured and had died at the age of ten.

Whenever her name was mentioned people would sigh. Some think that if the girl didn't die she would have become a master by the age of 20!

"Mr. Dean, would you be willing to sell your lightning rod to Scott consortium?" Rosie looked at Dudian.

Dudian pretended to be hesitant as he looked back at her.

Rosie's eyes lit up as she continued: "Scott consortium is willing to offer the price of a five-star item. Moreover, half the net profits from the new textile machine would be given to you too. If there is anything else that you would need then let me know and I'll do my best for you. We are old friends, aren't we?"

Dudian replied: "I've heard that your consortium and the Mellon consortium have been competing in the mineral industry in the recent times. I presume that your consortium has infiltrated deeply into Mellon?"

There was a trace of awakening in Rosie's eyes: "Oh, I almost forgot. The Mellon consortium had tried to frame you several times. Now as your reputation is this high then they would worry about your revenge. You can rest assured that our Scott consortium will support your to overcome the insidious ways used by the Mellon consortium to harm you. Directly they can't even touch your hair but they may use covert ways for an attack. I'll make sure that our consortia will pay high attention to the internal actions of Mellon against you. Moreover, we will send messages to inform you about any updates."

Dudian nodded slightly: "Alright, we will talk about the deal when I get the news."

Rosie was confused: "Mr. Dean, what do you mean?"

"Ms. Rosie is smart so you should have grasped the meaning behind my words." Dudian calmly said.

"Mr. Dean, don't you trust us? Do you mean that we have to wait until Mellon consortium makes a move?"

"I trust you, but business is business. We have to act according to the rules of business. The payment is made when the goods are delivered." Dudian faintly smiled: "Today the message of my promotion and invention will be known to all and Mellon consortium will act. If you provide effective news for three times then you get the deal. I'll sell the rights for the lightning rod even if I have to wait for the next year's rainy season. You can rest assured that I'll keep my word and won't be involved in talks with other consortia."

Rosie was startled as her face became stiff. She could barely laugh: “Mr. Dean if you sell the lightning rod to us now then we will begin to spread the information about it to the three areas beginning tomorrow. We will use this month to promote the role of the lightning rod and produce it. If we wait until the rainy season then I’m afraid…”

“I believe in the intelligence gathering capabilities of your consortium.” Dudian said.

Rosie wryly smiled as she saw that there wasn’t a place for further negotiations. She sighed: “Alright, I hope that Mr. Dean can keep your promise and decline the offers of other consortia.”

“I will.” Dudian smiled.

Rosie saw his smile and thought that it was not a practical deal. But she knew that she couldn’t anger Dudian or else she would be having a headache back at home. She thought for some time and slowly breathed. There was a trace of a smile on her face as she said: “I’ll believe in you, Mr. Dean. Since it is like this then I wish for a happy cooperation.” She stretched out her slender hand for a handshake.

Dudian lightly held her hand: “For the cooperation.”

Rosie continued as they loosened their hands: “I should have agreed last time for a four-star price. Because of this, I’m getting scolded back at home.” She looked back at Dudian.

Dudian calmly replied: “If you had agreed at that time then I assume you would have been scolded back then.”

Rosie sighed: “In the end, it’s my eyes that are not fit for the evaluation. Mr. Dean, don’t take offense as I’m not underestimating you, but I didn’t think that your abilities would be so amazing. ”

Dudian waved: “I don’t care about trivial things.”

Rosie smiled: “Mr. Dean I would like to pre-order your next invention for Scott consortium. No matter what you make we are willing to pay the price of a superior grade four-star item right now.”

Dudian saw the cunning move by the Scott consortium. They didn’t care much about money and deliberately used such an offer to get him signed with them. It was a business move which was more than money and wealth. It was about the face that they would get in the eyes of wealthy businessmen and the public.

“It is too low of a price.” Dudian shook his head and refused.

Rosie’s eyes lit up as she saw the determination with which Dudian refused the offer. It was a proof that there was a new idea for the invention and he was very confident about the result. She deliberately took a deep breath to make it look like she was thinking through his reply: “That being the case then we can increase the offer to a five-star item’s price. What do you think?”

“You seem to be willing to spend money.” Dudian couldn’t help but sigh. Five-star item meant millions of gold coins. It could support the whole slums for more than three decades. If the money was used for construction then the slums could be remade into the same degree as a residential district. Moreover, the Scott consortium was willing to pay such a big fee without knowing what the next invention would be.

This was the wealth that architects could earn!

This was the fame and influence that was brought to the word “genius.”

However, this money can be made only by the upper level of the commercial district. There was a serious imbalance of wealth within the giant wall. A casual businessman in the commercial district was an emperor in slums. However, it wasn’t possible to make money in the slums which population was made out of the cheap labor force. Moreover, the businessmen didn’t want to move into the slums. The fish would suffocate in stagnant waters.

“It’s still.” Dudian slowly shook his head: “too low.”

Rosie was confused.

Not enough?

Still too low?

She couldn't help but look at Dudian's eyes. Even with her restraint she couldn't help but reveal what was going in her heart. Does he want the price of a superior grade five-star item?

Dudian shrugged his shoulders as he naturally read through her: "I'll give you opportunity only this time only if you want to pre-order the invention. Pay me the price of a superior grade five-star item."

Rosie almost choked out blood. Superior grade five stars? Also only this time? She was going crazy and wanted to beat the kid's head. She was aware that the kid had invented three high-quality products so she controlled her anger. If it was someone else then she would not hesitate to chop off their head.

"You ..." Rosie swallowed back the unsightly words that were going to come out of her mouth. She calmed her mind and controlled her temper. She slowly continued: "You... The price you mentioned is too high. Don't be offended but the price is a bit... "

Dudian said: "Is it the official refusal by the representative?"

I'm refusing to become a madman! She wanted to shout out but there was a smile on her face: "It is not a refusal but the money involved is too much. It's not something that we can get."

"It seems that you wouldn't be able to afford it since your consortium is so poor." Dudian shrugged his shoulders: "The opportunity is gone so don't tell me that I didn't intend to sell it to

you.”

Rosie’s eyelids and mouth twitched at the same time. She couldn’t control the murderous intent so she bowed her head not to look at Dudian. She feared that she would spin out of control: “Mr. Dean, I’ll leave now. The next time I come over I’ll bring the news from Mellon consortium.”

“Take care! See the visitor.”

Nicholas who was standing close by approached immediately and left the hall with Rosie.

It wasn’t long before Rosie was gone that the representatives from the Huasheng consortium came over with lots of gifts.

Dudian allowed Nicholas to accept the expensive herbs and watches brought by them. He politely declined Huasheng consortium but didn’t directly refuse their offer and left a chance for future negotiations.

Huasheng consortium was very disappointed but played the same game as Rosie had done. They wanted to pre-order Dudian’s next invention. Dudian gave them the same price.

The person in charge heard the price and asked a second time to confirm that he hadn’t heard wrongly. He was stunned and had declined. Afterward, he bid farewell and left.

After the people from Huasheng consortium left the visitors from Krylov and Green consortium came over. In total five out of six consortia came to visit him. Although the Krylov consortium used to smear Dudian's reputation because he bailed out Sergei the problem wasn't as deep so that it couldn't be overcome. Their main aim was to come for an apology. They were aware that it would be impossible to buy the rights from Dudian so they didn't even go for negotiations.

Chapter 318

“The price of a superior grade five-star item?” The representative of the Green consortium almost bit off his tongue as he heard Dudian’s words. He couldn’t help but say: “Mr. Dean. Did I hear it wrong or you…?”

“That’s the price. You haven’t heard it wrong and this is a one-time opportunity. Will you buy or not?” Dudian’s patience has been exhausted and he got lazy after receiving messengers from several consortia. Making business wasn’t something that could be learned from the knowledge of the super-chip and wasn’t like practicing the flexibility of his left hand.

The representative of the Green consortium smiled wryly as he saw the intolerant expression on Dudian’s face: “Mr. Dean, you are asking for a very high price. I need to go back and report it to the consortium directors. I can’t decide on it on my own.”

“There are only two ways for you to reply.” Dudian was too lazy as he looked at Nicholas: “Send the Mr. off.”

“Yes, master.” Nicholas’s attitude was respectful and his face was calm. But in his heart, he was very shocked. Green consortium, Krylov consortium and the others which controlled the entire commercial district and mainstream economy of the outer wall were begging Dudian. These were the well-known super giants and anyone who could pull a hair from their legs would get endless joy. Now all of them were very humble as they talked with Dudian. Even a fool could see the influence and worth of Dudian.

“Mister.” Nicholas turned towards the representative as there was a regret in his heart. Nicholas understood that he has made a big mistake by trying to be clever with Dudian. If he had earned Dudian’s trust then he would be a prominent character in the future too.

The representative shook his head, sighed in regret and turned away.

Dudian ordered Nicholas to get the carriage prepared after this person left. He was going to go to the Temple to receive his own senior architect medal and while at it, he was planning to get some of the necessary materials.

…

Conference hall. Scott consortium.

More than a dozen figures were sitting on both sides of the table. The chief was an old man who was dressed in a black costume with golden embroidery. The unique man was Chai Rostov. He was a restrained old man with a majestic temperament and was the head of Rostov family. The Rostov family was the largest shareholder of Scott consortium and had an influence in the voting of decisions.

“Are you sure?” Chai stared at Rosie.

“I have repeatedly confirmed the price with him.” Rosie continued: “He even said that this price he gave to us was because

of the friendship between us. Moreover, he wasn't planning to give this opportunity once again."
"He is crazy!" A middle-aged man's face was red in anger: "A price of a superior grade five-star item? Friendship? It's craziness!"

"Too much exaggeration." Another old man sighed and shook his head.

An elegant lady next to the old man said: "If I'm not mistaken then his age is only sixteen years old. I really admire him as he was able to continuously produce three outstanding products. But he bears such an honor at such a low age. His foster parents are still living in the residential area. It's a pity that no one has taught him manners. I hope he won't be depressed when the time comes that he suffers a blow... "

"All kinds of geniuses will have their downfall." Another middle-aged man slowly spoke up.

Chai listened to everyone's opinion and slowly said: "Go and tell him that we will offer a normal price for a five-star item. The superior grade is impossible. It is the only opportunity that I'll give to him."

Rosie wryly smiled: "He will not agree, I understand him well. Moreover, I have tried but his attitude was absolute. I don't think he is deliberately playing a price game. "

Chai's mouth twitched: "It's alright then. You contact the people and get information about Mellon consortium's plan regarding Mr.

Dean. The next invention will wait for then. I assume he will give the same price to other consortia so no one will agree. Unless there is some crazy fellow out there."

"Alright, I'll work on it."

The others looked at each other but didn't continue to voice out their opinions. Although they have heard about Dudian's attitude from Rosie but the latter was a senior architect of the Temple of Elements. Moreover, his potential was extremely high. No one dared to talk too much. After all, although all of them were part of the consortium but they belonged to different families.

...

Temple of Elements.

Dudian ordered the coachman to directly drive the carriage to the Temple of Elements. The driver had plugged the banner of the Temple which made them access the vast majority of the Temple with ease.

They were unimpeded along the way as they weren't recognized. The moment they reached the hall Dudian took a mask and covered his face. He went into the Temple Hall and found an exchange point. After seven or eight minutes of selection, he found three things that he needed. Although the quality and effect were not up to his standard but he was going to cover it with weight.

Nowadays there were countless people checking him and there was a possibility that other consortia would send people to lurk around and investigate his movements. So he didn't want to go to the Dark church to buy these things. Although the quality of the materials would be much better from the Dark Church in comparison to the Temple, but his identity would be easily exposed. Moreover, he wouldn't be able to buy so much in quantity in the Dark Church, however with his identity as a senior architect and 'epoch' medal winner many doors were open to him.

"One hundred pounds for all three," Dudian told his order to the youth standing behind the counter.

The young man who heard the names of items that Dudian wanted to buy was stunned. He asked to confirm: "One hundred pounds?"

Dudian nodded: "I'll need them by tomorrow."

The youth was silent. Normally people bought these things in 'grams' and the masked architect wanted in 'pounds.'

"Sorry sire but these things are limited in inventory. If you want to buy a hundred pounds of each then you have to ask for your master for help. If you are buying for your teacher then please show the teacher's medal." The youth talked in a polite and tactful manner.

Dudian took out his own 'epoch' medal: "Does this count?"

The youth was startled. His eyes shrank as he was shocked: “The ‘epoch’ medal…this…this…” He loudly said in shock: “Are you Mr. Dean?”

Dudian was stunned because of his loud tone. He whispered: “Not so loud.”

The youth recovered and understood why Dudian was wearing a mask to cover his face. He laughed as his face reddened in embarrassment: “Sorry, sorry…I-I couldn’t control…Don’t mind me…I didn’t recognize you… I am sorry…”

“It’s all right. I am in a hurry so can you solve out the documents.” Dudian said.

Youth reacted and delivered the papers for the orders.

After a short while, everything was finished.

The youth put away the invoice which had ‘Dean’ inscribed on it. He knew that he wasn’t wrong about Dudian’s identity. There was only one person with the ‘epoch’ medal who was so young.

He carefully received the order for the goods: “Mr. Dean, it’s all settled now.”

Dudian nodded: “I’ll trouble you then. I have other things to do so goodbye.” He bid farewell, turned and left.

After leaving the hall Dudian returned to his own research room in the castle. He looked at the mailbox which had tons of letters: “Is there a letter for Dean?”

The Temple’s staff was surprised to see him: “Are you Mr. Dean? There are so many letters that they don’t fit into the mailbox. I’ve taken them out and have put them into another box for you.”

Dudian was startled. It seems that there were also other people who wrote letters to him. After all, he was now a celebrity. He said: “Is there an official letter from the Temple?”

“The Temple?” The staff member scratched his head: “I do not know.”

Dudian thought for a moment: “Give me the letters from this morning.”

“The ones from this morning up to present are still in the mailbox. I didn’t have enough time to clean it up.” The staff member took out a key and opened the mailbox. There were a lot of envelopes. He swept through at least hundreds of letters and bent over to check them one by one. He picked out two envelopes from the inside and gave the rest to Dudian: “This is all yours.”

Dudian nodded as he picked up the stack of envelopes. He was about to turn away when he thought of something. He took out a golden paper from his pocket and handed it to the staff member: “I’ll be troubling you. Please send the letters belonging to me to my

research room.”

“Thank you, you are way too polite.” The staff member was surprised as he thanked Dudian again and again.

Dudian met some architects as he went into the castle. These people were astonished to see Dudian holding onto a thick stack of letters. One of them asked: “Are you, Mr. Dean?”

Dudian felt that he was urgently in need of an assistant who could improve his work efficiency a lot. But it was hard to find such a candidate because of the trust problem. Barton and the other two were infected way too seriously by the radiation and weren’t meant to be part of the Temple in his plans.

“It’s me, I’m in a hurry so let’s talk the next time” Dudian kindly said.

The architects gave up on the idea of catching up to Dudian.

Dudian was about to open the door to his research room when Haisong went out from another room. The latter saw Dudian and was startled for a moment. There was a bit of embarrassment on his face. He came over and smiled: “Congratulations! I didn’t expect that you will be promoted to a senior architect so soon. Congrats. Congrats.”

Dudian smiled: “I believe you will have a breakthrough soon too. I’ll be waiting for the day you will become a senior architect.”

Haisong had tried to beat Dudian's spirit on his first day in here but now they were on totally two different levels.

A trace of hope flashed through Haisong's eyes as he heard Dudian's 'encouragement': "I will."

Dudian nodded slightly and pushed the door. He put the letters onto the ground.

Haisong paid attention to the stack of letters in Dudian's hands. His mouth twitched as he said: "again."

Dudian went through the letter to find the envelope send by the Temple. Although it was published in the newspaper that he was promoted to a senior architect but the Temple should have sent an official envelope. He found the envelope which had a golden cover. There was a logo of Silva covered by nine stars. IT was the official logo of the Temple. If other people were found copying this logo then the punishment would be very big.

The staff member brought a large box of letters which seemed to be sent by ordinary civilians.

Dudian was stunned as he saw the big box. There were at least thousands of letters inside.

He wryly smiled as he asked the staff member to put down the box. Dudian opened the envelope sent by the Temple. He skimmed through the content. It was written that he was promoted to a

senior architect.

Dudian closed the envelope but didn't put it on ground. He went to the castle where he was going to replace his own medal.

As Dudian went to change his new medal and an urgent message was passed to the Holy Church and the top level directors of the other consortia.

"What!"

"Fell?!"

Mount Er. Burong Family. Rudolph was shocked as the butler stood in front of him: "How could that be? It has many years but barbarians were never able to capture a fortress! How did they do it?"

"Yes, master." The butler bowed: "Today is the prayer day. It seems the barbarians were aware of the occurrence and took advantage of the opportunity to attack the fort. Now there is an emergency on the frontline. The military is sending a large number of soldiers to block the gap. The situation seems very dangerous."

Chapter 319

“Damn, these barbarian have become too cunning!” Rudolph’s face was gloomy: “Make sure to contact our informants in the military to see what their decision will be. I want to know what choice they will make. The barbarians should have made plans for a long time if they have broken into the fortress. Their aim shouldn’t be so simple. In addition, prepare a carriage immediately, I have to go to the consortium for a meeting.”

“Yes,” Butler replied.

Another room in the castle.

A bedroom which was more than a hundred square meters. The four-meter wide bed inside the room was decorated with pink mosquito nets. There was a servant by the bed with a stick. A man and a woman sat at the table near the bed. The woman had a huge paper card in her hand.

There was a law book in her other hand. She would stop to rest as she read the book.

…

Mel family.

A gorgeous office.

A dark red carpet spread to every corner of the room. There were pale gold curtains with butterfly designs on them covering the windows. The sun's rays that shined reflected the pattern of butterflies on the carpet. A light breeze would blow curtains from time to time. Above the room, there was a portrait of a famous actress once upon a time. But now it was replaced with a massive map. The map had a large square on it referring to the outline of the entire giant wall. The center of the map was colored in dark gray tone. There were four areas which seemed to look like sewage drains. They represented three areas and the inner wall. In addition to those areas, the garbage dump was drawn on the map too. In comparison to the other areas, garbage dump wasn't isolated.

You could vaguely able to see contours of various regions. There were small black spots with symbols marked on them in the periphery of this area. After this area, the rest of the region was marked in crimson color. That area was the wilderness.

There were thick lines outside the wilderness representing the giant wall. There were a large number of areas circled outside the giant wall. There were small numbers written on each area.

A slender girl with golden hair which fell onto her shoulders like a waterfall sat in the chair in front of the magnificent map. She had a different temperament in comparison to other aristocratic ladies. She seemed like a capable person. She was wearing a black skirt with dark red clothing on top.

Normally, her father would be sitting in this position but right now she was occupying the seat.

She was Mel family's Miss Sarah.

"Miss, the barbarians have broken through the fort. The military should be encircling the area, right?" A maid with big eyes standing next to her whispered. Her dress was different from ordinary maids as her clothing seemed more neutral. She had short brown hair. At first glance, you would mistake her for a slim handsome boy. However, her big bulging chest betrayed her sex.

Sarah looked at the small map in front of her: "Although military can focus their forces to push them back but then barbarians would take the opportunity to attack other fortresses. It is a tactic by the barbarians."

"Barbarians shouldn't have the knowledge about the environment. How can they be so crafty?" The maid was puzzled.

Sarah slowly said: "Attacking others is in the human nature. We are like beasts who are born to hunt. In the long term if they don't grow and increase then they will be eliminated from the map. Moreover, they have taken advantage of the prayer day for the invasion. It seems they have smart and capable leaders. I'm afraid the war will be a long one. Damned soldiers, it was just a fortress!"

The maid saw the angry expression on Sarah's face. She didn't have fear but was worried for Sarah: "If the war gets protracted, then the losses of our consortium will be too big. The Red Maple Mountains are behind the fortress. The barbarians are bound to invade the mountains. The terrain over there is such that it is very

easy to defend but hard to attack. It is the first stronghold invaded by the barbarians. If the war is delayed the foundation of our consortium will be shaken. We will lose our foothold in competition with the Scott consortium."

Sarah looked at her and smiled: "All these years that you have spent by my side haven't gone to waste. You have good eyes!"

The maid was startled: "It's because the young lady has nurtured me well."

Sarah smiled: "Then let's take this opportunity to test your knowledge. So what do you think we should do?"

The maid looked back at her: "Miss you have said that the mining industry is the battleground between our consortium and the Scott consortium. Moreover, the Red Maple Mountains are the financial foundation of the Mellon consortium so we can't lose it. The only way is that we can temporarily load the military with war supplies and share their burdens. This way they can drive out the barbarians and end the war. We can take our time to collect the debts. However, even if the military doesn't pay it back then they will owe us. It would be much more convenient for our consortium if military owed us for services rendered."

Sarah smiled: "You little devil! The idea is pretty good. "

The maid's eyes lit up: "It because of your teachings."

Sarah took back her eyes: “The idea is good but not feasible. The other consortia and the military can think of this method too. So it won’t be effective. Moreover, you are underestimating the military’s background and heritage. If they really want to then they can expel these barbarians in an instant.”

The maid was startled: “that … … Why then doesn’t the military act? The military’s reputation will be lost if the barbarians swept so… ”

“Lisa, you are still not experienced enough.” Sarah gently tapped her fingers on the table: “Every consortium including the military are enemies. You better remember this! If we are born in this world then the confrontation is inevitable. So unless it is a critical moment we won’t expose our most valuable cards. Fame and reputation? If we are not willing then the eyes of the masses won’t see.”

Lisa is the girl from the Meishan orphanage.

The maid called Lisa was startled. She bowed: “Miss you are smart!”

“At least I’m better than my brother.” Sarah’s eyes lit up: “He only knows how to follow the Holy Church. What’s the use of being a Knight of Light? A lackey!”

Lisa’s face slightly changed as she didn’t dare to say anything.

“Make the preparation. I can’t wait to attend the meeting and see the discussion about how they are going to solve the problem of

mines in the Red Maple Mountains. If uncle Rudolph can't come up with proper solutions then the Burong family will lose a lot because of those mines. And if they lose at this stage how can they stand on equal footing with our Mel family? If not because of Rudolph's short-sightedness then the most talented architect in the history of the Temple, Dean, would have belonged to our consortium now. We would have already unified the economic powers within the three regions. Sleazy guy!" Sarah said in a cold tone.

Lisa nodded as she sneaked a glance at her but she didn't say anything.

...

Temple of Elements.

Dudian showed his identity medal and went through a bunch of procedures. Finally, he received his own senior architect medal. In addition, he was given 50,000 gold coins as a gift. Although the money wasn't much for him as he could get more than 500,000 gold coins from the sales of the lightning rod. But as a bonus, it was a very good sum of money.

In addition to the bonus, he was given a new place in a different castle. He would have a separate floor for research. Moreover, the floors upstairs and downstairs wouldn't be occupied by anyone else so there wouldn't be anyone to interfere with him.

Dudian hired a few staff members from the Temple and led them

back to his room. They packed the letters from the ground and packed up the other tools that belonged to him. As they went out the people saw Dudian's new medal. They knew that he was moving out. All of them looked at him with envy. Few of them wanted to take this opportunity to pave a way for a future relationship, but Dudian politely declined.

Dudian came to the 13th castle in accordance with the instructions. He reported at the door and saw a similar figure who noticed him too. Both of them were startled. The person had a stiff smile on her face: "I've heard that you have advanced to senior architect. Congratulations!"

Tiffany didn't expect to meet the boy so soon. The last time she failed when both of them pleaded in court. The crossbow invented by the boy was criticized by her, but it had won very high awards. It wasn't just better than her own works, but even her teacher's three-star snake crossbow was inferior to boy's invention. This had deeply affected her but the most profound reflection that she got from the boy was his word about a tribute to the teacher.

She had painstakingly researched her new invention and was in a stage where she made the finishing touches. However, she once more heard the uproar produced by the outstanding invention of the boy. Moreover, it was a cross-faction invention which made him into a rare double-faction architect. In addition, the boy had reached the status of senior architect and was on equal footing with her. Even more unexpectedly the latter was assigned to the same castle with her!

Dudian didn't expect to meet the woman in this castle. Actually,

the matter between them which had happened wasn't taken into his heart. It was like the wind which had passed already: "I didn't think that you would be here. It seems that we will be neighbors in the future."

Tiffany's heart loosened as she saw the relaxed smile on Dudian's face. She didn't know how to respond if Dudian held anger against her because of the original problem between them. Tiffany smiled as the problem hanging in her heart fell: "I was at the ninth castle but was moved to here. I didn't think that I would meet you. If you need any help in the future then let me know."

"Thanks." Dudian smiled.

Senior architects were people with lots of connections so it was better to have them as friends rather than enemies.

Tiffany saw the huge baggage carried by the staff of the Temple who stood behind Dudian: "You have just come over so which building have you been assigned to? I'll take you over."

"Don't worry, I'll find it myself. You are busy. "

"It's alright," Tiffany replied.

Dudian no longer refused and told her the name of the building. Tiffany helped her with the handling of the formalities and got the keys to the building.

Dudian bid farewell to Tiffany and checked the various floors of the building. There was some scattered furniture. He was too lazy to organize them as he saw this place as a temporary foothold. His goal was much higher!

…

At dusk.

Dudian went to the back of his castle when he saw Ryan family's servant waiting for him in the castle. The person explained things to Dudian which made him rush out of his castle to Ryan family.

Two hours later Dudian appeared on the second floor of the Ryan castle. Old Fulin and Sander were present in the study room.

"I have just heard." Old Fulin spoke in a low tone: "Barbarians have broken through a fort. Their aim seems to be the Red Maple Mountains behind the fortress. If the military doesn't act fast enough then they will be able to enter the Red Maple Mountains. If they are slow to react then it will be a long war."

Dudian's eyes lit up as he contemplated: "Which Lord owns the Red Maple Mountains? Which consortium are they affiliated with?"

"It is the site of Mellon consortium." Old Fulin replied.

Dudian was startled.

Old Fulin and Sander stood quietly.

Dudian raised his head after a moment: “How much do you know about barbarians?”

Old Fulin asked: “Do you want to help? It’s not something that we can intervene with. The barbarians are fierce and they are led by a brave and skilled military advisor. Moreover, there are blood barbarians in their rows. They are as fierce as hunters. Especially when they are mad their strength and powers are greatly enhanced.”

Dudian’s eyes lit up as he stood silent.

He stood up after a moment: “Mellon will be checking to see our recent actions. You don’t get involved in anything as I’ll handle this matter.”

Old Fulin looked at him: “We will rely on you.”

Dudian nodded slightly as he put on his coat. Old Fulin wanted to go downstairs but was stopped by Dudian: “Let Master Sander send me off. You should rest.”

Old Fulin hesitated but nodded his head at the end.

Dudian commanded the coachman to go to a nearby hotel after

leaving the Ryan family: “It’s late we should sleep here.” He rented two rooms. One for himself and the second for the coachman.

Dudian slowly opened the window and went out as the night got darker.

Chapter 320

It was curfew time outside. Dudian flew forward along the street as he relied on his keen senses to avoid the soldiers in advance. He came out to the wilderness and passed the whole line. It didn't take long for him to reach the small town on the outskirts. It was a dilapidated town with soldiers who had meager salaries. Some of them dozed off while the others chatted at the entrance of the town. Most of them were lazy to control the area because of their duties on the prayer day.

Dudian was wearing a mask as he reached the butcher. He was still going to buy an ironback pig. The middle-aged butcher had long recognized Dudian. He gave the ironback pig which was slaughtered in advance to the Dudian. Butcher's youngest son who hadn't slept came out and saw Dudian. He almost called out in fear but was scolded by the butcher. His wife took back the child to the room. Only whispers came out from the room which naturally ordinary people couldn't hear, but they couldn't escape Dudian's ears.

Dudian heard that butcher's wife wasn't talking about him so he was assured. He took the ironback pig and went away. The butcher was more assured that he shouldn't expose the transaction between them. If this matter was spread out the one who would suffer would be him.

Dudian went along the river outside the town. He didn't see any patrolling soldiers. He used the same smuggling route to get into radiation zone. However this time there were more people at the border. He looked for some time to find a gap to pass through.

After passing the barrier Dudian went to the old building.

Dudian saw splitty was sleeping on its tummy. However, the moment he entered the basement it stood up. Its scythe-like front limbs touched the tungsten steel. The tinkling sounds echoed from the iron pillars as if countless swords were hitting and scratching each other.

Dudian cut down the ironback pig into many parts and threw it inside as usual.
It took moments for splitty to finish eating. It looked down as if it was aware that there will be no more food for tonight.

Dudian was happy to see splitty act obedient. Moreover, he wasn't using the blood from the newborn splitter that he had killed back then. It seems that splitty wasn't relying on the smell and knew that Dudian wasn't a stranger to it. Even if Dudian sat close to the cage it didn't have any intent to attack him.

Dudian smiled as he sat close to the cage. Although he was aware that splitty didn't understand him he opened his heart to it as he talked nonstop.

In the desolate night in this broken house in the barren mountain one beast and a one person whispered.

Dudian left the basement after half an hour. He went in direction of the 'death passage.'

There was a fortress that was the small headquarter for the Knights of Light that were in the middle of the mountain and the ‘death passage’. It was meant to prevent the hunters from going into the city without permission. However, it was very difficult to stop hunters like him who had special latent abilities.

Dudian stopped far away from the fortress. He took out the telescope he made himself to observe. Everything seemed as usual and it was like the destruction caused by splitty was nothing but an illusion.

He hesitated for a while but at the end gave up the idea of taking an extra risk. He knew that if he wanted to move freely then he had to have a better background in the Holy Church.

Dudian went to another fortress as he went back. His direction was the Fort King which was occupied by the barbarians.

He spent more than an hour in a hurry to arrive close to the fortress. Along the way, he met some barbarian teams which were marching in the direction of the fortress.

Dudian didn’t attack. He couldn’t find information about the barbarians from the library. He knew very little about the barbarians and most of his knowledge was through gossip. In addition, he didn’t know the language spoken by the barbarians. That’s why even if he caught one and tortured him he wouldn’t get any results. If he had caught a barbarian with a high position and status then maybe they would be able to speak the language used in

the residential area. However kidnapping such a person would be a problem.

Dudian came to a stop ten kilometers away from the Fort King. He smelled the thick smell of blood in the area. It was not difficult to see how many people had died during the war in the day. He sneaked a bit more and saw that one of the tall walls that were meant as a barrier was broken down. There were many hazy black silhouettes that walked along the gap into the fortress.

Dudian didn't expect that the military hasn't snatched back the fortress. Did they give up on the fort?

"Behind the fortress were the plains, which lead to living area of the commercial district. Some nobles and wealthy businessmen lived there. The military should have their final defenses over there. Once that defense wall is broken then the barbarians will flock into the area as wolves. The casualties would be difficult to count in that case." Dudian's eyes lit up. Although he was aware of military's background and he knew that they should be able to hold on in the case of such an attack, but underestimating the barbarians would not be a smart move either. The first to be affected by the war would be the town at the forefront. Although it is an economically backward town in the commercial area but its population should be in tens of thousands. If the military doesn't make a counterattack then it means that they have abandoned all those people.

Dudian's eyes narrowed as he quietly turned to leave.

Dudian returned back to the hotel in the early morning. He called

out to the coachman and went directly to the Temple.

Dudian went back to the hall to buy materials. He asked the youth behind the desk: “How much in gold do I have to pay if I don’t want to use points?”

The youth from previous time recognized Dudian even though he was still using a mask. He spoke in a polite tone: “We will give you it at discount rate. Only ten gold coins.”

Dudian said: “Give me two bottles.”

The youth smiled: “You are able to get only one thousand drops at a time. That is one bottle.”

Dudian’s brows wrinkled: “Alright, one bottle then.”

The youth thought that Dudian was acting as if he was buying a wine. He knew that Dudian didn’t have a shortage of money as he had recently come up with a new invention: “Alright, please fill in the form and I’ll make the application for you.”

Dudian filled the form, paid the money and left.

Dudian came to the 13th castle. He got off the cage and ordered the coachman to wait for him. The guard stopped him: “Hello, are you Mr. Dean?”

Dudian nodded.

“This invitation letter is meant for you.” The guard handed out the letter in a respectful manner.

Dudian looked at the envelope. He opened it and pulled out the letter from inside. He skimmed through the content. It was an internal letter and invited him to participate in a seminar after three days. The invitation was sent in advance to make sure that the architects would have a buffer time to make extra time for the seminar.

Dudian took another large bag of letters from the ground and slowly went into the castle.

…

Study room on the second floor of the Ryan castle.

The figures stopped before the door of the study room. One of them knocked on the door.

Sander opened the door and invited them inside. Sander was personally responsible for Old Fulin as his legs weren’t healthy anymore as his age was getting older.

“Come.” Sander smiled as he saw the three people.

All three of them were flattered: “Greetings young patriarch.”

Old Fulin sat in the rattan chair as he looked at the three: “Your friend, Dean has sent us a letter. He now lacks help. You guys have been here for a long time and have grasped the basic rituals, rules, preferences, living style, and clothing of the aristocracy. Now, Dean needs you. I hope you will be useful to him.”

Old Fulin smiled: “Go on, good luck.”

“Yes.” Barton and the other two bowed.

The trio left the study room and used the Ryan family’s carriage to leave for Dudian’s castle. All three of them were excited. Barton spoke in a low voice: “Finally, we are able to work with Dean.”

“Well.” Joseph grinned from ear to ear: “But we can’t call him Dean anymore.”

“Ah, we should call him Mr. Dean or young master. I can’t think how we would end up without his help. Most probably our lives would be no different than a pig’s if we had taken a different route.” Kroen’s eyes lit up.

Barton smiled: “You are wrong... The pigs would have much more to eat than we would.”

Joseph laughed: “Dean...oh no... We should call him Lord. He had said that he would take us to do some big business. Now he is a

senior architect at the Temple of Elements. According to daily reports, he is an as bright character as a gem. We really haven't made the wrong choice. Our future is going to be good."

Kroen smiled: "Don't forget the reason young master has taken us in. The first is that he trusts us and the second thing is that we are clean. You remember the things from the past... If we have an error then we may..."

Barton spoke in a serious tone: "If exposed we will be arrested or even executed. We can't involve young master in that case."

Joseph and Kroen patted his shoulders. Kroen said: "Look what you are talking out. Are we kind of people who will sell out our brothers?"

Barton's expression softened: "I'm aware of you guys..."

"Well." Joseph continued: "We should be careful. He is a rising star and other consortia's eyes are on him."

...

"Master, three people have come to see you," Nicholas reported.

Dudian closed an envelope: "Let them in."

"Yes." Nicholas turned away. After a moment he returned back

with Barton and the other two.

Dudian stopped looking at the letter and looked up at the trio. It has been a long time that he had seen them. They were looking totally different to their cowardly looks from the past. At a first glance, it would be very difficult to think that they had come out from the slums. However, if you looked carefully you could see their defects. Barton had pimples at his neck which were caused by radiation. Kroen's left arm has grown up to his elbow and it was hidden under his sleeves.

Dudian knew that Nicholas should have noticed all these points. He calmly said to the trio: "Long time no see. Sit down."

Trio noted down Dudian's temperament. Barton called out: "De...Young master. What would you want us to do?"

Dudian didn't correct his call. He saw that they had grown a lot and their characters were more cautious. They didn't recklessly expose each other's relationship: "Barton, do you believe in the Holy Church?"

Barton was startled. He didn't understand why Dudian asked this question. He glanced at Nicholas and honestly said: "I have my doubts..."

Dudian smiled as he heard his answer. Nicholas also smiled as he curiously looked at Dudian: "From now own you are a firm believer of the Holy Church."

“Ah?” Barton blinked his eyes.

Dudian smiled: “You will enter the Holy Church as a Knight of Light.”

Barton spoke in an embarrassed tone: “Master, I would love to but they won’t accept me…I… ”

“That’s my problem.” Dudian smiled: “You are only responsible for entering the Holy Church and making an allegiance to the system.”

Barton realized: “Master, do you want me to be an insider?”

Dudian shook his head: “No, just do what I say and nothing else. You will not know me again for a time. ”

Barton was at a loss. He seemed to understand but was perplexed at the same time. He hesitated as he wanted to ask for more details but he held back: “Alright.”

Dudian looked at Joseph: “Do you want to be a mighty general?”

Joseph was stunned: “Master, do you want me to enter the military?”

“Yes.” Dudian laughed: “You should forget about me like Barton and have good results in the military. You should concentrate on

being a good general. ”

Both of them glanced at each other in a loss. They nodded: “Alright.”

Dudian looked at Kroen: “Follow me.”

Kroen nodded.

Chapter 321

“This is a gift for you but you will be on your own later on.” Dudian waved his hand and Nicholas handed out three small porcelain bottles to him. He pushed them over the table towards Barton and the other two: “This is a great opportunity for you all.”

The trio took the bottles. Although they were no aware of its content but still stood up and earnestly thanked him.

Dudian nodded slightly as he saw the improvement they had after being taught by Old Fulin: “Go and get prepared. Butler, show them the way.”

“Yes,” Nicholas replied.

The trio followed after Nicholas as they took the small bottles with themselves.

Nicholas brought them to a room on the second floor. They looked at the small bottles in their hands after the door was closed. Barton checked it against the light and saw a light green liquid inside the bottle. He was startled: “Is this fountain of life?”

Joseph’s eyes moistened as he clenched the small bottle.

Kroen opened the cap and sniffed: “It should be. I had inquired about ‘fountain of life’ earlier on and the rumor is that it is a holy spring that could wash all the dirt, diseases and plague from the

body. It can cure almost everything and purify the radiation value of the body. Young master wanted for both of you to join Holy Church and military. You wouldn't be able to pass the physical examination with the current state of your bodies. He should have given this to us to improve the physical condition of our bodies."

Joseph's surprised face turned calm. He slowly said: "No matter what I will give my all to help Dean in the future."

Kroen smiled: "I've heard that for normal people like us we have to use a drop a day for about one month or so to significantly eliminate the radiation value. If we use two drops a day then the effect would be more obvious. But we can't be greedy and drink a mouthful, or not only there won't be an effect instead it would cause harm to the body. It may even lead to death in such a situation."

Joseph shook the small bottle: "There should be around hundred drops inside. It is enough to improve our constitution. "

Barton took a deep breath: "Afterwards all three of us will have to follow separate ways but wherever we end up our hearts will be together forever!"

"Yes!" Joseph nodded.

"Yes!" Kroen said in a prideful tone.

...

The next day.

Dudian called out Barton and took him away.

“I am going to take you somewhere today.” Dudian sat firmly in the carriage and looked at Barton.

Barton had taken the fountain of life yesterday. He had seen the dark brown patches in his chest. It seems the accumulated radiation was being extracted. He had changed his dress and combed his hair neatly. He had brown hair and dark black eyes. Barton was a smart kid. Although he was not handsome but he had characteristics which made him unforgettable.

“Where are we going?” Barton asked.

Dudian smiled: “I had adopted you as a friend but now it’s time to get your own family!”

Barton immediately reacted as he was not the stupid kid from before: “Do you want me to be part of another family?”

“Yes,” Dudian nodded.

Barton slightly smiled: “You know that I will never feel any other affection towards my biological parents but hatred!”

Dudian's eyes lit up as he patted his shoulder: "If you want something in this world to belong to you then you have to fight for it, including your family."

Barton was silent.

The carriage traveled through the suburbs and came to a small town.

"Master, we are here." The coachman spoke out.

Dudian got off the carriage and looked at the small manor. It was dilapidated but in this small town, it could be regarded as a reputable family's house. The lawn was shabby as dead yellow grasses were everywhere. A look was enough to confirm that there was no gardener to take care of it.

Dudian came to the manor and waved his hand towards the coachman.

The driver approached in haste and shouted: "Anyone at home?" After two calls the door of the manor opened. An old woman with gray hair using crutches came out. She was wearing glasses as she looked at Dudian. Her eyes brightened as she saw the gold pattern on Dudian's clothing. She warmly said: "Hi, how are you?"

Dudian opened the fence of the manor and greeted the old woman. He said: "Old lady, where is your child?"

The old woman replied: “In the house. It is cold so they are all inside the house.”

“I’m here to visit them,” Dudian said.

“Come, please come in.” The old man politely invited him.

The coachman stopped near the fence as Dudian followed her into the house. Barton followed behind Dudian. He realized that it will be his new home.

The room was spacious but old. In the center of the hall, a huge portrait hung on the wall. It was a picture of a heroic youth in a knight’s armor.

“This is my grandfather.” There was a trace of pride in old woman’s eyes as she looked at the picture.

Dudian smiled: “Isn’t Lowe in here?” His voice was peaceful but had very strong penetrating power. A chunky middle-aged man rushed out from another room. His face was covered in a beard and he was dressed in dusty suede. The traces of sewing could be seen at the corners of his clothing. The man’s eyes lit up as he saw Dudian. He respectfully said: “Mr. Dean. Welcome! Please have a sit.”

Dudian said in a cold tone: “It is so cold today and you let your mother come out to open the door?”

The chunky man turned his head towards his mother: “Mother, you should go back. Go, go!”

The old woman replied: “Alright. Be polite son.” She was pushed away from the hall by the Lowe.

Dudian looked around. The walls were ash gray and the old bell that was hung inside had stopped swinging long ago. Because of lack of repairs, most of the things were full of dust.

The chunky man saw that Dudian was looking around. He pulled a chair and wiped with his sleeve. He warmly said: “Mr. Dean, please sit.”

Dudian didn’t reply to him and pulled over the chair: “You ancestor has been a hero who has left so many things. But generation after generation everything was sold off and spent! Unsightly!”

The chunky man was embarrassed and laughed but didn’t dare to answer.

Dudian saw that the man’s self-esteem has been broken a long time ago. He pointed at Barton: “This is who I was talking about. You will transfer him here as your son and he will inherit your last name.”

The chunky man looked at Barton and saw the traces of deformation. He was in a dilemma: “Mr. Dean, I have promised

you. But to pay for the legal responsibilities and fees…My income… The kid should be from slums…This…”

Dudian took out a stack of gold notes from his pocket. He pulled ten of them. Each of them was worth hundred gold coins and overall they would be one thousand gold coins in total: “This is the money. Don’t forget it’s not one time but an annual fee. Do you understand me?”

Chunky man’s eyes lit up as he saw the gold notes. He was more excited as he heard that it was just a yearly fee for helping out Barton: “I understand…I understand every word that you say. Not to mention him but I would be willing to adopt hundred more…Ha ha… Mr. Dean, you are generous…”

Dudian raised his hand to interrupt him: “But don’t forget that if you do something that shouldn’t be done then don’t forget that your end won’t be fruitful.”

The chunky man replied: “I can guarantee that I’m tight-lipped. I will never leak a sentence! ”

Dudian looked at Barton: “From today on you will have his last name. You will be called Barton Hull. After a month I will come to find you and we will go with you to participate in assessment for knights.”

Barton looked at the ugly middle-aged man. He didn’t think that he will be “his father”. He looked back at Dudian: “Yes.”

Dudian nodded, got up and left the hall.

“Mr. Dean, you should sit for a while …” The chunky man’s voice echoed out.

Dudian didn’t turn back his head but left the manor and got on the carriage.

Dudian took Joseph after returning to the castle. He took him to another family. This family’s ancestor was a war hero. Although he wasn’t a well-known person back in his days but he had died on the battlefield. The ancestor was an excellent soldier who had risen up to lieutenant rank. Now only the ancestral property was left. The flag of the family hung in the center of the hall. Servants cleaned the manor every day, so although the house had faded but it still looked clean.

In comparison to the previous Hull family, this one had character.

Dudian had personally selected the family. Naturally, he had his own reasons to place Barton in Hull family and Joseph in here.

After going back Dudian called Kroen. The reason Kroen wasn’t given to adoption was because of his arm deformity. It would be very difficult to achieve something with a single arm if he was sent away.

“This is for you.” Dudian took out a stack of gold notes and gave

to Kroen. In totally they would be valued more than thousands of gold coins: “Create an intelligence network. If you don’t understand anything then you are free to ask me anytime.”

Kroen’s eyes shined as he swallowed his saliva: “Master, it’s too much.”

“The purpose of the money is to buy people,” Dudian replied.

Kroen put away the money: “I will carefully select people.”

Dudian waved him off.

…

Two days later.

Dudian, as usual, went to the Temple. He made another order of hundred pounds of material. He was about to return back to his castle when he remembered the invitation letter he had received. He went back to the 13th castle.

After he got off the carriage Dudian ran into an architect: “Are others in here?”

The architect in front of the castle recognized Dudian: “The others have come since long ago.”

Dudian nodded.

Both of them went to the top floor of the main building. Dudian was able to hear the laughter which came from the conference room. He walked past and knocked on the door.

The door was opened by a middle-aged architect. He looked at Dudian in a puzzled manner: “Are you the one who has won the ‘epoch’ medal?”

Dudian smiled and nodded.

“Please come in.” The middle-aged architect smiled as he saw Dudian admit.

The argument in the meeting room stopped as they heard the middle-aged architect. Dudian saw seven or eight people in the conference room. Tiffany was also present.

Dudian looked at the crowd: “Dean greets the predecessors.”

“You are way too polite. We don’t have successor or predecessors in here. Only talent counts. The age is not part of the assessment.” A black haired old man laughed.

Dudian looked at the black haired man. He found that the man’s face looked Asian. There was a bit of warm intimacy towards the man as most of the people within the giant wall were westerners. Rarely would he meet people who looked Asian.

Tiffany waved at Dudian: “Come over sit by my side.”

“Come and sit with me.”

“There is a free place here too.”

Dudian smiled and declined the other. He sat down next to Tiffany: “I heard that today there will be a seminar. It’s my first time so please help me out with the rules that I have to follow which I’m not familiar with.”

“It’s a small matter. Everyone was like you the first time.” The middle-aged man sitting on Dudian’s left laughed.

“Humpf!” A middle-aged man with a crooked nose sitting across the table snorted: “I thought we are here to talk about inventions and research. If it’s not something like that then I’m leaving right now!”

Chapter 322

Faces of other people reddened in embarrassment as they heard the crooked nosed middle-aged man's words. Tiffany looked at the man and whispered to Dudian: "He is Gustavo. Don't be offended it's just his character is so."

Dudian smiled in return. He thought that it was actually a very good character with a simple disposition which was normal for a scientist.

"Since everyone is here let's begin the seminar." An old man around sixty years old wearing a red cotton jacket called out.

The attendees turned serious after his words.

"We will continue to talk about plants this seminar too. The last time we discussed blueji. This time we will focus on 'cassia' which is the fifth ranked in toxicity within thorny awns. I'll hand out basic information regarding this toxic plant. After you get familiar with it, you can express your opinions." There was a pile of documents in old man's hand which he distributed down.

Dudian received his share. He was surprised as this 'thorny awn' was very familiar to him. Actually recently when he was studying about plants through the super chip he had learned about plants which were located in north and northeast of China. The former name of the plant was known as Xanthium and it could be seen only in the north of the China.

“If there is Xanthium in the giant wall then its location is in the former lands of Russia which is close to the northeast of China …” Dudian’s eyes lit up.

Tiffany was the first to speak: “‘Cassia’ contains toxins but as far as I know there was a report from a remote area of the residential area that a doctor used it to treat patients. His child has brought back cassia’s thorn and he had mistakenly put into the drug. However, the patient wasn’t poisoned after taking the drug but didn’t need treatment for leprosy for many years.”

“So effective?” a 50-year-old architect said in surprise.

Dudian nodded as he was aware that use of Xanthium was an efficient way in the treatment of leprosy. Although the plant is toxic but there are other economic values to it. Its positive merits outweighed its negative side-effects.

“If small amounts of its poison are used then it could be a cure for dizziness, nausea, abdominal pain… Moreover, it may be used in the war too. Especially against the barbarians. We can dry them and use the dried powder to poison a large area!” The crooked nose man’s voice echoed slowly.

Dudian was quite moved as he heard the man’s opinion.

The old man who was wearing red jacket clapped: “Good idea. Even if there is a lack of wind then we can use windmills to enlarge the effect of this method.”

Windmill was the latest invention from an architect from the wood faction. It was a four-star item and the inventor was a master from the wood faction.

Dudian nodded but knew that using cocklebur (Xanthium) powder in the war wasn't feasible. First of all, a large amount of time had to be spent to get enough powder for use. The second problem was the range. These two points were key to the war. Moreover, in this case, those would be the core factors which would affect the battle. Usage of cocklebur powder seemed like a good idea, but its effect would be very negligible in actual practice.

Tiffany shook her head: "The cassia's powder would be difficult to control within the battlefield. If it's too small then the wind can push it back. If the particles are larger, then the drifting distance would be reduced. In that case, the enemy will arrive close to our forces. In melee combat, the powder will hurt our own forces."

Her teacher was good at military inventions. Moreover, she was also majoring in this area. So she was well aware of the 'range' problem in wars. That's why she replied the moment she heard the crooked nosed man's opinion.

The other architects nodded in agreement as they heard Tiffany's words.

"Yes, it is too risky to use powder to fight the enemy."

"Not feasible."

Gustavo added after he heard everyone's opinion: "What if we mix the powder with the water? The water isn't affected by the wind. Is it?"

The old man wearing red jacket spoke up: "Yes! Ah, the powder is too light but if we mix it with water and put it into packages then it would be a miraculous weapon on the battlefield. "

"This is a good idea!"

"Geez! If we use this method then wouldn't be easy to kill the barbarians in the war? "

Tiffany thought that there was something wrong with that method too but she couldn't find out the exact problem. She remembered the boy sitting close to her. She turned towards Dudian. The others looked at him too. But his background was too shallow at this point so they didn't expect much.

She whispered: "Dean what do you think? Do you have any ideas?"

Her voice was low but everyone's gaze was attracted towards the teenager.

Dudian wanted to listen to their ideas and hoped to stimulate the inspiration of others. He didn't think that Tiffany would suddenly push him to the front. He regretted in his head as he sighed. However the next moment there was a smile on his face: "I was

inspired by the opinions of the predecessors and I would like to speak up my opinion too. I hope you won't make fun of me."

"Haha! You are way too polite. The wood elements are too profound and nobody in here dares to claim that they know everything. There won't be any harm in listening to you." The old man wearing the red jacket laughed.

"Yes." The other's confirmed his statement.

Dudian nodded: "I think we can assess the value of cassia from three different perspectives. The first is the economic field. The fiber of its stems can be used to make sacks, ropes and so on. Essential oils can be extracted from its seeds which can replace the wood oil (check Wikipedia). Moreover, it can be used as raw material for many high-grade spices. The other things can be found out after intensive research. The second field could be its medicinal value. Tiffany previously said the report about it being a treatment for leprosy. Moreover, it is undeniable that this thing contains toxins. If an in-depth study is made then I believe its effects won't be limited to just leprosy but also to many other diseases."

"The third field is its usage in war. Whether it's used directly as a weapon or using the first two perspectives to stimulate the war. So it has big effects."

Dudian talked in one breath and looked around the crowd.

The conference room was silent.

In addition to his lengthy story, the people had delved into deep thoughts after his words.

The old man wearing the red jacket was the first to recover. He clapped: “Good!”

The other architects reacted too. They accompanied the old man as they cheered together. Some of them looked at the teenager with a trace of fear in their eyes. They admired the past achievements of Dudian. In addition, they knew that there was a difference in mentality with the teenager. The boy was smart and had strong co-ordination. He could see many things which they were blind towards.

Some of them in the conference room were immersed in this road of research for decades. They were aware that they have been stuck in the same position for a long time. The reason wasn’t lack of knowledge but their mentality!

Knowledge was something that could be learned as time passed but mindset and mentality weren’t something easy to change.

“It’s much clearer to me after the classification.” Tiffany looked at Dudian. There was a glimpse of admiration and appreciation in her eyes.

Dudian smiled and was aware that there would be an impact on the social environment after he voiced out his opinions. For example, the systematic classification of things will make

procedures much more clear. The boundaries between many things are very vague and details are difficult to classify. That's why there weren't strong concepts of this in the medieval era. It seems that with the development of society and technology the science would get more advanced. This way the research would delve from macro to micro levels. Likewise, the social system would also progress.

"Mr. Dean's thinking is very agile. Could it be that you have studied the cassia in depth? I have never thought that its stem could be used to make a sack or hemp rope. Most of the people say that it is just a thorn but its body is a treasure!" A sixty-year-old man sitting opposite to him exclaimed.

Dudian smiled: "I'm flattered."

"I didn't expect that such a small thorn would have such roles. If we follow Mr. Dean's argument and mindset then there are infinite roles which the other plants have. No wonder Mr. Dean has such a success at such a young age! I give up!" Another middle-aged person laughed.

The old man wearing a red jacket added: "It's the end of today's seminar. I think the ranking of the cassia should be increased. Mr. Dean has easily solved most of the problems."

Dudian was helpless. He had come today to learn interesting things instead he was the one to be complimented. He sighed in his heart while there was a smile on his face: "I made this points because I listened to all of you."

Old man with the red jacket added: “You don’t have to be modest. We are senior architects. Does anyone have something to add?”

Everyone looked at each other. The man with the crooked nose took a deep breath and slowly said: “The idea which I proposed to adding powder into the water should not be thrown aside.”

“Yes.” The man heading the seminar nodded.

The other senior architects agreed too.

Dudian never agreed with this point in his heart. The so-called its role in the war he said was incidental. After all many people had pointed out that out so he couldn’t completely overturn the idea. In that case, he would be having a lot of people as enemies just because of disagreeing with them. He didn’t want to confront them and offend others because of unnecessary things. Moreover, in real life, it didn’t matter how powerful you were. If you didn’t give face to others, they will hate and try to harm you!

Therefore he needed to have a sense of proportion to his performance.

The crooked nose middle-aged man saw that Dudian didn’t have any objections. The coldness on his face seemed to loosen a bit: “Since there are no objections then we can submit the results of this seminar to the Temple. I believe that this paper will be appraised highly by the Temple.”

The old man wearing red jacket said: “Mr. Dean has come up with the concept so he will earn lots of points. According to our old rules, the one who made the conclusion will get the most rewards. The rest of people with no comments or opinions will get 10 percent of the total points for participation. This time we will submit three points which are in the three areas proposed by Mr. Dean. All members please sign if you don’t have anything to add.”

“I don’t have objections.” Tiffany was the first to agree.

Others agreed too.

The middle-aged man with a crooked nose said: “I have nothing against the first two theories proposed by Mr. Dean. But the third theory about use in war was put forward by me in the first place. In addition to just naming it, Mr. Dean didn’t have any instructions for its actual use. This shouldn’t be registered as his theory. Right?”

The old man wearing red jacket was slightly startled. He looked at Dudian who had a smile on his face. It seemed that he didn’t care at all. Dudian had greater potential in comparison to the crooked nose middle-aged architect. However, he didn’t want to offend the latter.

“Mr. Dean, what do you think?” The old man asked.

Dudian laughed: “I have no objection.”

The old man sighed in relief: “Then it’s time to end the seminar.”

Others greeted Dudian other as they left.

Tiffany laughed as she looked at Dudian: “You are really a genius. You can earn points so easily while it’s way more difficult for us. The previous time it took a few hours to finish the seminar while this time it ended in less than half an hour.”

Dudian wryly smiled. He whispered in his heart: “You have earned but I lost. I lost nothing but time…”

Chapter 323

Dudian directly left the 13th castle after bidding farewell to Tiffany. He didn't expect that the so-called seminar would be a discussion of the basics. He was quite disappointed as there were no talks about innovation. However, it would not be right to say that he didn't completely harvest anything. At least he was able to find out the level of senior architects.

The weaker they were the better for him.

Dudian got into his underground laboratory in his castle. These days he had found a solution for the power defects of the shark spear. If this method was exposed then it would cause a great uproar. He made a good design and the overall concept was revolutionary for this era. But he had to increase his status and position within the Temple in order to allow Barton and Joseph smoothly pass into the Holy Church and the military.

...

Castle in the Temple of Elements.

Master Quepos was sitting on the chair as he gently rubbed his neck. There were many papers in front of him. His age has passed sixty so he was given the position to audit the papers by the senior architects. The number of senior architects was limited and the number of seminars was smaller. At best there would be seven or eight papers a month. He was able to effortlessly finish his job. Right now he felt his shoulders were sore from muscle pain.

He leaned against the chair as he gently breathed. He looked at the maid standing by his side.

The maid has been with master Quepos for many years. She came over to knead his shoulders.

“Hey, I’m getting old … …” Master Quepos sighed. He didn’t care much about primary architects. Sometimes he would teach his inspirations to his students. He hoped that if they get famous this glory would be written under his name too. He needed few days to review the papers of the seminars by the senior architects. He will be able to receive a few extra points from the Temple for it. But now this decent and easy job felt a bit difficult.

He had thought many times to rely on his own identity to exchange for a ‘God’s blessing’ from the Temple. He wanted to restore the vitality of his body. The Temple internally advocated this move. They even gave discounts to the old masters. However, he had heard and saw many things about this ‘God’s blessing.’ Even though the latter would give him a powerful body and long life, but he didn’t want to touch this filthy thing.

“Master, this is the paper from the 13th castle.” A middle-aged butler came inside.

Master Quepos was bored but he still nodded: “Put it on the table.”

The butler respectfully retreated after handing out the paper.

Quepos glanced at the cover of the paper but he was too lazy to pay attention to details. He closed his eyes to enjoy the maid massaging him. He suddenly opened his eyes as he looked at the paper: “Recently there was a little boy called ‘Dean’ who was promoted to senior architect. I think he was assigned to the 13th castle…”

He sat properly, the maid stopped and retreated to the side.

Quepos opened the letter and read it. The handwriting was neat which made him satisfied. The more he read the more surprised he became: “It seems that the potential of the little guy is much bigger than of us old ones. He has been in the Temple for less than a year but was able to analyze the ‘cassia’ thoroughly. His points are very sharp. He may not only become a master in the future but better than a master. It’s possible that he would get ‘outstanding master’ title in the future.”

He pondered for a while and began to write.

“So talented… He is affiliated with New World consortium. He hasn’t been drawn out by other consortia which showed his mindset.” Quepos thought in his heart as he signed the three papers. He wrote down his comments and awarded the points accordingly. He gently blew on the papers so that the ink dried faster. Afterward, he took out a letter from another place and quickly wrote it up. He put it into the envelope and called out to the butler: “Send this letter to architect Dean. These papers have been evaluated. Send them back.”

Butler was surprised at master Quepos's speed.

...

13th castle.

Tiffany, the old man with the red jacket as well as crooked nose middle-aged man and another black suited middle-aged man were sitting together in a manor and drinking afternoon tea. They were chatting about their own insights.

"Since the alloys were invented the steel and other alloy materials have occupied the market. In comparison to gold materials, our wood equipment seems out of date. Including the bow. Before the bows were made out of wood but now they are attempting to create the chord from steel." The black suited middle-aged man said.

Tiffany nodded slightly. She was aware that products made from wood were knocked out from the market and it was a great blow to them. It meant that as time passed their products would be replaced with metal ones.

"I recently studied the difference between metal and wood. I believe that our wood faction is more important than gold faction." The old man wearing the red jacket slowly said. The wood elements were his life's love. He couldn't accept the idea that the popularity of wood was going to be replaced by metals.

The crooked nose middle-aged man was about to say something when the sounds of a carriage echoed from outside. A person got off the carriage. It was master Quepos's butler. The butler's eyes lit up as he saw the four people in the manor. He strode inside: "Leisure time?"

The old man with the red jacket was familiar with the butler. He looked at him with surprise: "The review was finished so soon?"

"Master Quepos was reviewing another paper so it happened that yours came the moment he was finished." The butler laughed.

Tiffany smiled: "This is good luck! Can we see the results now?"

The butler handed out the papers to her: "I still have other things to do. You check. I got to go." He turned away and left the manor.

Tiffany quickly opened the envelope and took out the papers. She quickly swept through the content: "Two hundred points? So much?"

The old man leaned over to check: "It's two hundred points for the first paper. It is equal to a two-star research of an architect. So the three papers mean six hundred points? If we get 10% of that then that is...hahaha..."

Even as a senior architect getting the points for a two-star item just like that was a hard thing.

Tiffany lamented: “It’s possible to get so many points just for ‘cassia’? Imagine if all the plants were analyzed. Wouldn’t we get as many points as a master?”

The old man smiled: “You are asking for too much. This time such an award was given because of the methods. Any plant can be analyzed using this mindset. I assume they will give at best 10 points after a thorough analysis of any other plant.”

“It is also 200 points.” Tiffany opened the second paper. The comments written by the master had appreciation in it. She opened the third but her face turned ugly. There were no reward points and the comment was very simple: “Not feasible!”

The crooked nose senior architect knew that the third paper was his own. He observed Tiffany’s dazed appearance and his heart jumped as the blood gushed to his head. He knew that something was wrong.

Tiffany looked at him and saw the delight in his eyes. She handed out the paper to the man.

The crooked nose architect took over the paper in excitement but he was stunned on the spot in the next moment.

The old man wearing the red jacket tried to comfort him as he saw his appearance: “Since master Quebos said that it is not feasible then it means there are still problems regarding the solution. We can review it and ask people with a military background to grasp the source of the problem.”

The man’s face turned red as he clutched the paper and left.

...

Three days passed in the blink of an eye.

Dudian was eating breakfast as he was checking the newspapers. He had told Nicholas to hire a “mammoth” carriage and get clothing to wrap the weapons.

“Military newspaper.”

“Barbarians have occupied the Red Maple Mountains. The terrain is hard to attack. The military attacked at seven o’clock at night yesterday. The barbarians were defeated... It is reported that endless barbarians came over and the military couldn’t advance to Red Maple Mountains ...”

Dudian carefully read the newspaper. He was in a higher position now and because of many exchanges with Old Fulin, he had learned how to read the meaning behind the lines in newspapers. The military’s night attack was true but defeating barbarians... Most probably they have exterminated small teams of barbarians. According to his deduction with the number of soldiers sent by the military, it would be very difficult to capture back the Red Map Mountains. Unless they had dispatched guards and knights. But there was no such record in the newspaper.

It would be very difficult to accomplish such a task with soldiers alone. He guessed the purpose of the military was making a final defense post close to the population. The current attack by the military in the Red Maple Mountains was a symbolic harassment. They were trying to prove to consortia and Holy Church that they are doing their duty.

Why would they defend the walls of the residential and commercial district? There were many factors that came to his mind but he deduced and ended at two. The first was that by relying on the wall's defense they were reducing the consumption of goods by the soldiers. The second reason was that they were winning the love of the people. The repeated conscription by the military had caused public resentment. That's why they were trying to create an image that they would sacrifice everything for civilians.

"They don't just aim to win the war. They want to maximize their interest while winning the war..." Dudian muttered to himself as he put down the newspaper. He felt that he had learned something new but he didn't feel joy at his harvest.

He finished his breakfast and sat in the hall in silence. His left hand was gently rubbing soft mud. It was another way to exercise the flexibility of his left hand. It was rubber mud which was made of salt, oil, and flour.

He used his left hand to squeeze the rubber mud into a small ball. He rubbed again and again.

Nicholas came towards him: "Master, are you waiting for

something?”

Dudian nodded slightly and continued to wait.

It didn’t take long for Sergei and Gwyneth to come back. Before they thought that there was a power behind Dudian’s back but now they were aware that Dudian was on his own.

Especially after they saw so many envelopes sent to him. Moreover, messengers of consortia, reporters from newspapers as well as aristocrats and wealthy businessmen had come to see him. It was a proof that he was not inferior to the nobility or business giants that have been operating for decades.

“How is the situation there?” Dudian asked.

Sergei shrugged: “I sneaked past with Gwyneth. The mountains have been completely occupied by the barbarians. The military’s attack is simply a nonsense. Even if they send guards and knights it would be hard to face the barbarians. I would like to understand how these barbarians who are no different from monkeys can have such swords and knives? Which consortium is selling weapons to them?”

Chapter 324

Dudian frowned as he looked at Sergei: “You can talk stuff like that in front of me but be aware that its not something that can be freely told in front of others. Otherwise we won’t end up well.”

Sergei replied: “What are you afraid of? Its not like I’m telling a lie. They are our enemies. Why should I be afraid of someone else knowing it?”

Dudian said: “Everyone is an enemy. If you give them a chance and if its someone that dislikes us then we will have too many problems.”

Sergei no longer continued to speak.

Gwyneth looked at Dudian: “Master the barbarians have occupied the Red Maple mountains and the residents of the town close to it have been looted quite a few times. However they seem not to in hurry to attack the town. But there will be lots of innocent residents who will end up as victims of this war. Can we do something about it?”

Dudian looked at her eyes: “What do you mean?”

“Although I don’t know much about your background but young master seems to have enough power. If you can contribute with inventions and can change the outcome of war then it may improve the situation. Maybe even the military will be forced to launch an early attack.” Gwyneth slowly said.

Sergei had a strange smile on his face: “I didn’t think that you would still keep compassion in your heart after being imprisoned and tortured in Thorn Flow prison. No wonder you were part of the disciplinary parts earlier on. You have such a kind heart and noble character.”

Gwyneth narrowed her eyes as she glanced at him.

Sergei’s eyelids twitched as he stopped the ridicule. He smiled and shrugged his shoulders.

Dudian quietly watched the girl who was the same age as him: “You are overestimating me. Although I have some weight but I can’t influence the border war. It would be very difficult. Moreover if I did so what would be the benefit in it for me?”

Gwyneth stared back at him but it seemed that she wasn’t aware of Dudian’s intentions: “There would be many benefits. You will gain honor in case of victory in the war and people’s love! I believe that if military uses its full strength then the eradication of barbarians is absolute. Moreover even if military can’t handle the problem they will apply for assistance from the inner wall. In case inner wall interferes and gets involved in the process then the barbarians would have days left to survive.”

“Honor and love … ” Dudian smiled (tn: jenny): “You know sometimes a word can take a life and sometimes a single word can give a life. Honor and love… I don’t want to take big risks for those.”

Gwyneth said word by word: “The biggest advantage is that you will have peace of mind. Can you watch these innocent civilians die?”

Dudian deeply looked into her eyes. There was a trace of surprise in his heart as he didn’t expect that the girl who climbed out of the hell would still have kindness deep in her heart. He knew that she was asking for him for help from her heart. However he felt strong killing intent and hatred in her eyes. Did she still focus on her enemies?

Dudian was silent for a while as he thought of this. He calmly said: “I can.”

Gwyneth was slightly startled as she heard Dudian’s answer. Her face turned pale and she bit her lips. She no longer spoke as she clenched her fists.

Sergei, Nicholas and Jin couldn’t help but look at the boy after they heard Dudian’s words. Although they ignored his words as they were in no position to say anything. But they personally heard the calm tone Dudian had when he spoke out those cruel words in cold tone.

Dudian looked at the girls whose fists were trembling. His eyes lit up as he said: “But it should be so difficult to interfere…”

“Huh?” Sergei, Nicholas and Jin were startled. It was a situation which affected the life and death of three districts. Even six

consortia couldn’t interfere and change the fate of war. How could he have a way?

Gwyneth looked up at Dudian. There were expectations in her eyes.

Dodian slowly said: “I can’t interfere with the moves of military. But the barbarians aren’t that stupid according to the current situation. They are aware that they have gather together for a short term. So their attack field is limited for now. The support troops that join the main army of barbarians pass through the outskirts of the town. So it is unavoidable that there will be skirmish and attacks.”

Gwyneth bowed her head in disappointment: “So no matter who wins the civilians will die?”
Dudian shrugged his shoulders: “There is no ‘certain death’ in my dictionary. If we can’t stop looting by barbarians then we can get the people living in that town to a different region and shelter them. However this process is too troublesome and will take a lot of my time.”

“But you can save countless lives by sparing a bit of your time!” Gwyneth said in an emotional tone.

Dudian smiled: “You are wrong. It’s not just me but there are others who can save the lives of countless people if they willed to spend a bit of time. No one is willing to go through such a trouble. Isn’t it more comfortable drinking tea at home rather than that?”

Gwyneth's face turned ugly as she stared at him.

Dudian smiled as he saw her facial expression: "You don't have to hate me for this. I know that you will secretly go out even if I tied you at home and stop you. But you won't be loyal to me in the future so this time I will save them because of you."

Gwyneth's eyes opened wide: "Are you really willing to?"

Dudian replied: "I can give them a chance for salvation but survival is up to them. I'll give you a personal letter which you will hand out to New World consortium. They will communicate with Ministry of Communication to open a passage for the residents of the town to leave the place. You and Sergei will be responsible to bringing out them and bringing into the area under Ryan famil'y's control."

Gwyneth wanted to say something but restrained herself. She took a deep breath and looked at Dudian: "Thank you!"

Dudian looked at Nicholas: "Pen and letter."

Nicholas ordered maid to get pen and paper.

Dudian wrote two letters and give them to Gwyneth: "Go to Ryan family. Old patriarch will know how to solve out the problem."

"Thank you!" Gwyneth turned and left.

Sergei was reluctant: “What a bad luck! I’m joining a big rescue operation.” Afterwards he followed after Gwyneth.

Nicholas whispered after both of them left: “Master they will be racing against time in this evacuation process. If you rely on your relationship with big noble families then there will be more prestige and the rescue operations will be much more smooth because of their reputation. The Ryan family has been in decline for decades. I assume there will be riots and the efficiency of the rescue won’t be much … ”

Dudian indifferently smiled: “Do you want me to contribute ideas and method and others to take credits for it?”

Nicholas was slightly startled: “Master is right.”

Dudian looked at him. Nicholas felt Dudian’s eyes on him but didn’t dare to looked back at him. He had goose bumps all over his body as his muscles slightly stiffened. He maintained humble posture. However a moment later he heard Dudian’s flat voice: “You will come out with us to hunt.”

Nicholas’s heart shrank as he looked at Dudian. He almost forget what he wanted to tell. He was a butler for long time so he carefully thought out before hastily talking: “Master, my body won’t handle the activities outside the giant wall. Although I had used ‘God’s blessings’ and my physical constitution is comparable to intermediate hunters but I’m not a fighter. My age is not small either so my endurance is not that good. I won’t be able to keep up

with you and will drag you behind. In case I accidentally disturb monsters then I'll provoke trouble. I know that I had done mistakes back then but I have changed. I am not wholeheartedly loyal to you. I hope you will give me a chance…"

Dudian slowly said: "Since the fire is burning only the ashes would be left."

Nicholas deeply looked at Dudian's eyes. However he didn't dare to plead anymore. He was thinking about everything that he has heard about outside the giant wall. Nicholas knew that he will have to go so he was thinking about what he would do in case he encountered a monster.

It didn't take long for Jin to put all the goods onto the giant carriage.

Dudian checked once more to confirm that there were no flaws. He changed into his hunter armor. It was the latest one developed by the Temple. They have added the newest invention called 'plastic.' The gloves and joints were much more softer. However its flexibility was much stronger. In short the new armor was more advanced than the old one. However it would be still very difficult for the armor to withstand the attacks of level 20 monster.

Nicholas also wore the new hunter armor prepared for him by Dudian in advance.

The beast began to pull the carriage as they went into the suburbs.

After few hours of travel the carriage approached the border fort.

Nicholas jumped out of the carriage and intercepted the soldiers that had come forward. He showed his silver hunter medal which represented his new identity as an intermediate level hunter.

The soldier looked at Nicholas: “What is inside? Show everything!”

Nicholas coldly replied: “What’s there to check? It’s all my hunting tools!”

“Oh really?! It’s a bit tricky. Why its covered? Maybe someone or something is hidden inside?” Soldier asked.

Nicholas snorted as he took out another medal: “I am a hunter of the New World consortium. This is a special hunting tool made by the architect Dean. Are you really willing to stop me?”

The soldier was scared as he saw the medal in Nicholas’s hand: “Is this the medal of Mr Dean?” Although he was only a fortress guard but he was aware of the symbols and medals of the superiors. He knew that a young senior architect called Dean was in limelight in recent times.

Nicholas continued: “Do you think I would falsify it?”

Soldier quickly recovered: “Don’t be offended. I didn’t think that you would be follower of the architect. Do you need help with taking off the luggage?”

“No, these ones are way too heavy. I will use the carriage.” Nicholas indifferently said.

Soldier continued: “There are mutated animals outside the barrier. They may easily attack such a carriage…”

“Do you think a mutated beast would succeed in attack while I’m here?” Nicholas jumped on the carriage and glanced at soldier: “I am in a hurry.”

Soldier turned towards his companions and waved them to open the giant door.

The giant carriage passed through the gate as crowd looked at it.

Dudian drilled out from the back of the carriage in about ten miles after they left the fortress’s gate.

Nicholas quickly went to the side and gave back Dudian’s medals.

Dudian had bought the giant carriage as he didn’t want its original driver to be aware of his trip to outside. He thought that the matter could be leaked and passed to the ears of other consortia.

The mammoth beast was huge and soon attracted the attention of mutant beasts. Dudian sat on top of the mammoth as Nicholas beheaded the mutated beast that tried to attack them. In the history of the giant wall there have been few times when senior hunters disappeared in the radiation zone. It seems that there were high level monsters within the radiation zone too but they were very rare and less in number.

They were approaching the ‘death passage’ when Dudian sensed two teams in duty. It seems there were some activities near the ‘death passage.’

Chapter 325

Dudian's eyes lit up as he jumped of the mammoth's head. He looked at two knights of light which were by the entrance: "Who are you?"

One of them had a different armor and seemed like the captain. He didn't answer to Dudian's words but look up and down at him. The knight behind him saw the mammoth carriage and frowned: "Are you hunters from the New World consortium?"

"Yes."

"There are signs of frequent abnormal activities outside the giant wall! Are you trying to go for a hunt? We advise you to go back as you still have a chance. You will end up like a free meal in giant monster's stomach." The middle-aged knight of light indifferently said.

Dudian smiled: "Thanks for the reminder but there is an order by the consortium which we have to accomplish."

"Hmpf!" The middle-aged knight of light snorted: "If you insist on going out then there is no problem. But don't blame me that I haven't warned you when you lose your small life out there!"

Dudian smiled: "I'll trouble you to open the passage."

"Reckless!" The young knight of light standing behind the

captain whispered. Although his tone was low but obviously he made it so that everyone could hear him.

The other knights of light in duty looked at Dudian and Nicholas in disdain and ridicule. However one of them suddenly exclaimed: “Y-you! Aren’t you architect Dean?”

Dudian nodded as he saw that he was recognized: “Yes, that’s me.”

The previous middle-aged knight and young knight of light looked at Dudian in amazement. They didn’t expect to meet the genius architect in person. Although they were familiar with the name but because of their duties by the giant wall they didn’t have time to read newspaper. So they didn’t recognize Dudian’s appearance.

Dudian took out his architect medal and hunter medal so that he didn’t stay for long. The middle-aged knight looked at it and Dudian put it away: “I’m here to escort the hunters of our consortium. We are planning to establish a stronghold outside the giant wall.”

The middle-aged knight’s attitude made a big turn as he politely said: “I have long heard that architect Dean is in good relationship with the New World consortium but I wouldn’t expect that you would help their hunters to establish a base.”

Dudian knew that the Temple had concealed his identity as a hunter so the knights of light weren’t aware of his background.

There were few in other consortia and various aristocrats who had information about him. Moreover because of Temple's involvement his hunter status was more low key and it didn't attract too much attention. Dudian looked at the middle-aged knight: "You should be from Charles family. Greet your family members on my behalf."

The middle-aged knight's eyes lit up: "I didn't expect that you have heard about our family. I am honored!"

"You are kind." Dudian didn't meant to go back and unload stuff. So he looked back at the mammoth carriage and said to Nicholas: "Unload the tools."

Nicholas who was listening to Dudian and middle-aged knight's conversation bowed and turned away.

The middle-aged knight told the young knight to open the door to the passage. He looked back at Dudian: "Architect Dean the place outside the passage isn't safe in recent times. We won't be able to afford the responsibility if something happens to you..."

Dudian patted his shoulder: "Don't worry nothing will happen."

The middle-aged knight smiled. He wanted to continue to persuade him but saw that Dudian raised his hand to stop him. He waved towards the other knight of light to help Nicholas with unloading.

The shark spears were covered with coarse cloth. The knights of light staggered because of their weight and were full of curiosity. But because of Dudian's presence they restrained their curiosity and didn't look at them.

Everything was unloaded form the carriage.

Dudian and Nicholas moved into the passage. The place was stacked. He asked the middle-aged knight to close the giant door after they entered the passage.

The dim lights of the oil lamps shined within the passage. The first thing that they saw was the smiling faces of the goddesses engraved on the walls.

It was Nicholas's first time going to the outside of the giant wall. He was full of curiosity as he looked around the passage. Both of them carried the sharp spears to the other exit of the passage. Dudian removed the lock and opened a small gap. The air was filled with pale smell which had mix of adult splitter's odor. The splitter had come to this part of the giant wall.

However from the smell he knew that the latter shouldn't be here.

Dudian slowly pushed open the giant door. He looked around for a while. The first thing to catch his eyes were the huge dents on the ground. He knew that they were the footprints of the splitter.

Dudian’s eyes narrowed as he looked around. They wouldn’t be in a safe environment after they went out. Moreover once the splitter was aware of their existence they would no longer have chance to survive.

Dudian sniffed for about ten minutes and saw that there was no movement. He opened the giant door and with Nicholas’s help they brought the shark spears to the outside. His eyes were looking around in vigilance. Once the splitter appeared he was planning to drill back into the passage.

The splitter was too big to squeeze into the passage.

Nicholas looked around as he carried out the shark spears. He had long heard about the world outside the giant wall in his sixty years of life. However he was never eager to explore the world outside the giant wall. But it was very hard to kill the curiosity inside him. At the moment he had the opportunity to see for himself. He observed the desolate ruins that were covered in weeds and vegetation.

He was shocked at sight. He turned around but this time his pupils shrank in fear and he almost screamed out. He calmed himself and pulled Dudian. Nicholas pointed to the part of the giant wall.

Dudian’s face changed as he looked back.

He saw more than dozen deep and messy scratches on the giant wall. Each of them were ten meters long and there were few which

were about 20 meters in length. It was not difficult for Dudian to guess which giant monster had caused this.

Dudian took a deep breath in shock. He was shocked because of the destructive power of the splitter and the hardness of the giant wall. Even such a terrifying monster couldn't affect the giant wall. No wonder it was able to protect the humanity for three hundred years. The giant wall was still intact and he had never heard of a situation or news of decay in the giant wall.

Nicholas couldn't cover the stunning feeling that was exposed in his face. He had long heard numerous rumors about the monsters but he never thought that such ones did exist. He couldn't imagine the kind of a monster which could make such long scratches.

Dudian gently put down the shark spear. He came towards the giant wall and looked up at the scratch that was closest to the ground. He saw that the giant wall was made of stone. There was nothing special about it. Then how could the giant wall have such a dense degree of defense? How could it withstand the attacks of monsters for three hundred years?

Dudian pulled out his dagger and jumped for more than three meters. He stabbed the dagger onto the groove and rubbed it. However after he landed to the ground it seemed that there wasn't even a poke after his attack. Not even rough dents could be seen.

Chapter 326

“Isn’t it ordinary gravel?” Dudian’s eyes lit up as he used the dagger to scratch the giant wall’s surface as hard as he could. But he was able draw out sand and moss. Dudian suspected that these sand powder and moss were stained on the surface of the giant wall after a long time of accumulation.

Dudian didn’t continue to study the giant wall after making two scratches. The current level of technology would be able to identify the composition and infrastructure of the giant wall. He returned back to the exit of the passage and looked at Nicholas: “Don’t waste time. Take them out!”

Nicholas’s face had turned ugly: “Master, are you planning to hunt this big guy which made those scratches?”

Dudian nodded: “Yes.”

Nicholas’s face turned bitter and green as if he had eaten poisonous mushrooms: “Master, I know that I had offended you. I admit that and I know that you don’t want to kill me directly. I won’t even resist. You can use me as a cannon fodder. But this…”

“If you don’t want to die then don’t be so long-winded.” Dudian kicked his ass and pushed him into the passage. He didn’t take him as an elder: “Act!”

Nicholas was thrown into the passage. He looked back at Dudian. He wanted to pull down the giant iron door and ran back. However

he suppressed the idea that was circling in his mind. Nicholas sighed and pulled the shark spear that was on the ground. He took everything out.

Dudian had laid to the ground as he pressed his ear to listen to the nearby movement. There were no vibrations coming off the ground. He looked at Nicholas: “You wait here for me. If you hear movement or vibrations then get into the passage and take refuge there. Don’t stay outside otherwise you will die in a miserable way.”

Nicholas’s heartbeat slightly increased as he asked in a tense tone: “What about you?”

Dudian took out two large bowl-shaped object from one of the cloth bags. There were four suction cups in the bag. He used two of them himself and tied tied the rope to the two other. He put on another huge backpack. There was a solid rope in the backpack. He came towards the giant wall and pushed the suction cups onto its surface. Cups firmly buckled onto the giant wall and Dudian began to climb up.

Nicholas was stunned as he rubbed his eyes. For a moment he doubted that such a thing could occur.

Dudian used the suction cups to climb up the giant wall like a spider. If this invention was given to the Temple he estimated that it would be assessed as a two star item. However at this moment the value of the suction cups were more beneficial than money or points. The suction cups were concave in structure so Dudian pressed one after another to climb the giant wall.

Dudian climbed about 100 meters in height. It was relatively safe distance from the ground. However if he fell off from 100 meters then he would have fractured bones at the best case. Moreover just from visual observation the giant wall seemed to be over 1000 meters in height. So if he fell down from such a height then the only result would be death!

Although he considered that air would act as a cushion but if he felt form four or five hundred meters then he wouldn't be able to keep his little life. There was only two things he could rely on right now and those were suction cups.

Therefore he had repeated made experiments on four suction cups. He had put a lot of effort in making them as perfect as possible. In theory he would be able to climb to the top.

"If I wasn't worried about splitter's movement then I could create something new in another half a month's time. I could have made a hot air balloon which could easily fly over the giant wall. But it would still be a risky choice. The materials aren't good enough to make something like that. I assume at seven or eight hundred meters the balloon wouldn't be able to handle the pressure. Once it broke the death would be much more faster... "

Nicholas looked up at the figure on the giant wall in shock. Dudian was using two small devices to climb to such a horrible height. It was simply too appalling.

Dudian had climbed to four hundred meters after some time.

There was soreness in high right hand. He thought that his left hand was in the same state even though he couldn't feel anything. His hands clutched onto the suction cups as he breathed. He continued to climb up. Every time he would tightly press and check the suction cup before moving on. He didn't want to fall off because of misadventure such as that. At six hundred meters height the suction cup on his left hand didn't work properly and he almost dropped off. Cold sweat flew down his spine as he quickly tried to control the strength on his right hand. For a moment he was hung down only relying on his right hand. The next moment he pressed the suction cup on his left hand to the giant wall.

Dudian put more emphasis on the suction cup in his left hand after this. He didn't look up or down to see the height he was at. Dudian didn't know how long it took but at one point he felt the heat of sun rays on his head. He looked up and saw that he was closer to the sky. The top of the giant wall was few meters away from his current position.

He was excited as he stabilized his rhythm and continued to climb up. Finally he was able to climb to the top of the giant wall. He raised his hand and seized the edge of the giant wall's top. He dragged his body and turned over the edge. The top of the giant wall was similar in structure to the Great Wall from the China. It's sides were slightly convex on edges. The middle part in between was about 20 meters in length. It was very clean and there were no weapons.

Dudian looked up and forward. He felt like he was overlooking all the being as he opened his arms. The cold wind blew past him. He felt freedom.

Dudian looked down the wall after a while. Even though there was about thousands of meters distance but he was able to clearly see Nicholas's face covered in thick beard. Dudian smiled as he unloaded the backpack he was carrying. There was a long rope within it. He threw its one side down the wall.

The length of the rope was one thousand and two hundred meters. He had calculated the height of the giant wall according to his visual perception. Actually the rope was more than a hundred meters long than the height of the giant wall.

Soon the rope brushed past and fall down to the ground.

Nicholas looked at the top of the giant wall. He still couldn't calm himself as he saw Dudian at the top of the giant wall. He tied a backpack to the rope thrown by Dudian.

Dudian immediately pulled the rope as he saw Nicholas tie the backpack.

He unlocked the backpack after it was dragged over. There was another rope inside the backpack. But it was as thick as a write and much more durable than the previous rope.

Dudian threw down the new rope.

Nicholas bent the rope in a triangular shape and tied the shark spear onto it.

Dudian pulled it up after Nicholas tied it. It didn't take long for the first shark spear to be dragged over the top of the giant wall. The second, third shark spears followed it... Soon all 12 of the shark spears were on top of the giant wall.

Afterwards the other small parts that they had brought with themselves were tied to the rope.

As time passed all 6 tools that they had brought outside were dragged over by Dudian.

Dudian dumped the rope as he heavily breathed. He looked at the distant wilderness. He saw a black spot in distance which was running like an ant. He narrowed his eyes. It was the anticipated splitter that was rushing past towards their location.

"It has come!" Dudian's pupils shrank. He was planning to use the dried blood of the young splitter to lure it but it had appeared on its own!

Chapter 327

Dudian for the first time saw the appearance of the splitter from the high ground. It was swaying like a seaweed as it moved. It's scythe like arms were similar to swords gathered in groups that pierced the ground. The splitters body was much different than newborn splitters. It was much larger, there were strange dark parts on it and its shell was like an armor which covered its body. In short it seemed like a machine designed for war.

Dudian didn't continue to look at it but rushed out to the edge and roared at Nicholas: "Come on, its coming up!" He tried to balance his voice so that he couldn't be heard on the other side of the giant wall.

Nicholas was old but his body had the physique of an intermediate hunter. Moreover his hearing was much better than ordinary knight of light's. His face changed as he heard Dudian's call. In a reflex he wrapped the rope around his waist and began to climb up.

Nicholas was doing his best to crawl while Dudian pulled the rope too.

Dudian pulled Nicholas faster than an elevator could take him up. He looked up to see that the splitter was around ten miles away from them. It was a long distance for ordinary people but for splitter it was a matter of few breaths to reach Nicholas.

Dudian clenched his teeth to bear the pain coming off from his

right arm. Soon Nicholas was dragged up to 100 meters high. This height was ‘safe’ distance from the ground as splitter’s height seemed to be close to 30 meters.

Boom!

The voice of splitter’s body hitting the giant wall echoed out. In the blink of an eye it had closed the distance of 10 miles.

Dudian could clearly see from the high attitude that there were several black triangular shapes at the core of the splitter. They seemed similar to huge eyeballs.

Obviously it was one of its weaknesses.

However those triangular things looked like the armored eyelids. They would be able to protect splitter’s eyes from an arrow shot by Dudian. He thought that it would be very hard to penetrate through the armor with just an arrow.

Nicholas’s heart almost stopped and choked blood as he heard the trembling sound coming off the ground. He clutched tightly onto the rope. His mind went blank for a moment. Although he had used his imagination to visualize the ferocious monster but personally seeing it was another kind of an experience. What kind of a monster is this?

Is it something that hunters can fight against?

The splitter's body stopped as it hit the giant wall. It's eyes focused on Nicholas's body as it noticed his existence. Splitter issued a low roar and bounced up.

Nicholas's eyes went wide in horror and his soul almost emerged out of his body as he saw the scene.

Whoosh!

A huge scythe like forelimb of splitter attacked like a sword.

"Nooooo~~" Nicholas looked at the splitter which leaped up. An unprecedented fear burst out in his heard. Instinctively he released the rope so that his body would fall and he could escape its immediate attack. He even considered immediate death better than being pierced by splitter.

However the rope was tightly wrapped around his waist.

The rope swayed.

Bang!

The scythe like arm passed in front of Nicholas's eyes and loud voice echoed as it crashed onto the surface of the giant wall.

Nicholas's body floated around and he was able to escape the blow.

Boom!

A huge roar came from the ground as the splitter felt down and trampled it.

Nicholas was relieved as he looked down once more. His face turned white in fear as he saw the splitter getting ready to leap up again. He bit his lips as he tried to climb up. Alternatively Dudian was pulling Nicholas up too. In about few seconds of time Nicholas had risen more than 100 meters.

Whoosh!

The splitter jumped again.

Nicholas's heart jumped out as he saw splitter's momentum. He pressed his legs onto the giant wall to run over it while he clutched the rope.

Dudian was prepared. In accordance with the previous method he quickly ran to another place to swing Nicholas to the other side.

Bang!

The splitter once more hit an empty target.

Dudian was relieved.

Nicholas had climbed over 500 meters in height as the splitter tried to jump for the third time. Splitter was able to jump for 350 meters and felt down. It's seemed that 350 meters was its bouncing limit. Although its jumping ability was very strong but its weight was large too.

Nicholas was relieved to see that splitter couldn't reach him. However he didn't dared to slack as he grabbed the rope to quickly climb up.

Splitter stood on the ground and looked up. But it didn't jump again.

Dudian saw the scene. It was according to his guess. Although the splitter had wings but its size was too large. The role of the wings wasn't meant for it to fly but for increasing its flexibility while jumping or running. Otherwise it would have relied on its wings and have flown over the giant wall long time ago.

Nicholas was pulled over the giant wall after a while. He grabbed onto the edge and turned over to the top. He sat on ground as he took big breathes. His face was white as his body sweated all over.

Dudian quickly recovered the rope and threw it at Nicholas: "Don't dawdle! Quickly move the things!"

Nicholas looked back at Dudian. He saw that Dudian's index finger on his left hand was torn because of the friction created by the rope. Blood slowly oozed down. The anger in his heart faded

away. There were complicated feelings reflected in his eyes as Nicholas looked at Dudian: “Thank you…”

Dudian sternly looked at him: “It’s not time to be sentimental! Carry the baggage!”

Nicholas’s mouth twitched as he wryly smiled. He no longer said anything as he picked up the shark spears: “We can’t shot it in here…Where do we move?”

Dudian replied: “Of course we can’t shot it in here. We are just next to the entrance of the passage. If there is a big movement then the knights of light will be alerted!”

Nicholas honestly asked: “Where should we move then?”

“There, 5km away.” Dudian moved towards the left.

Nicholas wryly smiled as he knew that there was no room for discussion. He picked up the shark spear as he followed after Dudian.

Dudian also carried shark spears. He bowed down to check the splitter. It was still waving its scythes against the giant wall near the entrance.

Dudian retracted his eyes and increased his speed.

In about ten minutes all the equipment including the shark spears were moved to the left side of the passage about 5km away from the entrance.

Dudian made the Nicholas to assemble the parts while he took out a fragmented dried blood shell from his armor. It was rolled in a small white gauze. He tied it to the rope and slowly pushed down the giant wall.

Chapter 328

Roar!

The sounds of splitter's outcry echoed out.

Splitter stopped and growled as the dried blood of the young splitter attached to the rope fell down about six or seven hundred meters height. It seemed that splitter had felt its existence as it turned towards the location where Dudian and Nicholas was at.

The groun trembled and quivered as the splitter's footprints were left in the ground. In less than 30 seconds the splitter was below the location of Dudian. It looked up at the rope where the dried blood was attach. It roared in anger even though it was aware that it couldn't climb up.

Dudian firmly grabbed onto the rope as he let it go downwards. He had seen the splitter's ability to jump before when it tried to catch Nicholas. So he made sure that the rope stayed four hundred meters away from the ground. He deliberately shook the rope so that the smell of the dried blood was distributed over.

The splitter roared once again and jumped.

Dudian pulled up the rope as he saw this.

Splitter actually was able to jump nearly for four hundred meters but it still couldn't reach the rope.

Dudian stabilized the rope and slowly pushed it down.

The wings at splitter's back began to move as it fell down. It kind of used them to decrease the friction as it reduced the speed of freefall. However a loud noise similar to an earthquake was issued as it landed on ground.

Dudian clutched the rope and moved towards the left to stay away from the entrance.

Splitter followed after the rope as it jumped once more.

Dudian once again pulled the rope and splitter couldn't reach it.

"Master, what about this?" Nicholas was assembling. He asked in hurry as he was holding to the huge base.

Dudian looked back at him: "There are two 20cm long iron bolts. Make sure that you twist the screws properly. There can't a loose part."

Nicholas once more continued to assemble as he heard the intruction from Dudian.

Dudian once more used the rope to lure the splitter.

Splitter repeated jumped for a few times. However after that it

looked up and roared in anger few times. But it didn't continue to jump. Apparently it was aware that jumping was futile.

Dudian pushed down the rope a bit more and kept shaking it.

Splitter couldn't hold back and jumped once more.

Dudian was taken aback as he swayed the rope to the side in hurry.

Splitter couldn't hit the rope. Its wings began to flap as its scythes cut onto the giant wall. It reduced the speed of falling as it squeaked in a low tone. The next moment its body fell to the ground on its back. Splitter somersaulted and slowly climb up. There were green liquid oozing out from its foot joints.

Dudian knew that it was hurt. There was a wide smile on his face. Injuring a level 68 monster wasn't a joke.

Dudian continued to use the rope to lure splitter. He was trying to make sure that splitter consumes a lot of energy.

The splitter stopped jumping up.

Dudian slowly pushed the rope to a lower distance. He stopped it about 200 meters from the ground. The splitter was once more angered as it jumped up.

This time splitter was able to cut the rope.

Dudian pulled up the rope and tied another gauze with dried blood.

The splitter rushed towards the rope that was cut. A moment later it looked up and roared up. The sound was full of anger and killing intent.

Dudian smiled as he pushed down the rope to about three hundred meters from the ground.

After a bit of time Nicholas finally was able to complete assembling the cannon. Dudian gave the rope to Nicholas and said: “Tease it with this. Try to consume its energy and cite it to attack!”

Nicholas stretched his head out from the edge of the giant wall. He saw the splitter roaring in anger. He retracted back his head and looked at Dudian: “Is this alright?”

“Do what I say!” Dudian gave him the rope. He turned towards the giant cannon that was assembled by Nicholas. He pushed it towards the edge of the giant wall. The base of the cannon was two meters long. It’s barrel could easily pushed over the top of the giant wall. It could be adjusted to two hundred and seventy degrees. In short he was able to aim the muzzle to the ground at ease.

Dudian picked up a shark spear. It’s color was close to tungsten

steel color but had a touch od matte black. There was a metal cylinder fixed behind the shark fins of the spear.

Dudian put the shark spear into the barrel. He aimed the muzzle straight down. He adjusted the angle once more.

Dudian took out a match and was ready to ignite the cannon. He was calm as he said to Nicholas in a low tone: “Lure it up! Make it jump! Push the rope down but not too low!”

Nicholas had seen the original drawing so he understood Dudian’s intentions. He kept shaking the rope as he let it fall down.

The splitter was unable to control itself as the rope was lowered to two hundred and fifty meters.

Nice opportunity!

Dudian saw that splitter was about to jump off. He had observed splitter’s actions previously as he had used the rope to lure it up. He was aware of the posture splitter had used before bouncing off. He quickly burned the lead at the back of the barrel. At the same time he grasped with both of his hands form two sides of the barrel in order to prevent the possible change in location after it was fired off. Slight deviation would end up in a very different target.

Whoosh!

Splitter jumped.

Bang!

Flame sprayed out from the muzzle.

Crash

Shark spear broke of through the soft plastic net covering the tip of the barrel and shot straight down. The metal base at the end of the shark spear blew out. The chains at its back spread out promoting the momentum of the shark spear. Actually in less than a second the chains began to fall down too.

At the same time the small metal cylinder at the back of the shark fins of the shark spear bounced as white steam went out.

Steam nozzle!

Dudian had thought of steam nozzle to control the direction of the shark spear as it went down.

The shark spear was rushing down at a rapid speed. Moreover the steam nozzle was helping to go down straight without any deviation.

Everything happened in the blink of an eye. The splitter was able to cut the rope and it was falling down.

Whoosh!

The shark spear rushed at it.

There was no time to leverage in the air. The splitter seemed to feel the shark spear on instinct. It used its scythe like forelimbs to protect its front. The other four scythe like arms were slightly opened as if to attack the shark spear.

Both of them collided in the air!

However the shark spear was in advantage. It had its own weight plus the momentum it had gained after flying down for 900 meters. It's speed had reached frightening velocity. It was carrying destructive power beyond the defensive capabilities of the splitter.

Puff!

The scythe like arm couldn't protect splitter. It passed through and pierced past the body of the splitter. Splitter's body began to fall faster and it couldn't adjust its posture as it fell down. Splitter ruthlessly hit the ground.

There was a trace of surprise on Dudian's face as his calm expression change. He didn't expect to be successful on the first try. He didn't observe the splitter but quickly loaded the second shark spear. The whole action took only about three seconds. He ignited the fire and clutched the barrel to aim at splitter.

Chapter 329

boom!

A deafening sound echoed out as shark spear shoot out from the muzzle. The chain at its back was taken out as the black spear rushed out.

Sounds buzzed and hummed in Dudian's ears. He was too sensitive to the smell. He frowned as he felt pungent smell of smoke. He quickly glanced at the giant black shadow at the foot of the giant wall.

In less than two seconds the shark spear had already reached 500 meters. If it was shot when it was parallel to the ground then the effect would not be so great. But at the moment its speed was increased by its own weight and gravity pulling it down. Moreover because of the steam nozzles on the shark fins the shark spear was flying much more fast. An ordinary bullet shot from the pistol would reach only 400m/s. At the moment the giant shark spear had reached such speeds and its destruction force was at least tens of times better than a bullet.

Roar!

The splitter seems to have sensed the oncoming shark spear when it was half the way from the ground. It growled in anger as it struggled to stand up. However its strength was affected by the serious injury caused with the successful hit of the previous shark spear. A green liquid was splashing out from the convex where the

joints of the three scythe like arms was located. The thin wings flapped like transparent metal plates. It's body got up as it tried to move.

Puff!

The splitter was able to recede at the last moment. However sharp shark spear still hit its body. Splitter roared in pain.

Dudian didn't have time to attend the results so he quickly picked up the third sharp scream. He shouted at Nicholas to prepare the fourth one while he was working on the third shark spear.

Dudian immediately adjusted the muzzle as he loaded the third shark spear into the barrel. He aimed at the splitter. As he heard its roars he knew that the second spear had successfully hit it too. He saw that the tail of the shark spear was exposed and the chains were on the ground. The end of the chain was connected to the shark spear. IT was tightly wrapped around the body of the splitter.

It was not a coincidence but because of suction.

Dudian had planned in details as he pondered how to kill the splitter. He had gone step by step as he scruitnised the plan into extreme details. The chain was part of the plan too. Right now both the chain and the shark spear were attracted to each other.

Originally he had thought that the magnet's strength wouldn't be

enough to attract each other because of the splitter's size. So he thought that after shooting six or seven shark spears for magnets on shark spear to be able to attract the magnetic chains. Fortunately for him the second shark spear had attracted the chain and they were tightly wrapped.

"The God is in my side! Today you won't escape!" There was fierceness in Dudian's eyes as he adjusted the muzzle. He lit the cannon to shoot the third shark spear.

Boom!

The third shark spear was launched.

Dudian's ears almost went deaf as he heard a lot of blur. Moreover his hands were feeling hot. Although he had smelted the barrel perfectly and resistible to the heat but after three consecutive shots it had been heated up. He knew that after the fourth consecutive shot it would be hard for him to balance the barrel with his hands.

Splitter growled in anger on the ground. It waved its scythes against the chain made of tungsten steel. However only the tinkling sounds echoed. If its strength wasn't affected then it seems the splitter would be able to directly cut them off. Moreover chain was a soft weapon. It's power was dispersed. As it cut it from the blocks then other part of the chain was still attracted to splitter's body.

The splitter stood up from the ground. This time it seemed that it

was long aware of the attack. The third shark spear had gone about 700 meters when splitter rolled over to another side and stood up. It began to run away.

Bang!

The third shark spear shot down onto the ground and pierced through the soil. It's momentum was very strong. The chain that followed it was dragged down too.

Dudian frowned as he grabbed the shark spear from Nicholas and loaded it into the barrel. He aimed at the splitter's direction. His hands clenched onto the hot barrel's handle as he adjusted the angle.

As an archer he was used to long distance shots.

Boom!

A heat wave came off the barrel. Dudian was using both hands to tightly hold the barrel. His right hand shrank back on instinct. He released his left hand too. Dudian no longer loaded shark spears as he tightly stared at the fourth shark spear which was shot.

Black sharp spear shot through the air. The steam nozzle opened and sprayed white waves. It was like a black shark moving at fast speeds in the ocean.

Splitter wasn't running very fast. It's body was deeply wounded

with two shark spears. Moreover few of its scythe like limbs were wrapped with chains and its balance was down. It couldn't run at full speed.

Splitter went towards to bushes to hid but everything was in vain as the sharp spear was rapidly approaching. It bounced sideways to avoid the shooting trajectory of the shark spear.

Splitter was intelligent enough to understand after several attacks that shark spear could only attack on straight line.

However it had miscalculated this time.

It was struggling to jump to the side when sharp spear turned slightly and chased after it.

Most of the biological forms that lived on the land don't have experience against defending the attacks form the sky. Splitter was no exception. It could only try to run faster but the distance was diminishing at high rate.

Everything happened in the blink of an eye. There was no time to think or judge.

Pop! Shark spear shot down and hit the splitter's body. The splitter was knocked down and rolled forward for seven or eight laps. Because of the magnet on the shark spear the previous two chains were attracted towards splitter's body. It was like snake had wrapped around its prey.

Chapter 330

Dudian was overjoyed at sight. He was anxious to load a shark spear and use it once more. However he restrained himself. If he continued to launch then the barrel would most likely burst.

Nicholas's eyes were full of shock as he overlooked the splitter that was running away. He didn't expect that even such a terrible monster would in an awkward situation in front of this teenager. Although he didn't have much knowledge about the monster but he knew that the it was an unusual monster. Otherwise a person like Dudian who was close to senior hunting in terms of physique would not prepare large number of methods and select such a terrain to attack the monster.

The most that made him shocked was the weapon assembled. The destructive power of the giant spears were simply scare. He couldn't think how the barbarians would dare to invade if they had such weapons on the forts.

In addition to the weapons the most he felt threatened by was Dudian himself. Nicholas had never met such a terrifying person. Not to mention that the latter looked like a tender young boy. The last shark spear which Dudian had loaded and shot had insidious prejudgment and calculation involved in it.

His perception of Dudian had change in this period of short ten seconds. Before he thought that Dudian was more mature in comparison to the people of his age. He was a talented youth who was able to become a senior architect. Nicholas thought of him as a rare character. But at the moment he thought of Dudian was a

devil covered in human skin. The kid was cold, calculating and had the extraordinary wisdom to forge terrifying weapons. Nicholas thought that only devil could be like him. Overlooking everything!

Nicholas once again regretted offending such a monster by prematurely exposing his ambitions. At the moment he was speechless as he looked at the hideous monster that was thousands of meters away. Its body was wrapped in chain as it struggled to move.

“Give me the bow.” Dudian’s voice pulled Nicholas back to reality.

Nicholas had goose bumps the moment he heard Dudian’s words. He reacted on instinct as he looked for Dudian’s bow and arrows. He picked them up and gave them to Dudian.

Dudian grabbed the bow and arrows but didn’t look at Nicholas. His eyes were firmly locked on splitter who was desperately struggling. Finally it was able to cut off one of the chains and restore back its mobility. It quickly rushed forward as its speed was better than the past.

Dudian’s eyes narrowed as he held onto the bow and took a step forward. He stood on the edge of the giant wall as he faced the cold wind that blew against his clothing.

Nicholas’s face turned white as he saw Dudian’s bold move. He was aware that they were at least a kilometer higher than the ground and the wind was fierce. A bit of carelessness would end in

a devastating situation.

Dudian was not nervous as he slowly opened his arms. He was holding the bow in one hand. It looked like he was embracing the wind.

Dudian's body slowly leaned forward and he suddenly jumped!

Whoosh!

Dudian's body shot down.

Nicholas jumped out in fear as he would never think that Dudian would be so short sighted and make a suicide at this point.

He rushed to the edge of the giant wall as he looked up and down.

Nicholas saw Dudian's body was flying down. The kids head was down while he feet were facing the sky.

Nicholas mind went blank. Why would he make a suicide now? He couldn't figure out but the scene in front of his eyes was the truth.

In about after 100 meters of free fall suddenly a semi-circular fabric appeared in Dudian's armpits. His speed was greatly reduced as he rapidly glided away. The people from the old era would find the scene extremely familiar. It was the equipment from the

extreme sports – gliding. At the moment Dudian was using it to hunt the monster.

Nicholas's eyeballs almost protruded and popped out. He was stunned at sight. A flying person!

Whoosh!

There was tension in Dudian's heart as it was his first test flight and the first time he applied this method in actual combat. However he was against a legendary monster which was deemed to be level 68.

At the moment the wind whistled in his ears. His arm slightly shook as he adjusted the gliding angle. After sliding through for two or three hundred meters he got used to the sense of the wind. Dudian was able to grasp more about controlling the gliding process. The wilderness and soil at the bottom was rapidly overtaken. The blood boiled as Dudian's hormones soared in excitement and adrenaline.

As he was about five hundred meters above the ground Dudian tried to adjust the angle to follow the splitter.

Although the speed of gliding was fast but running speed of the splitter was much faster. Previously he was looking at it from the giant wall so he didn't have close visual contact to see how fast it moves. But the closer he got the better he saw the speed of the splitter. Moreover this was its injured state!

Boom!

The splitter moved forward. Along the way its body chopped large dents on the ground. The distance between it and Dudian quickly opened. At the moment when Dudian was about two hundred meters above the ground he could only see splitter as a small black spot which was running away. It was about to disappear from his sight.

Dudian refused to glide as used his hand to pull the string on his backpack. The backpack was pumped open as a fluffy clothing burst out. It was parachute.

Dudian had planned this as a life insurance while climbing the giant wall.

Dudian slowly descended to the ground after the parachute opened. He rolled after he landed and quickly unlocked the backpack. He held onto the bow as he looked at the direction the splitter had run.

The real hunting was starting now!

It also meant that he was now risking his own life.

Chapter 331

Whoosh!

There was tension in Dudian's heart. After all the splitter could sense his smell and turn back to kill him at any time. It would be almost impossible to escape at that situation. But he had the courage to track down the splitter as there was another point which he took into the account. Splitter would be afraid of the unknown enemy that had hurt it. And it would know that unknown enemy was in the direction of the giant wall. So there was a very rare chance for it to turn back.

Moreover Dudian didn't have to worry about encountering other monsters. Splitter was the overlord of this area. The monsters that sensed its smell would have nothing but fear.

Dudian didn't encounter other monster after thirty kilometers of tracking. He knew that the monsters around this area were nothing but snack for splitter but he didn't expect that there will be such an after effect.

Dudian gradually reduced his speed after another ten kilometers. He took out undead powder and spilled over his body. Although the splitter wasn't picky and would eat the undeads but his main aim was to cover his own smell. He wanted to make sure that the smell sensed by the splitter near the giant wall wouldn't overlap with the smell that it may sense right now.

Dudian came close to a four-story residential building. The tiles

on the walls have been worn off and the green moss had covered almost every inch of the building.

He sense the activities of the bone rats inside the building. There was a rotten smell of the undead coming from inside. It seems that it had been killed quite a while ago.

He was able to distinguish it easily because of his experiences.

Dudian climbed to the top of the building. He almost fell down at one point when his foot went through the hole in the wall and he lost the balance.

Dudian instinctively bent down on the roof as he overlooked at the distance. There was a figure which was almost thirty meters tall. It was sitting in the middle of a ruined street. There were several collapsed buildings in its surroundings buried under vines and moss.

Splitter laid on the ground. It seems it was taking a break. The green liquefied kept oozing out from the places where three shark spears had pierced its body.

Dudian's eyes lit up. He didn't think that the splitter would be so tenacious. He was aware that shark spear's destructive power didn't lie on its attacking speed but the venoms that he had put inside it.

Dudian would buy three different points from the Temple every

day. The architects from the wood faction were able to buy and collect all kinds of toxins. The most toxic ones would be limited to sales of few pounds a day. However Dudian was able to buy thousand kilograms of poison! If there were no antidotes then the sales of these poisons would be banned by the Temple long ago.

Dudian deliberately forged shark fins on spears. He made them so that the poison could play a role too. Each fin was filled with mercury. Inside the mercury there was poison which was covered with a thin layer of metal.

The mercury would instantly burst and break apart after the shark spear pierced the body of the splitter. It would pour into the splitter body. In addition the toxins would also infiltrate its body through the blood. There would be unexpected effects if the poison directly infiltrated into important body parts. Moreover Dudian had carefully selected the poisons. Some of them were liquid while the other was in powder form. A drop of that mix would instantly kill an adult person!

Splitter had tenacious vitality as it could run away and rest right now after being pierced by three shark spears.

“Didn’t mercury burst out? The venom has yet to infiltrate its body?” Dudian was doubtful. He was quietly calculating the time it would take for those three poisons to affect the splitter.

If it didn’t die on its own then he was planning to run away.

As for hunting

He would not dare to risk to move unless the latter is disabled and at the door of death. The attack power of arrows against it was close to zero. Dudian had taken bow and arrows to guard against other monsters.

Dudian was fortunate that splitter was an attack type monster. It's body was like razors all over it. If he was against a monster which was a defense type and at the same level as splitter then he calculated that he wouldn't be able to pierce through even if he used tank shells.

Time passed in silence.

The splitter lied on the ground to rest. It seemed to be reluctant to move at all.

Dudian didn't know whether it was resting because it was tired or the venom was affecting it and it was difficult for it move. After a long time of wait he tried to use arrows to check splitter's reaction but he eventually held back. He would be courting death if the splitter was resting but not affected by the poison.

He could only wait and continue to observe. The majority of the hunter would encounter such problems.

"Ten hours... Eighteen hours...It would take eighteen hours." Dudian's eyes lit up: "Its physique is totally different to a humans. Father had told me that be referencing wrong data there would be mismatch and inevitable failure as a result. I can't be tempted and

can’t use arrows right now.”

After a while he thought about the small cluster of the dried blood in his armor. Dudian’s eyes lit up as he went back into the building. In the absence of the electricity the building was dark. The windows were covered with vines and dust.

Dudian sense the smell and went into a corner.

Whoosh!

He jumped past and grabbed a rat. He held onto its neck so that it couldn’t bite his wrist.

The rat’s companions retracted back into the cave after it was caught. They went through the holes into the other parts of the building.

Dudian didn’t care about the others. He grabbed onto the rat as he went back to the roof. He pulled out the dried blood and wrapped it with gauze over the rats neck. He made it so to prevent the rat from tearing it off.

The rat was anxious as it squeaked. It seemed to be afraid of the foul smell coming off from Dudian.

Dudian throw away the rat.

At the moment he was about two or three kilometers away from the splitter. The rat fall onto the ground about seven or eight hundred meters away from the splitter.

Dudian bent down as he watched the splitter. The splitter's huge body moved after the rat fell onto the grass. Dudian was able to see a huge eye hidden under its body. Dudian was surprised as the hair on his body was erected. It was like a deadly snake was staring at him.

Chapter 332

Squeak!

The bloodstained rat fell onto the dense grass. It rolled around for seven or eight times and came to stop. However it wasn't dead but was screaming in pain. It's body tumbled as it tried to climb up. But its feet were broken and it couldn't stand firmly as much as it tried to pedal. The best it could do was crawling on ground and slowly dragging its body.

Dudian was hiding behind a broken construct while only his eyes were revealed. He didn't care much about the rat's death. Actually the rat would catch splitter attention at all. The real test to splitter would the dried blood wrapped with gauze on rat's back.

Dudian waited for a minute as a gentle breeze whistled past. Generally everything was like solidified except the squeaks coming from the rat which tried to move. No movement at all. Dudian's heartbeat accelerated as he waited for another ten seconds. There was no movement from splitter. He pulled out bow and arrow. He moved through the desolate street towards a place which had thick weeds grown. They were able to cover his stature.

"I have to hit its flaw!"

Dudian was aware that it was the most dangerous moment. He was personally going to give the fatal blow to the monster and it may be the only opportunity that he has!

The previous night as he went to feed the splitty he also observed it as much as he could. Actually as it was a legendary monster there wasn't much of an information about it either in Temple of the Elements or monster atlas. Observing such a monster like he did was a precious opportunity.

Dudian had found two weakness by closely observing splitty's body.

The first was its eye.

The eye was the weak part for the most creatures. Splitter was not an exception too. But there was a solid protective layer outside it eyelid. It was a rare evolution to be seen as the thickness of the layer was about three centimeters. It would be difficult for an ordinary pistol bullet to pierce through that layer.

Therefore if he wanted to shoot at its eye then he had to find the perfect moment when the eyelids were open.

The second weak part of the splitter was its anus.

The splitter's scythe like arms accounted for more than 80 percent of its body. The remaining 20 percent consisted of its head and trunk. Actually it was a bit alarming as most of its trunk was flat and its surface was covered in solid layer of shell. The edge was very sharp. If compared to human then it would be the waist. But it was like a sharp blade which could be used to attack the enemy.

It’s mouth had a crusty cover but its draining organ had no protection. As long as an arrow could be shot into it then the harm would be caused.

Whoosh!

Dudian moved through the grass as he positioned himself behind the splitter. The previous dried blood powder was made to bait it. He was assured to get into closer range after he saw that splitter wasn’t able to move.

Soon, Dudian was about hundred and fifty meters away from the splitter. It was his effective range. Actually right now he could hit from 300 meters but at 150 meters distance the destructive power of his shots reached the highest precision and destructiveness!

Dudian bent over in the bushes. He looked at the 30 meter tall giant that was in front of him. He was quietly taking slow breathes. His heart was nervous as his body had gone cold.

Dudian made a few steps to relocate his body to adjust the angle of his vision. Scythe like limbs were all around its body. There were several angles that could be used to attack because of the gaps. However he choose the straight line. He took out an arrow and looked at the target.

“Only this arrow …”

Dudian slightly narrowed his eyes as he took a deep breath. He

had locked onto the splitter's anus.

Whoosh!

The arrow was shot!

Dudian didn't stand in place like a silly person to check the result but turned and ran away.

In the blink of an eye the arrow penetrated through the splitter's anus. It growled loudly in pain as its huge body slowly turned towards the bushes. Splitter had detected Dudian who was running away. It roared as it moved to catch up with him.

Dudian's face changed as he didn't expect that splitter had such a strength. He took out another arrow which had rope tied to it. He shot the arrow at a distant building. He grabbed the rope as he stomped and tied to another building's block.

Bang!

Splitter collided with the rope and the building collapsed in a loud crash.

Dudian didn't run in a straight line but jumped down from a broken gap. He was aware that this place was a city once upon a time and there was sewers and subway under the ground.

Dudian jumped down without a second thought. Because of the black death season the water had been dried. He had landed in subway station. Dudian was not surprised as eariler on when he was running through the bushes he had seen the roadside signs. Although the writing was fuzzy because of suppression of the dust but he was able to identify as there were traces of residual signs.

He looked up and saw the black metro wagon that was in the distance.

Moreover before he had attacked the splitter he had felt a strong smell which was exuding from the underground. It meant that there was a platform somewhere close or else such a strong rotten smell would be picked up by his nose.

Bang

Dudian rushed into the wagon as he crashed through the front window. There were two rows of seats where the bodies were lying down. Most of them were covered with thick dusty bones. The flesh and blood had completely rotted after years or were eaten by insects. In addition there was a man who looked like eighty years old. His body was bleak and brown. He looked like a mummy.

Dudian saw these mummies but he didn't care much as he rushed through the wagon.

The mummified person suddenly opened its eyes as Dudian was passing from his side. It's hand moved to catch Dudian but it wasn't fast enough. The only thing that was caught by it was

empty air. The other mummified people opened their eyes because of the noise as if the evil spirits had recovered. One by one they shook their bodies as they stood up. Their dry wrinkled face were grimy as they growled and rushed towards Dudian.

Dudian had smeared undead powder but because he was in hurry and worried about splitter's attack he had been very nervous. He had sweated and it had overflowed over the smell of undead powder.

"It was written that undead's are afraid of fire. They follow the sound and move accordingly. In case of total silence the undeal would fall into sleep. They can sleep all year round... " Dudian rushed all the way through. Every metro wagon had about seven or eight undeads sleeping in them. Due to no light and no food their skin had dried down because of water shortages.

The undeads within the subway recovered with the appearance of Dudian. They roared as they tried to catch up with Dudian.

Dudian took out the undead powder and continue to coat his body.

Rumble ~

A violent sound burst out as splitter's huge body went through the gap and got into the subway station.

Dudian felt the ground under his feet shake left and right for a

moment. A harsh sound echoed out.

“It wouldn’t cut through the wagon, right?”

Actually the forelimbs of the splitter were able to cut off the wagons.

Dudian didn’t dare to pause and he kept rushing away.

Some of the undeads sensed the smell of splitter and went towards it. Other were still running behind Dudian.

The undeads were fearless. It didn’t take long for about dozen undeads gather in front of the splitter. They tried to attack the giant.

The splitter roared and waved its forelimbs. The scythes cut off the undeads that were running at it. However some of them were cut in half and their upper bodies still tried to climb over the splitter’s body.

The splitter ignored this little undeads as it waved its scythe arm towards the first wagon. It cut off the wagon and roared twice. However it didn’t continue forward but climbed back out.

Because of its movement the number of undeads that attacked splitter were increasing. They sensed the smell of blood oozing out of it. They run over in excitement.

The two slender scythe like arms at splitter's back stroked the bodies of the undeads that tried to attack it. The undeads were cut into two as soon as the scythe like arm touched them.

Dudian went past through the wagon. He kicked open the door and saw three corpses lying on the ground. Thick dust had accumulated over their bodies. The flesh and blood had long been rotten and the black bones were left.

There was also a remnant of a man wearing a cap sitting in the driver seat of the locomotive.

Dudian went over and turned the man's head. Half of his face had dried up while the other part was ripped off into parts. The teeth and cheekbones were exposed as a result.

Dudian used the dagger to stab onto its head and crush it. He took out the cold crystal and kicked open the front window of the locomotive. He jumped into the platform and went to another one. He was relieved as he saw that splitter wasn't chasing after him.

"It's very difficult to kill it if I rely on my bow and arrow to hit its weakness ..." Dudian frowned as he thought about other hunting methods.

Roar!

The undeads also followed out from the broken window. But they

didn’t have understanding of jumping so their landing posture was ugly. Some of the landed on their heads.

Dudian kicked up the one which tried to approach him.

Bang!

The boots of the hunters were made out of extremely hard allows. The undead’s head twisted sideways and broke down because of cervical dislocation as a result of Dudian’s powerful kick.

Dudian kicked another two undeads and turned to run away from the subway station. He didn’t want to struggle with these undeads.

Dudian went out of the subway to see a desolate empty field. He frowned as he had almost used all the methods that he could think of. He was going to try the old and reliable method which had used quite a few times. He was going to lure other monsters to attack the splitter.

However the splitter was totally different from all other monsters that he had hunted. Even if it was injured its level was much more higher than any monster near this area. The strongest monster that he could find would be around level 20s. Moreover in case he was able to lure it towards the splitter the monster would be scared and flee at the first chance.

“I can only try no matter what. Perhaps I can find a few bold

ones. ” Dudian thought more but he eventually decided to use this old method.

Whoosh!

He turned and ran as he had sensed a smell about dozen miles away.

It didn’t take long before Dudian reached the source of this smell. He looked at a black figure which was about four meter in height. It’s body was covered in sharp hair. It was looking like a giant boar. Moreover it had six curved white fangs.

“Snow teeth pig. Level 24 monster …” Dudian immediately recognized the monster. It was one of the more popular monster that nobles preferred. It’s fangs were the favorite collection materials of the aristocrats. You could see many art pieces carved out of snow teeth pig’s fangs in noble houses.

“It’s going to be faster thank me. I gotta take a risk now.” Dudian took a deep breath and went forward to stop about six hundred meters away from the monster.

The snow teeth pig’s attention was caught as Dudian used the arrows. It turned to see Dudian waving at it from far away. There was a trace of brutal madness in its eyes as it growled and rushed at Dudian.

Dudian turned and ran away.

Rumble~~

Snow teeth pig was like a tank that run at high speeds. It would cause earthquake like tremors as it moved.

Dudian was scared as he looked back. The distance between them was closing down as time passed. He turned his head and rushed out as fast as he can.

However he heard a loud noise and screams echoing from behind. He turned back to see that snow teeth pig had fallen to the ground. It’s body rolled a few times and stopped. It didn’t stood up as it stayed there motionless.

Dudian was stunned.

He saw the a purple shadow which was similar to a human’s shape was behind the snow teeth pig.

The next moment he was able to distinguish the figure. It was actually a girl who was wearing a purple tang suit!

Chapter 333

Dudian was stunned.

The girl was white. She had soft black hair white was opposite of her clear skin color. There was a pattern of hideous monster engraved on her purple tang suit. But the most striking thing about the girl was the half meter high black hilt of a sword exposed over her shoulder. There was a round gem in the middle which looked like an eyeball after a careful look.

Dudian stared as he stood still. The girl's every step spanned more than ten meters as she approached Dudian. In the blink of an eye she was about two or three meters away from Dudian. She looked up and down as she measured him: "Kiddo, are you a hunter?" Her sound was pleasant to hear but she had a cold tone.

Dudian was surprised. If analyzed form the accent then the girl should be from inner wall. But the people in north used this accent too: "I'm a hunter from the New World consortium. Do you belong to Huasheng or Green consortium?" The two consortia were commanding the areas close to them so he tried to misled her.

The girl wearing the purple tang suit nodded but didn't directly answer Dudian's question: "Have you heard huge movements in this area while you have been hunting? Have you seen massive dents left by a monster?"

Dudian was startled as he shook his head: "I just came out to hunt today. I haven't seen any monsters. Is this some kind of a

ferocious monster?” However his face was tense.

The girl looked back at him: “Your expression has betrayed you. Your age is small but your mind is not. But don’t forget blind greed eventually leads to death. The monster that you have seen isn’t something that could be digested by a small consortium. I’m not aware if you know but I will still remind you that it is level 68 monster called splitter. Even if all the senior hunters from all those consortia were dispatched they would not be nothing but a snack in front of it. Moreover I have just saved your life. You better be more honest and tell me the truth. Or else I won’t be so forgiving!”

Dudian’s face slightly changed as he didn’t expect the girl who was similar to him at age to be so sharp. It seems the other side was aware about the information on splitter. Moreover she even dared to search for the splitter! Isn’t it courting for death? Is she just trying to gather intelligence?

His eyes lit up as Dudian stared back at the girl: “I would be able to kill that monster without your help too. However I will write down your kindness. As for the splitter it is in the vicinity. But you have said that it is a legendary monster which is level 68 so I advise you not to get close to it and leave as soon as possible.”

The girl was relieved as she heard Dudian’s words: “It seems I’m not in the wrong place.” She grabbed Dudian’s shoulder: “Well, where is it? Where did you see its footprints?”

“You should still go back. Even if we find it there is no room for fight. Maybe it will roam into the wilderness tomorrow.”

“I’m not going to ask for the second time.” There was a trace of coldness as the girl looked at Dudian.

Dudian felt dangerous feeling from her eyes. His heart was shocked to see that the girl had such a killing intent. It seems she was even stronger than Glenn. Maybe she was a top senior hunter or an existence above it. She was able to kill a level 24 snow teeth pig with a knock which was prove of this point.

“Alright, I’ll take you.” Dudian softened immediately.

There was no rule of law and order outside the giant wall so he could only obey as he was in an inferior position.

“Hmpf!” The girl snorted as she pushed Dudian’s body: “Quick! If it rans away then you will be the sacrifice to my Blood Baron!”

Dudian slightly smiled. Although he wasn’t aware what ‘Blood Baron’ was but he was clear on meaning of the word ‘sacrifice’. He immediately turned away and ran back. Dudian wasn’t planning to anger her and lose his life.

It wasn’t long before went into the subway station as the girl followed after him. Huge footprints and the half cut bodies of the undeads were everywhere.

The girl’s face slightly changed as she saw the traces of destruction caused by the splitter. She slowly raised her hand and

caught the hilt of the wide sword. The edges of the sword blade were groovy like shark fins. This structure made it so that after an attack the bleeding of the monster wouldn't stop and can't heal in the short term.

The blood red sword was about three meters long. The width of the blade was as long as her own waist.

Dudian carefully observed the girl as he lead the way. The girl seemed more casual and answered most of his question. Moreover Dudian learned that the 'Blood Baron' she was referring to was the blood sword that she was carrying!

"Alright, I have found the footprints. You can roll away." The girl looked elegant and noble but there wasn't the slightest touch of courtesy in her manners.

Dudian was speechless as she stared back at her: "It should be somewhere near here! You better leave away right now!"

"Long-winded!" The girl put back the sword and headed in the direction of the footsteps. Her one hand was clenched the hilt of the sword while she moved. It seemed like she was ready to deal with any attack from the surroundings.

Dudian compared her posture with the mad fishermen who enjoyed the storms.

The girl seemed to hear some movement. She went towards the

crashed entrance of the subway station and stopped before the gap. She braked so abruptly that Dudian was surprised. It seems that the previous running to her was like trotting to ordinary person.

The girl looked down the gap as a wide smile curled up on her face: “Finally found you!” She glanced back as she heard the sounds coming from the back: “You are acting recklessly!” She said in a cold tone towards Dudian but recovered her eyes the next moment. She wasn’t worried about safety of Dudian or anyone else.

Whoosh!

She held onto the hilt of the sword as she jumped in.

She saw the body of the huge splitter as soon as she landed down. There were undeads which were cut into pieces but still tried to climb over the splitter’s body.

The girl was startled as she saw the splitter’s appearance. Her eyes narrowed as she saw the chaos in splitter’s body. It was covered in black chains and there were sharp thorn like weapons pierced onto its body. She was quite shocked. Did someone else was trying to hunt this monster?

Roar!

The splitter seemed to feel the danger. It’s body which was lying moved and stood up. The wagon which was close to it overturned.

It’s body was looking at the girl. It issued low and vigorous roars in anger as splitter looked at the little figure in front of it.

The girl took a deep breath as her dark eyes stared at splitter. Suddenly she rushed out.

Dudian was close to the gap as he secretly watch the girl’s actions. He was shocked as he saw her rush out towards the splitter. Is she crazy?

She dared to attack from front knowing that the splitter is a level 68 monster!

The splitter angrily roared as it saw the girl who rapidly approached it. It’s scythes began to cut out as it didn’t underestimate the enemy. It seems that splitter took the girl as a dangerous enemy.

The girl’s speed soared as she reached ten meters away from splitter. Her body blurred as it seems she had reached the speed of a bullet shot from the pistol. It was very difficult to see her figure. In an instant she arrived in front of the splitter.

Chapter 334

Whoosh!

The girl leaped over.

The dirty gray bandage that was wrapped around the sword fell off and suddenly disintegrated as the dark red sword shined. It was like a bloodthirsty evil monster was flashing out in excitement. The sword as if a bloody crescent moon mercilessly chopped onto the splitter's body.

The splitter screamed and waved the other two scythe like arms. The two limbs that it used was twice the width of the front limbs. Although it seemed that splitter was trying to attack but in reality it was using the scythes to defend itself. The two scythes were used like huge giant doors to resist the sword attack. The Blood Baron in girl's hand hit the scythes!

Boom!

A pit was made on the ground because of the power of the attack.

The splitter's huge body was caught in pit as its bloody black scythe like limbs produced strong airflow. The dust on the ground rolled out.

Dudian was taken aghast as he saw the girl's toes touch the scythe like limb of the splitter and push her body. She

somersaulted in a 180 degree and stepped on the sharp edge of the other giant scythe like limb. Once more her toes pushed onto the scythe like limb and her body was thrown towards splitter as the Blood Baron swept out.

Bang!

The splitter's body was startled as the one of the scythe like arms was split and blood splashed out. The green liquid spewed around too.

The girl pulled back the sword which jagged across the wound making the blood spill more quicker.

The splitter roared sharply as it wielded another scythe over.

However the girl acted faster than splitter could react. Her body moved over the scythe like limb and her arm swung the Blood Baron. The sword made a bloody dance as it directly cut the joint connecting the scythe like limb to splitter body.

Everything thing happened very fast in a matter of few breathes. The girl was like a purple shadow which moved right and left in front of the splitter. The shark spears and chain that was over the splitter's body had made it movement very slow. The Blood Baron was constantly cutting out a wound or dent at its body.

Dudian was stunned.

Is this the power of a ‘human being’?

Boom!

The girl moved towards the back of the splitter which Dudian couldn’t observe from the angle he was looking at. The splitter issued painful screams. The next moment one more scythe like arm fall down as blood and green liquid spewed out.

Whoosh!

The girl jumped from the splitter’s body and landed about ten meters away from it. The splitter’s blood was flowing down the Blood Baron.

The battle had ended in just ten seconds.

Splitter had lost!

Dudian looked at the girl whose chest violently went up and down. He had forgotten to cover up his emotions as the shocked facial expression was on his face.

He had expected lots of different outcomes. He had considered that the girl had extraordinary strength but never imagined that she was so terrifying. Is she considered as a “human”?

Is this the level to which human beings can evolve to?

Is she a senior hunter?

The girl breathed for a moment as she restored her calm. Although the battle was short but she had consumed a lot of energy. She rushed up once more towards the dying splitter.

Bang! Bang! The splitter was beheaded under her sword.

A legendary monster was killed just like that!

Dudian had witnessed the whole process. He would have never imagined that a girl who looks so beautiful and exquisite would have such a strength! He was secretly regretting coming after her. If he had really known her capabilities he would not have kept up with her! Apparently it was too late to run away as she could effortlessly catch up with him.

Dudian’s face has turned ugly. At the moment he had lost the magic marks of the splitter. In addition it was likely that he was going to lose his own small life.

The girl stabbed the sword through the wound into splitter’s corpse. It wasn’t easy for her to move because of her purple qipao.

She opened the side of the qipao and opened the pocket that was tied to her wild slender leg. She took out a small red bottle and unscrewed it. She spilled red powder onto the blood.

Afterwards she pulled out a metal cylinder which was as thick as a wrist. She opened the cylinder and quietly waited.

Soon a black object began to slowly crawl up the surface of the sword. It was a finger thick black worm.

Dudian's eyes lit up as he watched from the sidelines of the gap. It was the parasitic soul worm of the splitter that he had spent a lot of time to acquire. This parasitic worm was about 10 times bigger than the usual ones he had seen before. It looked like a fat adult leech.

The girl stretched out two fingers and with a twist threw the parasitic worm into the metal cylinder. She covered the lid and put it back into her pocket in the legging. She turned her head and looked at Dudian. Her hand was raised as she used her finger to call for him.

Dudian's eyes moved from her leg to the girl's face. He sighed in relief as he saw that she didn't seem to have any killing intent. He carefully went from the gap: "I have a way to prove to you that I won't talk!"

The girl giggle as she saw the cautious look on Dudian's face. She ridiculed him: "But only the dead can keep secrets..."

Dudian saw the expression on her face and faintly guessed that she was intimidating him. However he was still nervous. The weak would always be sorrowful. His heart was full of anger because of his own weakness. He brainstormed as he approached her. There

were many ways to keep secrets in addition to dying.

The girl gently smiled: “I don’t know how you dared to fight the splitter as you are so afraid of the death.” She deeply looked at Dudian.

Dudian’s heart went cold. He knew that she had noticed and was aware of the chain and spears: “How would I dare to battle with it? Most probably powerful people like you have injured it’s body. I’m just an intermediate hunter. I don’t have such an ability to kill it.”

The girl continued: “There are several undeads which have been killed and your shoes are stained with their traces. Is this a coincidence? Besides, as far as I know no-one would use such means and tactics to attack the splitter. I will appreciate your courage whether you admit or deny your involvement!”

Dudian’s face changed as he heard her reasoning: “I admit that I caused the injury but I borrowed some equipment do it. Moreover I was very lucky.”

The girl narrowed her eyes as she looked up and down at Dudian. After a moment she smiled: “It’s rare to meet such a funny kid. What is your name?”

Dudian was speechless as he saw the girl call him ‘kid’. Actually she was a young girl which pretended to be old. Of course, strength-wise he was a kid in front of her: “My name is Dean. What about yours?”

The girl seemed interested: “Do you dare to ask my name?”

“Its part of the reciprocation.” Dudian continued: “You know me and I know you. It is fair.”

The girl continued: “It is very fair. But aren’t you afraid that I will kill you?”

“I’m afraid.” Dudian looked at her: “But you shouldn’t kill me because I asked your name.”

The girl stared back at him: “But the problem is you are not worthy to know my name. You will be qualified to know me after you have the ability to enter the inner wall.”

Chapter 335

Dudian was silent.

The difference between the inner and outer wall (slum, residential district and commercial district) was very large. It was out of reach for the ancient aristocratic families such as Mel and Burong. It didn't matter how well he was known in the outer wall area as long as he wasn't part of the inner wall.

"This monster had created waves outside the giant wall and I was commissioned to behead it." The girl looked at Dudian with interest: "Originally with my abilities I would be injured while trying to behead it. Most probably it would have run away too. But I didn't think that a little hunter like you would have folded its hands. So I have picked up a cheap deal. I owe you one kiddo!"

Dudian's mouth slightly twitched. For few endless days and nights he had kept smelting the tungsten steel, improving shark spear, and coming up with different methods for only one purpose which was to kill the adult splitter. Now that chance was taken away from him in front of his eyes and there was nothing that he could do. He didn't expect that he would be a step late to grab this fat chance. He estimated that it was clearly the Holy Church which had informed the inner wall. Maybe even the equipment used by her is made by the Holy Church.

The girl smiled as she saw the expression on Dudian's face. She continued in a leisurely manner: "I assume you were after the parasitic worm of this legendary monster. Although I don't need this thing but people above have interest in it. Moreover it's

harmful to you taking into account your constitution. If I was not here and even if you were lucky enough to kill the splitter you would end up dead. It would be your own funeral."

Dudian had already dispelled the idea of getting magic marks after getting insight into her strength. But he frowned as he heard her words: "Dead?"

The girl said: "Of course, Your aim was the parasitic worm from the beginning. And if you got your hands on it you would certainly try to absorb it as soon as possible. This way you would die! After you would use the parasitic worm it would take less than two days for you to die!"

Dudian was startled as he had never heard of such a thing. However the girl was strong enough which meant that there was no need for her to deceive him. Was she trying to deliberately to tease him? Dudian was skeptical: "How can I die after absorbing the parasitic worm?"

The girl explained: "Of course you will be in danger. Actually a person would choke to death if they fall into water for long enough. Let alone if exposed to such a dangerous thing. This worm has been living in the splitter's body which is a level 68 monster. Do you know how powerful its body is? Although parasitic worm would die after injecting to your body but do you know that splitter's body contains at least ten times more energy than you? Even though the parasitic worm would be dead but its instincts will still exist. It will be responsible for transformation of your body on instinct. That's how it provides magic marks but in exchange it absorb the energy from your body. Your body can't

supply the energy needs of such a parasitic worm. Ultimately it would backfire by sucking the essence of your life!”

Dudian was perplexed.

The girl continued: “You hunters aren’t aware of this matter because none of you were able to kill a monster which was several times stronger than you. You are quite an exception who as a intermediate hunter dared to go after a legendary monster. But some major forces have verified the knowledge what I have told you. A body can’t absorb a parasitic worm which is 20 levels above it. That is, an ordinary civilian can absorb up to level 20 monster’s parasitic worm. If they try to absorb parasitic worm from a level twenty one or twenty two monster then a phenomenon called ‘magic backbite’ would occur. Most of the time ordinary people would absorb level 17 or 18 parasitic worms. Even a level nineteen monster’s parasitic worm is extremely dangerous for an ordinary person.”

“In short the most that an ordinary person can absorb is the parasitic worm from a level 20 monster. The safest is to absorb a parasitic worm from a level 10 monster. Absorption of a parasitic worm from level 15 and up will gradually increase the probability of magic backbites.”

Dudian looked at her solemnly. He was aware that she wasn’t teasing or making fun of himself. Actually he was glad that he had met her. Fortunately, splitty was in his hand and could be used in the future.

“You were talking about the hunting levels by the inner wall’s

assessment. Do humans have levels too?" Dudian asked.

The girl answered: "Of course there are level for humans but they aren't as clearly divided as for monsters. For us its more like a classification. For example primary hunters correspond with hunting level 8. So if you are an intermediate level hunter then your hunting level is between 10 to 20. Moreover it means that you can absorb any parasitic worm from level 20 to level 40 monster. So if you can get the parasitic worms of a monster above level 40 then the best is you can store or sell it as you won't be able to absorb it."

The girl looked at Dudian with a smile: "I simply wouldn't bother to tell these to an average person."

Dudian wryly smiled but didn't say anything.

"If you don't die outside the giant wall and lucky enough to enter the inner wall then go to 'Dragon' (clan?) and look for me." The girl calmly watched Dudian: "If you are dead then it means nothing much. But don't try to show off in the outer wall by using 'Dragon'. In case its spread out to another person then your fate will be miserable."

"Dragon?" Dudian whispered as he engraved the word into his mind.

"The body of the splitter is valuable. Especially its forelimbs can be made into excellent weapons. But there shouldn't be smelting technology in the outer wall to create such a weapon. Other parts

are valuable materials too. I'm just too lazy to take them back."

Dudian's eyelids twitched. This was the body parts of the legendary monster. Every part of it was a treasure! How come you are lazy to carry it back?

But the next moment he thought that getting the body parts of the splitter was good enough as he wasn't able to get his hands on the magic marks.

Puff!

The girl pulled out the sword and wrapped it with bandage before putting it back. She was about to leave when she thought of something and looked back at Dudian. There was a trace of smile on her face as she said: "In addition I will give you an extra information. Although you may never be able to use it but It's just a small gift in advance that I will personally give to you. You can consider it as a gift for the joining ceremony for the Dragon. But I will give you the gift box with no real gift in it."

Dudian was looking at her.

"Although I'm not aware of the magic mark you got but in this area there won't be a rare monster. The probability isn't high. However there is a way to get rare magic marks. The method is very simply. You only need to find five parasitic worms from the same monster. So by transforming after using the magic marks from the same monster for five times you will go through a process called 'deification'!"

“If the ‘deification’ transformation is successful then you will get a new ability which would be close to a rare magic mark!”

“In short for example you have magic marks from an undead. You find five magic marks from it and absorb them. There is a 50 percent chance that the transformation will succeed. Each absorption of the same kind of a magic mark will increase the probability by ten percent.” The girl looked at Dudian and continued: “The benefit of the deification process is that you don’t need to replace magic marks to improve a level. In summary if you go through a deification with an ordinary magic mark that would be comparable to a rare magic marks!”

“But there are consequences of the deification. After absorbing the same kind of magic marks you can’t let it improve your constitution and you can’t mix the other magic marks with it. Or else there would be a magic backbite.”

Dudian was stunned as he whispered: “So there is such a secret?!”

The ‘deification’ process was like the optimization of magic marks. In short the person was passing through the bottlenecks with the deification to enhance their power.

But the shortcomings and disadvantages were too much in comparison to its benefits. The most problematic problem was to find exactly same five kinds of the monsters. According to the girl the deification could occur if the magic marks from the same species were used. For example, if he wanted to complete

deification then he had to inject four more juranzhi magic marks!

Moreover he want be able to upgrade his strength after the deification.

For example he had reached the limit of an intermediate hunter. He needed two more parasitic worms to be able to break through and become a senior hunter. This way the physical bottleneck would be broken. He could continue to rely on absorption of cold crystals and God's blessing to enhance his strength. However if he relied on deification then his strength wouldn't improve but he would only enhance the powers of his ability. Physical bottleneck would still kick in!

Moreover if he relied on using the magic marks from the juranzhi then he had to wait until the deification process finished or everything will become void! He wouldn't be able to use other parasitic worms to break through the bottleneck.

The conditions were too harsh. No wonder the girl said that he may not be able to use it. He estimated that no one from the outer wall could use this method let alone him.

The girl leaped from the body of the splitter and landed on the ground. She looked at Dudian's stunned expression: "If you have the opportunity to join our Dragon family in the future then you will be given a chance to get a rare magic marks for free! So for now find some life-saving magic marks and keep it up!" She smiled and leaped up. She jumped over 10 meters in a single leap and left away.

Dudian watched her disappear through the gap. He slowly retracted his eyes as there was a bitter smile on his face. He was glad that he didn't absorb the magic marks of the splitter as he learned from the girl that magic backbite could occur. However he couldn't calm himself as his prey had fallen into the hands of the others.

Some people could send out others to hunt for a legendary monster's magic marks by sitting within the giant wall!

He was almost no-one in comparison to such characters!

He sighed as he looked down at the splitter's corpse close to his feet. His eyes opened wide the next moment.

"Egg! There are eggs!" The blood rushed to his mind. He remember the words said by the girl. Dudian began to breath quickly as he eyes turned red. He quickly turned and ran as if it was the end of the world. He even disregarded the corpse of the splitter. He remembered the approximate location of the splitter's nest as he rushed out at that direction!

Run! Run! Run!

Dudian was almost flying as his body bolted from place to place. The wind whistled near his ears. His heart was full of tension and excitement.

The splitter was dead but it had five eggs in the nest!

If all of those eggs hatched out then he may use the magic marks from the larval stage splitter to go through ‘deification’!

Deification of legendary parasitic worms!

His heartbeat accelerated as he thought about the deification of legendary magic marks! What level would it lead to? Simply unimaginable!

Whoosh!

Whoosh!

Dudian was like a breeze that rushed towards the splitter’s nest. Suddenly a giant shadow jumped from the bushes and tried to attack Dudian.

Dudian was shocked as his body bounced away. It was a swamp lizard which had the body length of seven meters. It had crocodile’s mouth and sharp fangs.

“Swamp lizard!” Dudian’s face slightly changed as he knew that it was a level 17 monster. He pulled out his bow as he jumped away and aimed at its mouth.

Puff!

The arrow hit swamp lizard's tongue as the latter began to scream. It shook its head trying to throw off the arrow.

Chapter 336

Dudian took the opportunity to create the distance and made another shot on reflex.

Puff!

Second arrow was a successful hit too. At the moment there were more than ten meters of distance between the two. Dudian quickly made another shot into its mouth.

After two more arrows Dudian calculated that the monster would be seriously injured even if it didn't die. As he improved the shark spear he was inspired to infuse paralytic venoms into the arrows in addition to infusing mercury. It was more than hundred times effective than applying the venom onto the arrows.

Dudian didn't pay attention to the swamp lizard as he turned away and moved forward. However he calmed himself because of the ambush by the swamp lizard. After all he couldn't continue to rush out blindly. He was in wilderness and the crisis could emerge any moment. It would be very sad to end up in a belly of a monster before reaching the splitter's nest.

Whoosh!

Soon Dudian reached the basin where he had met the mutated crocodiles. The soil above the basin had become hard and there were no visible activities by the mutated crocodiles. The weather had become cold recently and the water had dried up already.

Dudian stopped and sniffed the air.

The sense of smell was very role while he ran. That's why hounds would stop to smell every once in a while while tracing something.

It didn't take long for Dudian to get the grasp of everything as he carefully sneaked forward.

After an hour.

Dudian finally reached the nest of the splitter. It would take him ten minutes to reach this place if he went in a straight line but he had to stop and take detours quite a few times. There were monsters on his way which he was able to detect. He didn't want to face them off in vain.

Dudian was relieved to see the nest was blocked by the boulders. He quietly walked past and checked the boulders. It was blocked very tightly and it would be very difficult to drill inside. He lied onto ground and put down his ears to listen. Moreover he gently sniffed. He could sense the rancid smell mixed with blood's odor coming off from the cave. Moreover there was splitter's smell that was mixed with the odors of the monsters that it had hunted.

Dudian sensed the smell of small splitter. Although the cave belonged to the splitter but he was able to differentiate the smell of an adult and larval stage splitter. They would emit different body odors.

“Already hatching out?” Dudian was surprised and delighted. Every young splitter was a potential legendary monster of the future. Their value was infinite!

He took two steps back and checked the surrounding environment. Dudian was disappointed as there was nothing to use. If he relied on his strength and got into the cave then he would end up as a food for the newly born splitter. After all, splitty that he had brought into the giant wall had seen him after the birth and it seemed that splitty took him as a relative.

“I can’t remember how many eggs were inside the cave. I have to go in and check it. If its less than five then I’ll give up on ‘deification’ and move on. The values of their magic marks should be able to disturb the inner wall so it would overthrow the balance in the outer wall.” Dudian secretly went through the options. After all if the eggs weren’t enough then he didn’t know how many years later he would meet another splitter. The probability was low and during that period he couldn’t stayed as a intermediate level hunter. Although the magic marks would have excellent abilities but his strength would be limited and too weak.

Moreover he had met the girl this time which had changed the foundation of his perception. Even senior hunters would be helpless to fight back against her. She was powerful enough to sweep through the six consortia!

Of course this was only feasible in theory. After all the structure of society was interlinked and more complex. The combat effectiveness and personal strength couldn’t rule over the system.

There may be other potential rules that regulated the society that he wasn't aware of. Because if the six consortia were destroyed then the economy of the outer wall would collapse and a chaotic war would occur. Such a thing would catch the attention of the inner wall.

Dudian wasn't a war monger so he wouldn't do such a reckless thing. Moreover power play such as that wasn't part of his character.

"These splitter must be fed for five to seven days to reach the early childhood so they can give birth to magic marks. If their powers soar to level 30 or 40 then there would be no chance to battle them!"

Dudian began to make a pit and traps outside the cave.

"We have to build a stronghold outside the giant wall like the other consortia. It could prove hunters with food, healing and other services. Moreover it could improve the efficiency of hunting." Dudian thought as he made the traps. Actually without any tools his efficiency was very low. He had made a pit using arrows.

Dudian went to the boulder heap after making other traps. He looked from the boulder to the traps that were put as chess pieces. He began to make a gap.

Dudian continued as to do his beast create a small gap for an hour. He was finally able to create one small gap at the top of the

boulder heap.

The pungent smell exuded out from the gap and Dudian felt nauseous. His keen sense of smell was disadvantageous at situations such as this.

Dudian endured the rancid odor as he climbed to the top of the heap and looked into the nest through the gap. He saw a figure with numerous scythe like limbs moving inside the cave. It was honing its scythes by practicing in the wall. At the same time he saw another small splitter climb along the boulder over to his position.

Dudian's face slightly changed. He didn't know to smile or cry. Hunting two young splitter had increased the difficulty of the job for several times.

He quickly jumped from the boulder heap and went towards the stone heap that was 50 meters away. He stopped over and choose the best angle for shooting.

Breeze blew past gently as the sounds of stones echoed from time to time. Suddenly body of the young splitter was revealed from the hole at the top. This small splitter was younger than splitty that he had brought into the giant wall. However its color was much darker and looked more shiny. It seemed that because of better nutrition it had better development.

Dudian bent up as he narrowed his eyes and aimed the arrow. He didn't rush to shoot but waited for small splitter to climb out of the

gap. He was going to attack its eye.

He had observed splitty within the giant wall for a long time. He was already familiar with the body structure of the small splitter's and the arrow was pointed at its weakness.

Whoosh!

The arrow was shot.

The small splitter was standing above the heap of boulders. It was its first time in the outside world and small splitter was full of curiosity. Even the warmth of the sun was very new to it.

A sharp whistling sound echoed.

Puff!

It tried to back up but the arrow had already hit its body.

The arrow was too sudden and its speed was too fast because of the range of fifty meters. The young splitter hadn't adapted to the sunlight so it wasn't ready for such an attack.

"squeak~~"

It screamed in pain as its body shook left and right. Its body hit

the sides of the gap. It couldn't advance or retreat and there was nowhere to escape. It kept screaming in pain.

Dudian was relieved to see that arrow had successfully hit the target. He took another arrow and aimed. The young splitter's body wasn't shaking in a regular manner so it was very difficult to prejudge its movement. The blind eye didn't mean that its combat effectiveness was eliminated. In the end it was a legendary monster. There were more than one way to detect and sense the danger around. The eyes were just convenient and fast way of detection.

Whoosh!

The second arrow was shot.

This time Dudian had aimed at its screaming mouth.

Whoosh!

The young splitter was chaotically swinging and waving its scythe like limbs. It had mistakenly hit the arrow too.

Dudian frowned but he wasn't discourage. He took out the third arrow without a pause and coherently locked onto its mouth.

The young splitter seemed to feel the direction of the dangerous arrow because it had encountered the second arrow on chance. Its sharp scythe like limbs were waved around as a shield as it moved

backwards.

Bang!

Arrow couldn't penetrate through as it had hit the scythe like limb.

Although it was a young splitter but its level was already 24 or 25. Killing it was not an easy thing.

He took another arrow as he quietly waited for the next opportunity.

However the next chance never came. The sense of self-protection was very strong. The young splitter used the scythe like limbs to form a shield while its body slowly retreated back into the cave.

Dudian picked up stones from the ground and throw it past.

A moment later another sound echoed.

The second young splitter climbed out. It was not hurt so Dudian was able to tell that it was the other one.

Dudian waited for the younger splitter to reach half way through the gap. He aimed at its eye as he waited for the splitter.

Puff!

Arrow was shot and it was a successful hit. The young splitter suffered an attack and issued painful howls as it was half way out.

Dudian continued to shoot.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The young splitter didn’t immediately react. The second arrow shot into its mouth and its screames that increased quickly stopped. It waved its scythe like arms as it receded back into the cave.

Dudian immediately stopped shooting to save arrows as he saw the young splitter wave its scythes.

Dudian was relieved.. The first round of the ambush attack was fairly successful. Although the young splitters were much more powerful than him but they didn’t have any experience. They should be compared to tender newborn children. It was another proof that planning and execution was more terrifying than just blind strength.

Dudian bent down as he listened to the vibration. Although the splitter were young but their physical strength were stronger than most of the level twenty monsters. He could roughly judge the direction of the cave they moved to through the vibrations. Perhaps because of the injuries both of the splitters moved into the

depth of the cave.

Dudian climbed over the boulders and went through the hole. He looked inside and saw that both young splitters were shaking and whispering in low tone. They no longer issued harsh screams.

Dudian aimed the arrow at the young splitter which was in the corner. Behind it there was a corpse of the monster. The other young splitter was heavily injured as it slowly moved back. Its movement was very slow.

Dudian wanted to shoot it but changed his mind. This young splitter was hit by two arrows at vulnerable parts. The venom and mercury would cause great harm to it. If he continued and shot it the third time then it would be directly poisoned.

Dudian grabbed small stones with his hands and threw them over.

The adult splitter was affected by the poison attack in less than half an hour. Although the amount of venoms was very large but the young splitter's body was not as big as the adults. So the venom would still paralyze it in the same amount of time.

Bang!

The young splitter was scared as its body rolled around after the stone hit its body. It turned towards the entrance where the invader was. It squeaked in intimidation but didn't rush out.

Chapter 337

The young splitter heard the sound of Dudian's movement. It issued an angry roar as it rushed over.

Dudian took out an arrow and aimed.

Whoosh!

The young splitter's body wasn't that big. However the scythe like forelimbs were successful in blocked the arrows. But the mercury and venom splashed all over its scythe after the hit.

The young splitter growled and leaped out. It jumped over the boulder as it tried to quickly climb up.

Dudian put away the bow and arrows and began to push down the boulder next to him.

Bang!

The young splitter was caught off guard and was hit by the boulder. The stone put pressure on it as it tried hard with its forelimbs to push away the boulder.

Dudian took an arrow and narrowed his eyes as he aimed at the young splitter.

The young splitter struggle but at the end was able to push the boulder away. Whoosh! At the same time another arrow was shot. The core of its second eye was hit by the arrow. The splitter's field of vision was 180 degrees for each eye. One was used to observed the front and rear while the other eye was used to check the ground to see if there were monsters lurking in the soil for a chance to attack.

"squeak~~"

The young splitter screamed in pain as it waived its scythe like arms around to prevent the danger coming closer to its body. At the same time its body retreated back.

The next moment the other injured young splitter came over and began to wave its scythes in front of the injured one. It was actually covering the other while it retreated.

Dudian grabbed another small stone and threw it past. However none of the young splitters were attracted by it. Obviously they were deceived once and learned the lesson.

Dudian put away the bow and arrows as he thought about his next move. A moment later his eyes brightened as his lips curled up. He turned out form the cave and came outside to the forest. He pulled out dried weeds and green wines. He tied dried weeds and green vines together and found dry and hard wood. Afterwards he returned back to the cave.

On his way while he searched for the materials he kept attention

to the movement in the cave. He would do anything to prevent the young splitters from sneaking out. Fortunately they were hurt and didn't have any notion of moving out.

Dudian threw out stones at the gap to check for the movement. He saw that young splitters weren't coming out so he carefully closed to the gap. He looked inside to see that both of the splitters were hiding in the corner of the nest.

Dudian took out the match and ignited the weeds. The flames burned as the dry wood began to ignite. The flames were wiped out as the smoke burst out. He then covered the flame with green vines and smoke intensified.

He had brought large leaves similar to a banana's to fan the smoke like a fan.

The smoke rolled into the cave as it constantly filled it.

After half an hour both of the splitters were out of patience as they slowly tried to climb out from the cave. It seemed they were weak.

Dudian continued to vigorously fan the smoke as he continued to put the surrounding stones to fill the entrance so that it became much narrow.

"hiss……"

Both splitters issued hoarse screams as if they were begging in grief.

Dudian picked another big stone and threw it down.

Both young splitters acted very slowly. Once of them escaped while the other was hit and fell to the ground.

The other young splitter receded in fear as it tried to stay away.

Dudian wasn't anxious at all as he firmly sat in the entrance and fanned the smoke to consume their physical strength! After the evolution there were monsters which were immune to smoke! But Dudian's purpose wasn't to choke them with smoke but to reduce the oxygen levels in the cave.

Oxygen was essential no matter what kind of monster there was. Perhaps some of them could survive for long time but none could permanently refuse to intake it.

Symptoms such as dizziness, weakness and other would appear as the oxygen was reduced.

"Hiss~~" The young splitter pushed the stone and slowly crawled back. It feared but also angrily looked at Dudian who was at the entrance.

Dudian knew that both of them were weakened from their appearance. He would be able to beat them in close combat but he

naturally wasn’t planning to go for a melee combat. He continued to fan and wait!

An hour passed in the blink of an eye.

Both splitter had made several attempts to rush out from the cave but were faced with failure because of Dudian. Moreover each time had caused them pain and loss of energy. Both of them gave up on plan to leave the cave as they moved to the lower terrain where the smoke was slightly lower.

Dudian looked at the dying bodies of the splitters. Who could think than legendary monsters would be forced back because of the smoke. Even though they were level 24 monster but they were no less dangerous that black weaver that Dudian had hunted with Glenn.

Dudian would throw small stones at them from time to time. At first they resisted but afterwards they didn’t as Dudian would easily hit them.

Dudian was relieved but he still continued to fan the smoke for another ten minutes before coming to a stop.

Dudian pulled out the dagger form his waist and picked a large stone from the ground. He quietly went past.

There was no movement from the both splitters as he closed to ten meters away from them. He raised his hand and threw the

stone at one of the splitter's.

Bang! The splitter woke up because of the pain but it didn't jump up or reacted. It was difficult for it to move its body. The movement of its body was extremely slow as it seemed struggling to lift its scythes.

Dudian took out an arrow which had rope tied to its tail. He shot it at the body of the young splitter. The arrow hit its body and fell down. Dudian pulled the rope as he dragged the splitter to increase its distance from the other.

The process was quick and without any problems. The young splitter's body twitched slightly but it didn't resist.

Dudian waved his dagger close to its limb joints. Puff! The joint was stabbed. The young splitter weakly squeaked and waved its other limbs to cut off Dudian.

Dudian easily bent over and hugged the limb that was stabbed at the joints. He pulled it out forcefully.

Blood splashed around.

The young splitter screamed in pain as its sharp limbs waved around and forced Dudian to retreat. As it stopped Dudian went over to attack another limb on its body.

A few minutes later Dudian had pulled off all the limbs of the

young splitter. It was like a huge peanut-shaped insect which had dark shell as a surface like to protect its body.

Dudian attacked the other young splitter.

In about five minutes he was able to pull off the limbs of the other young splitter. It's combat capability was lost.

Dudian went back outside to breathe a few mouthfuls of fresh air. He went inside and tied both splitter with rope to the corner of the cave. He saw that there was no difference since the last time. There were monster corpses over each other. The blood was everywhere on the ground.

He didn't check to see what kind of monsters were hunted. Instead he bypassed the corpses and saw the back of the nest. He looked at the eggs in front of him: "Five? There are still five more eggs! If I add these two then there would be total of seven!"

"If I count the one in the giant wall then a total of eight!"

Eight legendary monsters! Who wouldn't be excited at such a sight?

This meant that he could increase the probability of deification to 70 percent!

It was worth the fight for such a high probability!

Dudian glanced around at the corpses of monsters. He couldn't help but be disappointed. After all these monster should have parasitic worms inside them too. After all, humans relied on parasitic worm to improve their magic mark abilities. Then monster would have such a demand too!

Dudian looked at the dumpling like bodies of the both young splitters. His eyes lit up as he caught the bodies of two hound and threw in front of them.

Both splitter leaned over to take big bites.

However it was very difficult for them to eat alone with their mouths without using their limbs.

Dudian didn't continue to stay in the smoky cave as he went outside: " The life of monsters has same division as the world within the giant wall. The poor are in slums while powerful businessmen are in commercial district. Most likely the monsters in this area are level 20 to level 35. This should be the reason why the adult splitter has chosen this area to lay eggs in here. It has estimated the monsters in this area are weak and wouldn't easily hunt its children. Moreover its children would be able to have more appropriate living environment after leaving the cave."

"There are two monsters that could prey on its cubs and eggs within the range of level 20 to level 20. The first is 'brown spider fly' which is a level 21 monster. It moves in secret and eats cubs or eggs when there is an opportunity."

“The second one is ‘little frog’ which doesn’t just like eating the eggs or cubs of other monsters but preys on its own cubs. That’s why each female ‘little frog’ would stay away from a male one during its pregnancy as it would identify the other as a natural enemy.”

Dudian looked around: “This is a dry terrain and close to the suburban areas. There are lots of hills and no wet zones. So I shouldn’t fear ‘little frogs’ but there could be ‘brown spider flies’. However they would be afraid to attack the monster with huge size. They are like bullies who prey on smaller monsters.”

“I don’t think it would dare to attack even if the splitters were newly born. I don’t need to prepare traps but make sure that other monsters aren’t attracted by the bloody smell of the cave.”

He blocked the gap of the cave.

After finishing he looked around to see no movement.

“I don’t have much time. The adult splitter had hunted in the neighborhood for some time so no monster would dare to get close. But it won’t be that long after the monsters will migrate over to the ‘forbidden’(close to the cave) area.” Dudian returned back. He bypass some strange smells he sensed on the way as he successfully returned to the place where the adult splitter’s corpse was.

He saw a skeleton’s body lying on top of the adult splitter’s corpse as he jumped into the subway station. Not all of the undeads

were beheaded previously and it seems this was the bravest out of all. Actually no sane monster would attack splitter as blatantly as undeads did.

At the moment the skeleton's body was much larger than ordinary undead's. It was nearly three meters tall and its muscles were very bloated. There was still pieces of pants on its body. He knew that it was one of the undeads from the subway.

As Dudian observed it the skeleton also noticed Dudian. It roared as it rushed over.

Dudian's eyes were cold as he aimed at its forehead and shoot the arrow.

Puff!

The skeleton had simply consciousness and feeling of self-preservation. However it didn't understand the concept of arrows so it didn't try to avoid it. The arrow pierced its head and its body fell to the ground.

Dudian slightly hesitated as he didn't expect to solve the problem so easily. He knew that the skeleton would not play dead so he jumped past.

Roar!

Another roar echoed out from close to splitter's body. It was

another skeleton.

Dudian’s face slightly change as he quickly pulled out another arrow and attacked it.

Puff!

Arrow accurately hit its forehead.

The skeleton fluttered but didn’t escape. It fell to the ground after the head-shot.

Chapter 338

Dudian's brows wrinkled as he raised the head of the skeleton and pulled out the arrow from its forehead. It was an ordinary iron arrow and he wasn't planning to use mercury arrows to hunt them. It would be a complete waste and the number of mercury arrows were limited so he tried to save as much as he could.

The silence of the subway was disturbed by the loud roars of two skeletons. As both of them fell under Dudian's arrows another roar echoed. Dudian saw a skeleton whose body was cut in half was eating the splitter's meat as its face was full of flesh and blood.

Dudian was startled as he saw its appearance. Don't they use their stomach to digest the food? Maybe they evolve differently after eating the blood and flesh of the splitter? Do they digest the food with a different organ rather than stomach?

He took out another arrow and aimed to shoot as the thoughts quickly passed in his mind.

Puff! Puff! He killed another skeleton.

Dudian was relieved as he saw the actions of the skeletons. Although they were much tougher and agile than ordinary undeads and were close to level 15 monster but they still didn't know how to avoid danger. They became nothing but live targets for Dudian.

Roar! Roar!

One skeleton after another went out of splitter's body and rushed at Dudian.

Dudian rapidly pulled arrows and shoot them. He would rush out, collect the arrows and would reuse as he if recycling them. In about four or five minutes almost 55 skeletons tried to attack Dudian but were killed by him. Because of the repeated use all the arrows were scrapped except four normal iron arrows and two mercury arrows.

Dudian saw that there were no other skeletons which climbed out of splitter's body. He pulled out his dagger and began to cut off the necks of skeletons. It was very difficult to distinguish the gener of the skeletons. Thee flesh outside their skulls was very hard almost like a steel. He poked out holes through their necks and skillfully extracted the intracrannial tissues. It was very easy to find cold crystals afterwards.

Dudian felt coldness as he grabbed the crystals. The skeleton's head was a bit larger than an ordinary undead's. He estimated that if the skeletons lived for some time and were able to digest the nutrients then the cold crystals would become much larger. According to his previous experiences Dudian knew that the cold crystals were much purer and effective if he extracted them from a larger head size-wise.

"Each of these cold crystals is equal to two or three crystals from an ordinary undead..." Dudian's eye lit up: "The flesh of the splitter is a rich energy source which was able to make ordinary undeads to upgrade to skeletons in such a short period of time. If I

feed its flesh and blood to young splitters then it would soon be able to promote their growth period."

He collected the skulls of more than dozen skeletons which were on the ground. After confirming that there was no skeleton left behind he went back to splitter's corpse. Dudian thought about ways and methods to carry its flesh back to splitter's cave. If he directly cut off flesh then it would exude a smell. He didn't know how many monsters would covet after it along the way.

Although all the monsters in this area were afraid of the splitter but after its death the corpse of the splitter would be a rich and delicious meal for all of the monsters.

"I gotta go back to the wall and get some tools for transport. Moreover the weather is getting late and the temperature will become low. Monsters would come out to hunt and it would be very dangerous to carry its body parts in the evening." He looked at the corpse of the splitter and turned away as he stepped out from the subway station. Inevitable nearby monsters would be led here by the smell of its corpse.

However the monsters at best would eat splitter's flesh and blood. They wouldn't be able to eat its scythe like limbs. And these scythes were the most valuable parts of its body in terms of materials. They could be forged into powerful hunting weapons.

Whoosh!

Dudian rapidly moved at the direction of the giant wall as the sun

set. Moments later he was by the giant wall. He looked up to see Nicholas at the top of the giant wall. Nicholas was leaning on the edge of the giant wall as he watched the surroundings.

Dudian had sneaked over so the latter hadn't noticed him. He ran back for three kilometers and began to wave his hands at Nicholas. Soon Dudian caught his attention.

Nicholas's eyes lit up as he saw Dudian. He didn't know what kind of trouble he was going to face if Dudian died. Nicholas naturally was aware and clear on that if Dudian let him free then there was no way out for him. But in this case if Dudian had died then as a prominent figure the magistrate would go for a careful investigation. Nevertheless the crime would be put on him as he was a servant with criminal background. If he would lose Dudian then there would be no one to rely on. He would be sent back to the prison again.

Dudian gestured as he saw Nicholas notice himself.

Nicholas's face slightly changed as he saw Dudian's gestures. He looked down at the kilometer high giant wall. His face was pale. The first reason for him to be waiting over here was that he was afraid of heights. The second reason was that Nicholas was afraid that if he climbed down then the monster might come back to prey on him.

He hesitated a bit as he wanted to ask with gestures to carry other things. Suddenly, Nicholas's face turned bitter as he understood why Dudian was away from the giant wall. Most probably Dudian was afraid that Nicholas would attack him with the shark spears.

That was why Dudian was standing so far away from him. Nicholas knew that he wouldn't do so...

Nicholas was aware that there was no room for explanations so he tightly wrapped the rope and checked once more to confirm that there were no problems. He clutched the rope as he went down slowly.

Dudian quietly watched as Nicholas went down for three hundred meters. Afterwards Dudian moved to the front of the giant wall. By that time Nicholas had slided to 500 meters away from the ground. It didn't take long for Nicholas to slip down to the ground. His old face was as white as paper and Nicholas's legs slightly shivered. It seemed that his fear of height was not light.

Dudian smiled in his heart as he saw Nicholas.

Dudian patted Nicholas shoulder and said to him in a tone as an elder would talk to the young generation: "You have worked hard. It's time to go back." He tuned away and went into the passage.

Nicholas froze up for a moment then jumped into the passage. He was walking behind Dudian in the dark passage. Nicholas couldn't help but ask: "What happened to the monster?"

"It's dead." Dudian didn't turn his heat but casually said as he walked in front. However his heart was frustrated and depressed. He had prepared for so long and finally someone from the inner wall had got the reward. Fortunately there were eggs in the nest or else it would be a big loss to him.

“Dead?”

Nicholas was stunned and suspected that he had heard it wrong. He asked once more: “Dead?” Nicholas stared at the back of the teenager. They passed by the statues of the goddesses engraved on the wall. He felt as if evil spirits were looking at him.

He made rapid steps and caught up with Dudian. Nicholas carefully asked: “Is it really dead? What was the name of the monster?”

Nicholas saw Dudian’s gloomy face and could see that the kid’s mood was not very good. He was disappointed as he wanted Dudian’s strength to increase as strong as possible. He was aware that he needed to take refuge under a very strong wing to survive...

Chapter 339

Dudian and Nicholas came out of the passage.

There were two teams of knights of light on duty. There was a distance between two teams but it wasn't for patrolling but defensive means.

The middle-aged knight's eyes brightened as he saw Dudian and ran over: "We were almost scared that you would not come out!"

Dudian was stunned. The next moment he understood the reason but he still asked: "Why?

The middle-aged knight continued: "Not long after you went out to the giant wall we heard restless voices coming out from there. It was certain that the monster had come back but fortunately you haven't encountered it! Or we would considered guilt of our actions! "

Dudian smiled: "Oh. We had gone very far but I heard the movement of the monster. Fortunately we went far away or the only way out for us would be to slip back to the passage."

"Yes..." There was a trace of fear lingering on middle-aged knight's face. If Dudian died outside the giant wall then the Temple would inevitable punish him too. Even though it won't be a heavy penalty but his career would be affect.

Dudian said: “The weather is getting late and we have to go back. I will bother you with the arrangements.”

“Yes!” The captain was polite as he waved to the young knight behind him: “Communicate!”

The young knight took out a whistle and blew it. After some time a black crow flew over and they attached a note onto its leg to be taken to the detention center.

The middle-aged knight and Dudian chatted while they waited for the people to come over to take them. If the captain could get close to Dudian then his position would undoubtedly improve by leaps and bounds in the Temple. He didn’t care much about promotion but stability of his position.

Dudian saw through the man’s intentions and naturally didn’t give him the opportunity. He was aware that Sherman, the middle-aged captain, belonged to Charles family. It was a small noble family and was part of the Huasheng consortium. The man was the most promising member of his family. The responsibilities of his family were on his shoulders.

It was precisely because of Sherman’s identity as a captain of knights of light that Charles family prospered. Although they were at the bottom position in the aristocratic circle but they were much stronger than most of the declining families. Sherman’s identity alone was enough to cover up for most things. Moreover the wealth of their family was rising and was several times higher than in the past.

“The people from the detention center are coming.” Dudian said to Sherman as he saw the group come over.

There was joy in Sherman’s heart because of conversation with Dudian had gone relatively smooth. It was undoubtedly a good foundation and if he carefully managed the relations in the future then he could attend some gathering with Dudian. His future would be more brilliant if he could let people know that he had a relationship with Dudian.

“Does architect want me to accompany you?” Sherman spoke in a polite tone.

Dudian smiled. The other side was too impatient but he wasn’t going to let the relationship between the two to get too close for now: “You have your duty in here and I would be sorry if you delayed your work because of me.”

Sherman added: “There are many others in duty here. Nothing would happen but you will be passing through the radiation zone. There would be mutant beasts that could disturb and attack you. If anything happened to you then it will be a huge loss to the Temple of element and the people within the giant wall… ”

Dudian slightly shook his head: “It’s almost night and the monster activities close to the wall will increase. The knights from the center will be guarding me not to mention the hunter. It would be very easy task for him to deal with the mutated beasts.”

Nicholas who was standing next to them was listening to the conversation. The old fox jumped in immediately: “Don’t worry I won’t let these beasts disturb mr Dean.”

The middle-aged knight didn’t force the topic and said: “Mr Dean be careful on the way.”

Dudian nodded silently. He bid farewell to him as he sat in the carriage brought by the guards of the center with Nicholas.

After some time they came to the detention center.

Dudian followed the knights of light into the center. He looked at the leader of knights: “I’m an architect form the Temple. This is my identity meal. Would you please inform your direction about me?”

The knight of light surprised to hear Dudian’s words. He checked his medal: “Are you architect Dean the inventor of ‘military crossbow’?”

Dudian nodded.

The leader took Dudian’s medal and saw the word ‘Dean’ written on it. He knew that Dudian wasn’t lying. The man spoke in a humble tone: “I didn’t think that you were an architect. Sorry I wasn’t aware…” He quickly left.

Nicholas saw the fear in leader’s eyes. He turned towards

Dudian's cage and asked curiously: "I have heard that hunters must stay here for at least seven days before going back."

"Um." Dudian nodded: "If you feel bored read the book of light. It's on the table. Try to purify your soul."

Nicholas bowed as he checked the book: "I can't remember how many times I have read it back in prison. I think I'm already purified. By the way, God of Light can save the people who live under the sun. How can he save those who live in darkness and abyss?"

Dudian glanced back at him: "Don't modify the meaning of the book!"

Nicholas smiled as he saw Dudian to be so straightforward and unkind: "You are an architect. Your nature is different from ordinary people such as me."

Dudian chuckled as he sat on the couch and waited.

The door to the underground cell was opened as the previous leader of the knights came in. A handsome middle-aged man followed after him. His skin was very clean and his eyes were bright. He had a clean beard which betrayed his age. Dudian estimated that he was in his fifties.

The knights of light were hesitant while they were walking by the handsome middle-aged man.

“Are you the architect Dean?” The man looked up and down at Dudian as he seized him. He didn’t expect that the teenager in the recent reports would look younger than he had imagined.

Dudian said: “Greetings director. Can we talk alone?”

The man stared at Dudian then waved. He indicated the others to leave.

After everyone left the man smiled: “It’s first time that we are meeting. What do you want to say?”

Dudian smiled: “My biggest purpose in trying to contact you is to seek your help.”

“Help?” The middle-aged man’s eyes lit up: “Do you want me to cover your trip to the outside the giant wall?”

“There is nothing to cover up.” Dudian shook his head: “I want you to let me go back directly after I’m finished with inspections. ”

The middle-aged man shook his head: “It’s not that I don’t want to help but this thing… ”

“What if I owe you a favor?” Dudian interrupted his words and directly said.

The man was startled. He was a member of the Holy Church and was aware of the things happening in the Temple. He had paid attention to the deeds of Dudian. In fact, even the people who weren't member of the Holy Church would be aware of the big sensations caused by the inventions of the architects.

"This..." The man seemed to be troubled at Dudian's words.

Dudian continued: "I'm not aware of the 'the preferred' consortium by the director. The last time I have made a superior grade four star item called 'lightning rod'. It's hasn't been sold yet, if there is a consortia that director prefers... "

The man's heard jumped. He naturally was aware of the 'lightning rod'. Although the invention was not sold yet and there were no prototypes in the market but he had heard that Temple was able to manipulate and control the lightning to avoid it. Not just consortia but even military was interested in purchasing the rights.

Chapter 340

The middle-aged man was excited but deliberately made a hesitated expression on surface: “Architect Dean this thing is illegal… If it passed out…” He didn’t continue till the end so to make a room for maneuver.

Dudian narrowed his eyes as he said: “I am an architect of the Temple and I won’t ever leave outside the giant wall. I was there to take care of the hunters and show them the usage of some tools. Shouldn’t I be released after the medical inspection? Do you want to treat me as a hunter?”

The middle-aged man’s face changed. He thought that Dudian would try to favor him more but never imagined that he would take such a tough stance and attitude. He felt a bit tricky but he smiled: “Architect Dean no need to talk so seriously. Naturally, these hunters can’t be compared with you. I’ll order my workers to give a clean room to you and release as soon as possible… You are an architect of the Temple. Your stay here is the loss of the Temple and it could be considered as a infidelity! So I will order you to be sent back after the physical examination!”

He paused and stared at Dudian: “But it will be good if your ‘lightning rod’ would be sold to Scott consortium.”

Dudian didn’t expect that Scott consortium was behind the director. Although all six consortia tried to penetrate Holy Church but Scott consortia was able to push their person as the director of the detention center. In short they were in charge of life and death of hunters. It was a great role and the man was in an influential

position.

“Scott consortium and Mellon consortium have deeply penetrated into the society. It would be very hard to fight every root one by one... It would be very slow... ” Dudian’s eyes brightened as an idea passed through his eyes. He calmly looked at the director: “I have cooperated with Scott consortium many times and I believe that it will be very pleasant to sell the rights of ‘lightning rod’ to Scott consortia. What was your name?”

“Architect Dean is polite. I’m Ludwig.” The middle-aged man was full of joy and excitement. Actually releasing Dudian was a small matter for him. Even if Dudian didn’t agree to sell ‘lightning rod’ he was willing to release such a person with extraordinary potential. However this opportunity will bring alarming wealth to him and improve his status within the Scott consortium. It was a cheap deal!

Dudian nodded slightly as he wrote down the name: “We have a deal then.” Afterwards he sat back on the couch.

Ludwig smiled: “I will arrange you another room for the physical examination. This one is too dirty.”

“No need, I don’t care much about the residence.” Dudian replied.

Ludwig looked at the boy with interest: “That being the case I will leave then.” He departed out of the cell.

After Ludwig left Nicholas looked at Dudian: “Master, are you going to take me with you?”

“You will be here for the term.” Dudian indifferently said: “There will be concerns from some forces after I go back. If we go back together then problems may arise. Be careful and try to not to talk about this matter.”

Nicholas heard his warning: “I will young master! I had made mistakes but now I’m absolutely loyal to you. I hope you can believe in me again!”

“I will look at your performance.” Dudian indifferently said.

Nicholas slightly smiled but didn’t continue to talk.

After a minute two doctors came and check Dudian. They didn’t inspect Nicholas but left afterwards.

The next day.

Dudian sat in the carriage while Ludwig send a team of knights of light to escort him to the nearest border fort. The main reason for sending the team of knights was the recent activities of the barbarians. He feared that Dudian would be injured and Ludwig wouldn’t be able to bear the responsibility. In addition he hoped to earn goodwill of Dudian.

The Holy Church had eyes almost everywhere so they were aware

the fort which had less attacks from the barbarians. There were several waves of different beast attacks along the way but they didn't encounter any barbarians.

Dudian directly went back to his castle. The carriages of wealthy businessmen tend to move to roadside to avoid blocking Dudian's carriage as the coachman saw the flag of the Holy Church.

Dudian returned back to his castle after few hours. He saw the Jin sitting in the hall: "Where are those two?"

Jin was cutting down a fruit. He was frightened to see Dudian come back so suddenly. He almost cut off his finger. He stood up in hurry: "Young master both of them are at home. Gwyneth is upstairs while Sergei is in the training field at the back."

Dudian commanded: "Call them up."

"Yes." Jin turned and run.

Dudian was drinking tea when Gwyneth, Sergei and Jin came into the hall. His body lacked water so he was trying to overcome his thirst: "Sergei go and buy this things to make traps. This is the money." He threw a stack of gold notes on the table.

"Are you planning to go outside the giant wall? Didn't you just come back? "

"Just go! Why so much nonsense?" Dudian said.

Sergei picked up the golden notes and left the hall.

“You should buy some weapons. By arrows for me and some ropes. ”

Gwyneth nodded as she picked the notes and left.

Dudian looked at Jin: “Hire … Forget that. Buy a mammoth carriage and make sure that its ready to haul at any moment.”

Jin nodded.

Dudian turned towards Kroen who was closeby: “We will go outside the giant wall so the house will be under your care. Make sure that news doesn’t leak.”

Kroen nodded. He had seen the attitude of Gwyneth and others towards Dudian. He felt familiar and unfamiliar with Dudian. The latter grow up with them in the orphanage however Dudian was able to distinguish himself in the society.

Moreover while Dudian was outside the giant wall he had chatted with Sergei, Jin and others. He deliberately talked about going outside the giant wall with them. But he had heard Sergei and Jin talk about the dangerous monsters outside the giant wall. He understood that Dudian who was similar to him in age had gone through many life and death battles to achieve today’s status.

“One more.” Dudian handed him the cup.

Kroen took the cup and filled it.

Dudian gently tapped the table with his fingers as he delved into thoughts.

A few hours later.

Jin came back with the mammoth carriage and stopped by the river outside the giant wall.

Dudian saw Jin jumping off the mammoth beast: “What about coachman?”

Jin smiled: “Originally coachman was included in the price of the carriage but I thought that young master needs such a carriage to carry some secret things. If the coachman had big mouth then it would spread to ears of other consortia. It took long time for me to learn how to control this beast so I came back a bit late.”

Chapter 341

“Pretty smart.” Dudian smiled as he praised Jin.

Jin was happy as he replied: “I’ve learned from the young master.”

“Stop sucking up to me.” Dudian replied.

Jin scraatched his head as his face turned red.

Gwyneth and Sergei came back with dozens of carriages loaded with goods.

“Master we bought all that was needed. This is the leftover money.” Sergei put the golden and silver notes onto the table.

Dudian nodded but didn’t take the money. Kroen who was standing behind him took over the money notes and gave them to Dudian.

“Load them.” Dudian commanded.

“Alright.” Sergei nodded and went out to order the workers to load the materials onto the mammoth carriage.

...

Mel family.

The office in the first floor of the castle.

Sarah Mel sat in the large office as she quietly listened to the report told by the handsome young man. She thoughtfully nodded as the youth finished: “So he didn’t leave the giant wall… Is he really going to give up on his status as a hunter? Did you investigate the coachman who drove the carriage to the entrance of the passage? Did he knew something?”

The youth replied in a low tone: “The coachman had suffered from the attack of mutated beasts and died on the way back. According to the reports of the knights of light which were on patrol they couldn’t rescue the man on time.”

Sarah frowned: “Attack from the mutated beasts? Wasn’t he escorted by the knights of light?”

The youth shook his head: “No.”

“Stupid.” Sarah’s face turned gloomy. She thought of something and asked: “Are you sure that his death wasn’t man made but result of the beast attacks?”

The youth bowed his head: “His corpse was tested and no scars that could be made by a human were found. All of injuries were result of beast mutilation.”

Sarah’s brows wrinkled: “Stupid civilians!”

...

Scott consortium.

Consortium headquarters.

Chai Rostov looked at the crowd sitting around the table: “This time I have called you all to tell the good news about the latest invention. The superior grade four star product called ‘lightning rod’ will be sold to our consortium. In addition to sharing the news I have to inform you that the funds of the consortium will be transferred to the production of ‘lightning rod’. The production costs are unknown at this point but it won’t be small amount for sure. We are currently tight on cash so we will have to recruit wealthy businessmen to increase the capital so that we can mass manufacture the ‘lightning rod’ before the rainy season. We will have enough money to invest in mining projects by the end of rainy season if we produce ‘lightning rods’ as soon as possible and ship them before the rainy season.”

The members looked at each other as they sat by the long table. There were different expressions revealed on their faces. Some were surprised while the others were skeptical. There were few who were anxious. One of the middle aged men said: “Chairman, didn’t the architect Dean said that he would be considering to sell the rights after the black snow season? Why did he agree to sell us so suddenly?”

Chai looked at him and slowly said: “You have to thank Rosie for this. She had repeatedly traveled to architect Dean’s castle and talked about this matter. Because of her excellent diplomatic abilities we have reached this fruitful contract.”

The member looked at Rosie who was also seated behind the long table.

“Miss Rosie is an excellent negotiator.”

“It’s worthy of the woman who had studied at the magistrate. ”

“Congratulations……”

…

In front of the castle.

Dudian looked at Jin, Sergei and Gwyneth as they stood before the mammoth beast. They jumped over to the carriage. Dudian looked back at Kroen: “If Scott consortium comes over to look for me then tell them that I will ask for the details of the ‘gifts’ after coming back.”

Kroen nodded in confirmation: “Yes, young master.”

Dudian nodded slightly and looked at Jin: “Let’s move!”

Jin nodded as he made the mammoth beast move towards the barrier fort.

Dudian showed his architect medal for them to pass through the gate of the fort smoothly. After that it took them about two hours to reach the ‘death passage’. Along the way Gwyneth and Sergei beheaded quite a few mutated beasts but they didn’t meet any barbarians.

Dudian used the rope to slide from mammoth’s forehead to descend down. He looked at Sherman: “You have been working hard. It seems you are on duty almost every day.”

Sherman was surprised to see Dudian back at the passage. He was anxious in his heart because Dudian was sent to detention center yesterday and was in front of him today. He understood that even the people in the detention center had to give ‘face’ to the teenager in front of him. His attitude was more polite and humble as Sherman replied to Dudian: “This is part of my duties and service. You are overpraising me.”
Dudian pointed to Sergei and others: “They are the hunters of our consortium. We have brought materials to build the base outside the giant wall. ”

Sherman glanced at Sergei and others: “That’s a small matter.” He turned and waved at the young knight of light behind him to open the passage.

Dudian gestured to his people and indicated them to carry the

things into the passage.

Sergei, Gwyneth and Jin began to carry the materials from the carriage into the passage. Jin was the most shocked out of three. He was a knight of light and never expected a captain of knights to try to be so polite and respectful towards Dudian. However there was disappointment in his heart too. The captain was much more powerful than the rank Jin had previously held in Holy Church. Their reason was to serve God of Light so he had never expected such a person to try to be affected with secular life so much that to try to curry favor with such an attitude.

However he has been an open-minded person after those years in the prison. He knew that there were much to see to things than the surface. However he felt sense of loss but it didn't affect his emotions.

Sherman naturally didn't know the ideas passing through the mind of the 'hunter'. (aka Jin) He constantly tried to find topics to chat with Dudian. Sherman knew that there was much to the youth as he was able to get out of the detention center in less than a day.

Dudian ended the conversation with Sherman and looked at Jin: "You should go back. I will need some more materials and you will be responsible for getting them."

Jin was relieved. The last time he witnessed the monster carry away Scar and the picture was imprinted into his mind. He was full of fear regarding the hunt outside the giant wall. Moreover he was aware that his strength was nothing much for the life forms

outside the giant wall. He felt that goddess cared and loved him as he was able to come back alive the last him. He knew that he would fall into the depth of hell if the goddess turned away from him this time.

“Yes, young master.”

Dudian looked back at Sherman: “Mr Sherman would you sent a knight with him to inform the people at the gates that he didn’t go outside the giant wall?”

“No problem, I’ll solve it out.” Sherman was delighted.

Dudian nodded as he entered the passage.

“Architect Dean please be careful …” Sherman said out loud.

Dudian went through the passage and came to the exit door. He pushed the heavy iron gate and began to sniff the air out of habit. After making sure that the place was safe and there were no strange smells he ordered Gwyneth and Sergei to carry out the things.

Chapter 342

They transported out all the things that they had brought with them. Sergei and Gwyneth took their weapons while they carried some lighter materials with them. Sergei killed the monsters relying on his magic marks from ‘dragon steel’ while Dudian sensed the monsters in advance and made sure that they were not ambushed along the way. His first priority was to keep their lives.

It didn’t take long for the trio to reach a place not far away from the splitter’s corpse.

Dudian sniffed the air and sense two or three strange smells gathered by the corpse of the splitter. His eyes narrowed as he made a gesture towards the Sergei indicating the existence of the ‘enemy’. Sergei’s bent over and clenched his spear. He began to slowly move forward.

Although Sergei was goofing off a lot within the giant wall but the moment he stepped outside his personality changed 180 degrees. He was like a totally different person with opposite character. Along the way he had been silent and vigilant to the movements in the surrounding.

Sergei noticed the giant scratches at the walls and occasional damage along the way. It made his heart tremble as he didn’t know what kind of monster Dudian was after. At least, as an experience hunter he had never met a monster which would leave such marks.

It didn’t take long for three to reach the entrance of the subway.

Dudian looked down the hole and saw the splitter's corpse. There were three monsters that looked like cheetahs. They were as tall as two meters and had long fangs. Their bodies had the pattern of eyeballs all over it. It had the same look as the feathers of the peacock. There were bones spurs extending from their front limbs which were similar to daggers hooked onto their claws.

"Hellhound, level twenty one monster ..." Dudian glanced around and noticed the corpses of swamp lizard, an unknown python and other insects. All of the were killed and their deaths should be caused by hellhounds. He looked at Sergei and Gwyneth.

Gwyneth was in shock. She had regarded mutated crocodiles as a upper level monster. However at the moment there was a corpse of huge monster in front of her. It was difficult to imagine how could a human being would be able to fight against such a ferocious and devious monster. However the thing that shocked her most was that the monster was dead and there were shark spears pierced onto it which she was personally involved in the smelting process.

Gwyneth was ignorant in sense if she was compared to Sergei. He had been a hunter for a long time. The place was dimly lit but it didn't prevent him from seeing the look of the monster. At first glance he was already frightened from the huge silhouette as he was aware that it was the corpse of the monster called 'splitter' which was the top monster within the ranks of the eight legendary monsters.

Apparently the scratches and dents on the giant wall were caused by the attacks of the splitter!

But it was dead!

A legendary monster had died in here! He could conclude from the faint smell of decay that it has been about a day or two that it was killed. It was exactly the same time as Dudian had gone out to hunt! Moreover the shark spears that were on splitter's corpse were proof of this point! Sergei was anxious as he looked at Dudian: "I-i-it-its magic marks weren't…by…you"

Dudian didn't answer him but glanced at both of them: "Each of us will take one of them. Any problems?"

Sergei and Gwyneth looked at teenager's calm eyes. The kid's attitude had changed a lot. Sergei bit the bullet: "We will be barely able to cope up. If the spikes were removed from my body then I could have killed all three of them!"

"We will take them out after going back." Dudian replied.

Sergei and Gwyneth's looked at each other in surprise. However they were frightened as many thoughts passed through their minds. Previously Dudian had prohibited them to pull out the spikes to quell them. However he was willing to remove their spikes now…It seemed he wasn't worried anymore about them restoring their strength!

Sergei looked at Dudian with fear and curiosity. He had heard about legendary magic marks but only in rumors. What kind of terrifying abilities did he have?

Dudian pulled out arrows from the quiever as many ideas rotated in the minds of the two. Dudian aimed at the closest hellhound. It was biting onto splitter's flesh. Whoosh! The arrow was shot.

The hellhound reacted the moment it heard the sound of the arrow. It's body made a sudden jump to avoid the arrow but its speed was slow by a beat. Dudian's constitution was already close to an ordinary senior hunter's strength. Moreover there was less than two hundred meters of distance between them. The arrow had reached its peak speed and strength.

Puff!

The arrow hit the ribs of the hellhound. Hellhound looked around without caring about the pain coming off from its ribs.

Dudian pulled out the second arrow and shot it.

Hellhound saw the Dudian and the other two coming through the hole. It's body jumped to the left to escape the second arrow.

Dudian's brows wrinkled as he saw the sensitive reaction of the hellhound. He thought of the catalytic role of the splitter's flesh and blood. The color of their body had turned reddish and their speed was equal to monster which were in between level 22 to 25. He knew that at their current state Sergei and Gwyneth wouldn't be able to deal with hellhounds alone on their own.

"Both of you coordinate with each other. You can't afford to take

them alone.” Dudian indifferently said as he pulled out the third arrow.

At the same time the other two hellhounds which were eating stopped as they saw their companion suffering attacks. They rushed towards the hole at Dudian and others.

There was a trace of arrogance on Sergei’s face as he heard Dudian’s words. He was about to refuse but changed his mind as he saw the extraordinary speed of hellhounds. He raised his spear vigilantly.

Dudian quickly retreated as he saw two hellhounds to approach them. He was planning to let Sergei and Gwyneth to deal with them while he tried to kill the wounded hellhound.

Gwyneth wielded her sword as he waved it. Although there were spikes on her joints but her actions were coherent and rapid. Sergei and Gwyneth cooperated as they kept both hellhounds away from them. Gwyneth has been a senior disciplinary knight and hunted senior level hunters. The only thing that she lacked was the experience with fighting against monsters. She would be able to cope up with monsters up to level 30 after she was seasoned.

Dudian’s eyes narrowed as he saw the balance between them and two hellhounds. He continued to shot at injured monster.

One of the arrows pierced the hellhound’s claw and it made a loud cry and fell down.

Dudian pulled out arrows and began to help Sergei and Gwyneth. Otherwise it was going to take long time for them to kill the hellhounds. Maybe they may not be able to kill them at all.

Five or six minutes later.

All three hellhounds were dead.

Sergei and Gwyneth were taking big breathes as their bodies were tired. Moreover blood faintly oozed out from the spikes. If Dudian didn't help them as a support character then they would not be able to survive the battle.

Whoosh!

Dudian directly jumped through the hole and went to the front of splitter's corpse. He was too lazy to deal with the body of three hellhounds. Compared with splitter everything else was trivial.

"Get down." Dudian looked at both of them.

Gwyneth and Sergei didn't have time to take a rest as they immediately jumped down.

Dudian said: "Both of you will be responsible for guarding this place. Cut off the flesh of the monster and carry the tools from the passage. Sergei, make few simple traps in the vicinity so that other monsters don't make sneak attacks." Although Sergei was a knight but after all he was a senior hunter and was knowledgeable about

traps. He was aware and knew how to create simple traps.

Chapter 343

“What about you?” Sergei asked.

Dudian indifferently answered: “You should do what you are ordered to do. If there is something that you should know you will be informed.”

Sergei smiled but didn’t ask for more.

Dudian cut off flesh of splitter and folded them into specially prepared bags. Each bag had double layers to it. One of the layers was made of plastic while the other was made of cotton. They were able to cover the smell for some time.

After filling them full he lifted the bags and left the subway station. Dudian ordered Sergei to take care of everything afterwards he rushed through the bushes.

Seven or eight kilometers later Dudian stopped to sniff the air. He saw that Gwyneth and Sergei weren’t following after him so he continued on.

After half an hour later.

Dudian was standing in front of the splitter’s nest. It was sealed and the previous appearance was maintained. There were no other monsters nearby so the place was secure for a while.

He gentle removed a boulder and the gap was opened. He sniffed and smelled the odor of a young splitter. It seems that the young splitter had just hatched out of the egg.

In accordance with the previous hunting method he kept the gap open and stepped back to throw stones to lure the young splitter out.

The newborn splitter didn’t learn anything from its injured kin and climbed to the gap. It looked around and an arrow hit the core of its eyeball as it was caught off guard.

The young splitter screamed and retracted back into the cave.

Dudian rushed into the cave. In about ten minutes Dudian had successfully cutted off the limbs of the newborn splitter. He tied it inside the cave as only its trunk and head were left.

The rope that tied previous young splitter was broken. It seems that their bodies had rolled around while trying to eat the corpses of monster and their mouths had bitten the rope.

Both of them scream as they saw Dudian. They were extremely frightened as they kept twisting their bodies to move back away from Dudian.

Dudian smiled as he put down the bags. He took out a piece of flesh and cut it into uniform parts. Afterwards he threw the meat parts in front of three young splitters as he quietly waited.

All three of them seemed to relax as they began to bit onto flesh of the adult splitter after a moment.

Dudian recovered his eyes as he came to the nest. He looked at four eggs that were as big as a dome. He raised his hand and touched the cold eggs. He pressed his ear against one of them and carefully listened. There was a crunchy voice echoing inside the egg as if something was gently rubbing against its shell.

“Did it wake up?” Dudian’s eyes lit up as he patted the egg.

Crack~~

Cracks began to appear on surface of the egg.

Dudian quickly took few steps back and aimed arrow at the egg.

Kacha~~

The cracks quickly expanded and a sharp scythe pierced out from the shell of the egg. It quickly cut down through the egg and a thick slurry liquid infiltrated out revealing the appearance of a newborn splitter.

Dudian face slightly changed but he decided no to attack. Dudian was worried that because of sudden attack newborn splitter may panic and break other eggs while in struggle. The loss would be too

great so he receded.

The newly born splitter squeaked and ran over at Dudian.

Dudian fired the arrows after they came to the deeper part of the cave. Puff! The arrow pierced through the eye of the splitter. Its body suddenly stopped as it screamed in pain.

Dudian pulled out another arrow and shot it into its mouth.

The young splitter rolled on the ground as its sharp scythes made deep tracks on the ground.

Dudian held the dagger in his hand as he stared at the newly born splitter.

The young splitter climbed up as it screamed and rushed at Dudian.

Dudian ran back to the gap in the entrance instead of facing it off. He dropped large stones onto the young splitter.

It didn’t take long for Dudian to capture the young splitter. He cut off its limbs and tied to side of the cave. He fed the flesh of the adult splitter to it.

Dudian squatted down to check the first young splitter whose limbs was cut off by him. He saw that the wounds has been

scarring and tips of new sharp edges could be observed.

Dudian's eyes went cold as he thought of an idea. He had brought lime powder with himself so he made sure to completely destroy their limbs and not give them a chance for new tissues to grow.

It was very cruel method but thinking of the great cause he didn't hesitate a bit.

Dudian went back to check the other three eggs. There were slight sounds coming off from the two eggs. Apparently the young splitters didn't have power to drill through the eggs but will come out in a day or so.

He took the rest of the flesh and poured it in front of the four young splitter. He went out of the cave and blocked the gap. Dudian quietly returned back to the subway. He saw that Sergei had arranged simply but effective traps. Normally those traps would be much of a threat to humans but they would be useful against the monsters.

Dudian looked at the four scythes on the ground. Gwyneth and Sergei were busy as they cut of splitter's flesh and loaded them into bags.

Sergei spat on ground as he looked at Dudian: "Master we will load the flesh. What about the scythes and its shell?"

"I need its flesh, we will take the rest back to wall." Dudian

picked up four bags and turned away.

Sergei and Gwyneth looked at each other as Dudian went away. According to Dudian the flesh of the monster won't be brought back. So where did he transported it then?

Both of them bowed down as they continued to dig out the flesh. However many ideas passed through their minds but they couldn't find clues to what Dudian was aiming to accomplish.

Chapter 344

Two days passed in the blink of an eye.

These past two days Dudian carried the fles and blood of adult splitter's corpse to feed the newborn splitters. Sergei and Gwyneth laid traps around the vicinity of the corpse to resist the other monsters. Perhaps it was because of black snow season that the temperature was low and the decaying of adult splitter's corpse was more slower and the smell didn't exude out. That's why its corpse didn't attract the attention of other monsters.

Nevertheless in the past two days three of them fought four or five times. Fortunately the monsters in the vicinity were between level 15 to 25. So it was pretty easy for trio to cooperate and kill the monsters. Moreover a rare monster called bloodsucker had appeared!

This bloodsucker was a level 18 monster. Normally when they reached maturity the bloodsuckers reached level 32. Dudian, Gwyneth and Sergei smoothly killed it, removed its parasitic worm and sealed it inside a container.

In two days about seven or eight tonnes of flesh was cut from adult splitter's corpse. The edges of its limbs were stripped of flesh and blood to prevent them from rotting. Dudian had transported all those flesh and blood back to the splitter's nest. Two splitters were born out of the remaining three eggs. Dudian had used toxic arrows to weaken and cut off their limbs to loss their combat capability.

The legendary monsters were concocted into bare trunks by Dudian. He was feeding them on daily base with adult splitter's flesh and blood. All six of them had big appetites even though they had physical injuries. One of them would eat about four or five hundred pounds of flesh on daily basis and their appetites grew by each passing day.

The growth of the six young splitters was very obvious. The rate was alarming as most of them had reached six meters in length. Dudian estimated that in about four or five days they would reach eleven or twelve meters and their parasitic worms will enter the growth period. All of them would reach about level 40.

Only in comparison to other level 40 monsters these young splitters were raised by Dudian and their fighting capabilities were greatly weakened. The rich and nutritious flesh of the adult aplitter had worked as a catalyst in their daily growth. Moreover even if somehow they could re-grow their limbs they would need time to adapt and restore the majesty of the legendary monsters.

Dudian was busy with young splitters while the situation within the giant wall was surging as it shook the balance.

The number of barbarians gathering in the Red Maple mountains had grown and military wasn't able to pressure them anymore. The situation outside the barrier of the commercial district was getting dangerous. These were the stalwart walls that encircled the region and were build in 65^{th} year of Silva calendar. The barrier had more than 200 hundred years of history and no actual information about the reasons why it was built was known. The only thing remembered was that the barriers were built at the end

of the ‘Battle of Gods’.

The so called Battle of Gods referred to the first war that happened with barbarians. It was very difficult to find the records of the war in famous libraries or colleges. There were slight information at some of the scriptures of the Holy Church.

The barbarians were repulsed while the guardians of the wall build the barrier wall to defend the future generations from their attacks.

In the last two hundred years the barbarians repeatedly tried to attack the region however they weren’t able to pass through the barrier. Occasionally they had passed through a fort but they were quickly driven back by the military. It seems that this time the barbarians had learned lessons from their previous failures and had moved to Red Maple mountains to easily defend against the military’s forces. The place was a natural base and very suitable as a military camp. The army repeatedly attacked but there were no positive results.

It was written in today’s military newspaper that the military was preparing for the war to reoccupy the fort and Red Maple mountains.

Mel family.

The office in the first floor of the castle.

Sarah had sent seven letters in the past two hours. Her brows were wrinkled as she gently tapped on the table which had the map of the area. She pondered for a long time and slowly asked: “Is there any movement from Inferno family?”

Lisa, the maid with short hair slowly shook her head: “It’s very calm these days. The industry under their command is also doing normal day-to-day activities. Miss, why do you ask?”

Sarah’s eyes lit up: “The barbarians are going to attack the barrier through the Red Maple Mountains. The military wouldn’t be able to resist them alone so once the barbarians break through the gap then the consequences and losses won’t be something that military wouldn’t be willing to face and bear. They must use sun flames technique to fight them off!”

“Sun flames?” Lisa was startled: “Could it be the inflammation technique of the Inferno family?”

“Yes, they have just changed the name.” Sarah whispered: “Their inflammation technique has caued great damage in the commercial district and they were investigation by the magistrate. Senior disciplinary knights were sent by the inner wall to suppress the pressure of the Inferno family. However no one knows how the military got its hands on the formula. But the thing is the destructive power of this method is way too unpredictable and military doesn’t dare to used it out of blue.”

Lisa nodded: “So to say the barbarians will lose the war without a doubt.”

Sarah narrowed her eyes: “The outcome of the war is unpredictable at this point. But it will be a headache to the military. The barbarians are gathering at Red Maple mountains so the best we can do at this point is to make the barbarians to attack early on. The earlier the war ends faster we will take back the mines in the Red Maple mountains. These days the Scott consortium took advantage of barbarians occupation of Red Maple mountains. They are trying to seize the market as we lack raw materials. The demand for variety of metal ores is greater than ever. If we can’t recover on time the damage we will face won’t be light. If the war lasts for another month then Scott consortium would take the upper hand. Moreover it won’t yield any significant results if we acquire the mines after month.”

Lisa was puzzled: “But Miss how can we make the barbarians attack earlier? We aren’t commanding their forces! ”

“There will be a risk but we will be able to lure them.” Sarah gently smiled: “We will send few spies and expose the weaknesses of military’s defense. They will naturally be interested in attacking as soon as possible.”

Lisa couldn’t help but ask: “Would they believe the information?

“If its true then they will.” Sarah’s mouth curled up into a wide smile.

Lisa’s eyes lit up: “Miss is wise!”

“This war is an important opportunity for our Mellon consortium to swallow up the other consortia. But first we will begin from the small matter at hand. The genius architect that has been a headache for us…It’s time to deal with him and make him bow in front of us.” Sarah said as she glanced at the letter on the table.

Chapter 345

Study room in the second floor. Ryan family.

Old Fulin dismissed the maid as he sat by the desk. Only Sander was accompanying him in the room. Old patriarch sighed as there was worried expression on his face.

Sander was by his side. He couldn't help but ask: "Father, are you worried about the barbarians? It shouldn't be difficult for the military to protect the barrier if their background is taken into the account. In case even if the army fails the Holy Church and magistrate wouldn't sit by. At worst we will retreat to the other edge while we wait for the reinforcements."

Old Fulin shook his head: "Chil, I'm not worried about army's war but our battle."

"Our battle?" Sander was stunned.

Old Fulin continued: "The war is a disaster for some while opportunity for others. All the six consortia are aiming for huge profits. Especially the prices in the mining industry have skyrocketed recently. There will be forces that profits from these fluctuations. The Holy Church has been praying to the God of Light in their platform. So if there was really a God then why hasn't he destroyed the barbarians yet? I'm not sure how much wealth Holy Church has donated to help civilians. Moreover some forces will push the alchemists from the dark church to fight in the shadows. They will use them for their own needs. Everyone is on

the move except us. Not only we won't gain any benefits but there will be few who would take this chance to destroy us!"

Sander face slightly changed: "Are you referring to Mellon consortium?"

Old Fulin sighed: "It's very difficult to avoid the disaster at this point. I hope Mellon consortium will be attracted to their problems with Scott consortium or we will be its food in this chaotic period of war."

Sander was alarmed: "Aren't you a bit too pessimistic? We have architect Dean as our support. Mellon consortium's every move has become fruitless because of him. In this chaos they wouldn't dare to provoke Temple or Holy Church."

"The problem is that Dean is outside the giant wall in this critical juncture. He is not in Temple of Elements. I'm not sure whether he has deliberately exposed such a flaw to lure in Mellon consortium or he hasn't taken this into account. If it's the latter then I'm afraid our head will be chopped off!"

Sander was stunned: "Father since the situation is so urgent should I sent a message to call him back?"

"He is outside the giant wall and unfortunately we don't have a stronghold there so contacting him is not an option. We can only wait for him to find us." Old Fulin sighed: "But the hunt may take two or three days even a week or two is possible too. I'm afraid it will be too late when he comes back and he will become a prisoner

once again.”

Sander was shocked as he realized the seriousness of the situation: “Father, aren’t you exaggerating the thing? He is an architect of the Temple. How can he be imprisoned? Mellon consortium can’t intervene with the members of the Temple!”

Old Fulin continued in a bitter tone: “We weren’t involved much in politics so you didn’t have enough experience or else you would have understood. Maybe this time after the incident you will open up your eyes to the reality of life. There are many ways to achieve a purpose and most of the time those paths are hidden way too deep. Most people can’t see through them and the ones who are aware try not to be involved in such matters!”

Sander anxiously asked: “Father, are we going to sit still?”

“I have sent a message to him and I hope we will be able to contact Dean and the news will reach to him. ” Old Fulin sighed: “The rest depends on the strings of the fate. Perhaps the Ryan family was never meant to rise again. Its just unfortunate for the boy. If someone nurtured him and gave him extra five years then he would be one of the characters at the top of the outer wall. Even Rudolph from Burong family or Chai from Rostov family wouldn’t be match for him!”

Sander was silent for a moment before he said: “I won’t pity him even if he is dead after the storm.”

Old patriarch looked at his son but didn’t say anything. He

leaned against the chair and slowly closed his eyes.

...

The next day.

Old Fulin was eating breakfast with the family. He wasn't even finished when he heard the voice of butler. There were few people that followed in behind him.

However it seemed that those people weren't invited by the butler but forced him into the dining room. The voice of a man echoed in the room: "We are here to recover the debt and will go back soon." The man who spoke was middle-aged and was wearing a knight's uniform while a silver medal hang on his shoulder. There were two young knights who walked behind him.

Old Fulin's face sank: "You are trespassing into private property! It's very rude of you!"

The middle aged man laughed in disdain: "Rude? Old patriarch your family owes us 428,600 gold coins. Is it not rude?"

Old Fulin was perplexed.

Sander, Jake and the others sitting on both sides of the table were stunned. They suspected the thing man said.

Old Fulin spoke: “What kind of nonsense are you uttering? When did Ryan family owe you money?”

“Well!” The middle-aged man snorted as he took out the sheepskin roll from his arm: “This is the contract and everything is clearly written. Nothing will change even if you go to sue me at magistrate!” The man throw the contract.

The sheepskin roll fell down by Old Fulin’s foot.

The middle-aged maid quickly picked up the roll and handed it to Old Fulin.

Old Fulin’s face was gloomy as he opened the roll. His face turned pale as he skimmed through the content. By the end his face turned red in anger. He glared at Jake: “You unfilial son! How could you have done such a thing? This is what you owe so you should pay for it!”

He threw the parchment at Jake.

Jake was scared as he caught the sheepskin roll. He opened it in hurry and skimmed through. He stood up in shock: “It’s not me! When did I sign such a contract? Impossible!”

The middle-aged man seemed to be happy seeing such a scene occur: “Mr Jake, you may not remember now but last time at Moulin Rouge you loudly made the statement. How can you forget? It’s written in black and white! Do you want to default on

your promise?”

It seemed that Jake was hit by lightning as he understood everything: “You have framed me! I have signed another contract! You are despicable! You have committed a crime by falsification of a contract, I’ll sue you!”

The middle-aged man touched his face which was full of saliva spitted from Jake’s mouth as he spoke in anger. He raised his hand and pushed Jake’s chest. The man looked at Jake: “Go on, sue me! Do I have to show you the road to the magistrate?”

“You! You!” Jake’s eyes had turned red.

Chapter 346

Jake was trembling as he looked at his father: “Father, please believe me I was framed by them! I don’t have courage to sign such a contract. Certainly its Mellon consortium behind them…I… ”

Old Fulin recovered his eyes and looked at the middle-aged man: “Ryan family will investigate this matter clearly. Please give us a day!”

“Alright.” The middle-aged man continued: “As long as you sign the contract that your family will pay the money after a day then I agree to leave. Otherwise, even though this castle is dilapidated but its worth some money. “

“Father!” Sander shouted.

Old Fulin raised his hand to stop Sander to continue to talk. Old patriarch’s face was full of wrinkles as he said in a colt tone: “Stop being insensible! If I expel this unfilial son then you won’t get anything but his corpse. So if you want it then take him now!” He waved his sleeves as he finished his speech and refused to look at Jake.

Jake’s face turned white as he heart Old Fulin’s words. He knelt down and held onto his father’s legs: “Father, you can’t! If you expel me then they will kill me! You can’t be so cruel! You can’t!”

“Yes, grandfather! …”

Hugh and another girl from the third generation hurried over and knelt in front of Old Fulin to plead for their father.

Old Fulin's face was cold as if he hasn't heard anything. But he still kept looking at middle-aged man in cold manner.

The middle-aged man's face slightly changed as anger gushed in his heart: "What a father! He won't even care about his own son and grandchildren! I'll give you one day! One day! If I don't get my money by tomorrow then don't blame for my blunt actions!" Afterwards the man left in anger.

The butler followed them out and returned quickly. He bent down and whispered to Old Fulin's ears: "Master, they left."

Old Fulin slightly shook his head as he heard this. It seemed like he aged for ten years in an instant. The hall was silent as everyone's eyes were focused on his figure. Sander couldn't bear anymore and whispered: "Father..."

Old Fulin looked at him and slowly said: "Sander go and contact deacon Antioch. Ask her to come over."

Sander replied: "Yes." Coldness flashed through his eyes as he peeked at Jake who was kneeling by his father's legs. He didn't say anything as he left the hall.

Jake was begging as he knelt and grabbed onto his father's legs:

“Father, I was really framed. You must keep me! I’m your son! It is my mistake but they had deliberately done it to deal with us…I… ”

Old Fulin looked down at him. He wanted to raise his pestle and beat him up but suddenly he felt pain in his chest as his hands went soft. He took deep breathes: “Our Ryan family has been declining for decades. You have never contributed to the family but at the critical situation has made so that everything will be destroyed in an instant!” Old Fulin coughed as he emotionally said.

The middle-aged maid standing next to old patriarch handed out handkerchief and tea.

Old Fulin drank a mouthful of tea and looked at Jake: “You should pray that there is a way out! Otherwise, for the sake of others and for the future of Ryan family I will expel you!”

Jake’s face was as white as a piece of paper. He clung onto Old Fulin’s legs as he desperately pleaded. Tears flowed down through his face…

Hush and another girl also held onto the other leg of Old Fulin as their faces were covered in tears.

Old Fulin indifferently looked at Hugh and the girl. It seemed that he didn’t care much about them but his eyes had moistened.

At noon.

Sander returned back to the castle. Most of the members of the family were sitting in the hall. The place was silent as he went through the hall.

Sander looked at the butler: “Where is father and third brother?”

“Master is in the study room in the second floor while Jake is kneeling by the door.” Butler whispered.

Sander quickly went upstairs. He saw Jake, Hugh and his sister crying and kneeling in front of old patriarch’s study room.

Jake looked back at him as his face turned ugly: “Deacon Antioch! Why didn’t she come back?”

Sander passed by him as he didn’t even answer to him. He knocked on the door: “Father, I’m back!”

“Come in.” Old Fulin’s voice echoed out.

Sander pushed the door and squeezed in. Jake tried to go in too but Sander pushed him out and locked the door. Sander saw Old Fulin’s haggard look. The middle-aged maid was gently massaging his shoulders as old patriarch leaned over the bed: “Father, is your body alright?”

Old Fulin asked: “Did she come?”

Sander replied: “Deacon Antioch heard the matter but didn’t

want to come back. She told me that even if we bring the matter to magistrate nothing will change. She said that there is nothing that she can do. Our only chance is to borrow architect Dean's status and money to pay it off."

Old Fulin snorted "Worthless people! At the time when our family was glorious we had helped her teacher. Now after so many years we need a help but she didn't even bother to come here. I didn't think that... People have become more cold than I had imagined... "

"Don't be discouraged." Sander said: "There is always a solution. We will be able to solve the matter if we follow what she says."

Old Fulin said: "Her approach? Mellon consortium have made their preparations for long time and choose to trouble us at this time because they are aware that Dean is outside the giant wall. They have planned it good. Dean had asked me previously and I told him that Mellon consortium wasn't making a move but it seems they had already acted. If this contract is dragged then the amount including the interest will lead to an astronomical figure. How do you think we will pay it off?"

Sander continued: "Father why are they doing it now? Is it that Scott consortium has forced them tightly and they are in need of urgent money? Otherwise they could continue to wait and the interest would be so high that no one will be able to afford!"

Old Fulin's face turned cold: "Don't you think that this amount happens to be almost equal to price of a superior grade four star item? Their purpose is to bankrupt us and make sure that Dean is

broke. They want to make sure that Dean is in a situation as he was in the time of his imprisonment."

Sander's face turned ugly: "Father since this is the case...we either...we have to expel third brother for the future of the family. We can't fall once more or we will never be able to rise again!"

Chapter 347

Old Fulin said in a sad tone: “It’s useless. We are way too thin and weak in comparison to Mellon consortium. They have long prepared for this occasion and haven’t left any defects. I have carefully read the contract. Even if we cut off tied with Jake and expel him from the family our family is still liable for the debt. It is according to the laws of magistrate. It’s a loophole used by forces such as Mellon to attack others. I used to force him out to see if that knight was aware of this... But I’m afraid he has done so deliberately... ”

Sander was confused: “Father, is there really no other way?”

Old Fulin whispered: “We can only rely on him. I hope that Dean returns as soon as possible. Perhaps then we may be able to counterattack. Otherwise... ”

Sander sat down on the chair in silence as he grabbed onto his hair.

In the afternoon.

Old Fulin slowly went down the stairs and came to the hall. Jake and his children quietly went down too. Everyone stood up as they looked at Old Fulin who was the pillar of the family. Sander’s wife slowly stepped out but she was hesitant and didn’t say anything.

Old Fulin stood on soft carpet as he glanced at the faces of everyone in the hall. He slowly said: “Ladies and gentlemen.. Go

and pick your luggage as we will be living outside for a while. We will give up the castle."

The hall was silent.

No one expected Old Fulin to bear Jake's guilt at such a critical moment. But no one was willing for the family to shoulder such huge debt with high daily interest. Moreover contract meant that they will be like slaves from generation to generation. Future members of the family will bear a huge debt and in a few years the family will completely decline. Even their aristocratic status would be taken away!

After a brief silence someone shouted out.

"Master, the money is owed by the third master. You can't make us all bear the debt... "

"Master, we beg you please expel the third master... "

One cry after another echoed in the hall.

Jake and his children were surprised, angry and nervous as they stood behind Old Fulin. Although there was an infighting within the family but everything was trivial. They had sat and eaten behind the same table for many years and now everything was asking Old Fulin to cut them off! They were sending them to death!

Jake clenched his fists. He hated Mellon consortium and those

who pleaded for his expulsion. But he hated that genius architect. Although the boy had brought hope and prosperity to Ryan family but he was a victim and sacrifice of the battle that took in the shadows!

He hated everyone!

Old Fulin's face turned ugly as he hit the pestle onto the ground. The crying stopped as he spoke in a cold tone: "Do you really think that if the third young master is expelled the family will be able to survive? The enemy wants to ruin and destroy us! Are you stupid? Do you want to kill each other before the enemy acts? Stupid!" He coughed severely as he talked.

Sander grabbed onto his father as he stroked old patriarch chest.

Jake also came forward to help but was stopped by Old Fulin.

A middle-aged woman came forward and said: "Father its all because of Mellon consortium's battle with that genius architect. It has nothing to do with us. He has made the invention but haven't even sold to our family! Why should we become ghosts in his stead? Why don't you find him for help? Why doesn't he come forward as we face such a big trouble?"

Old Fulin turned angry as he heard his daughter's words.

Sander tried to appease his father as he shouted: "Shut up! Stop uttering nonsense! What are you even talking about? He didn't sell

it to us because we aren't able to manufacture such an invention. The product will rot in our hands! At the present he has gone outside the giant wall to build a stronghold for our consortium and he hasn't come back yet. We will move to his castle to live! Stop uttering nonsense! Do you want to destroy our family?"

The hall was speechless after his words.

The middle-aged woman was startled as she bowed her head and didn't continue to talk.

Old Fulin coughed as he looked up at crowd. There was a trace of disappointment in his face as he whispered: "Get my carriage."

"Yes." Sander whispered.

Old Fulin left and Sander presided over the situation.

...

Outside the giant wall.

Dudian carried flesh and blood on daily base and transported it to the splitter's nest. On the third day the last splitter hatched out from the egg. He pulled out its limbs and made it lose its combat abilities. He fed them every day as Dudian was making sure that nothing went wrong with his parasitic worm incubator.

Fifth day.

There was almost nothing left from adult splitter's flesh as Dudian had transported everything. He commanded Gwyneth to pick five scythes of the splitter and carry them back to the giant wall. Afterwards she should borrow his status as a member of the Temple and cut off the tolls that had to be paid to Holy Church. He wanted all the materials to himself.

Dudian was planning to create hunting equipment and weapons using these five sharp limbs. The so-called hunter armor produced by the Temple wasn't good enough as an armor. The production costs were expensive and normal hunters couldn't afford it. Moreover its defensive abilities were lacking.

Dudian spent most of his time in the splitter's nest as he had carried the meat of the adult splitter into here. He accompanied seven young splitters and feed them from time to time. The young splitters no longer screamed or struggled as they gradually got used to lay on the ground. The only thing that they did every day was to eat and sleep.

Chapter 348

The sixth day.

“Master there is a letter from the wall. I was told to give it to you as soon as possible.” Gwyneth’s had come back to the subway and handed out an envelope to Dudian.

Dudian took the letter form the envelope and calmly read it. As he finished he ignited a match and burned it into the ashes “Cut open the remaining materials and hid in a place near the passage. We will build a base. Sergei you will be responsible for this task. Do I need to elaborate on location and structure of the base?”

“Of course, not.”

Gwyneth said: “Master, Neuss said that it was an urgent message. IS there something wrong?” ‘Neuss’ was Jin’s original name.

Dudian faintly smiled: “It’s a good news. Nothing to worry about.”

“Good news?” There was doubt in Gwyneth’s eyes. She saw Neuss’s anxiety and it didn’t look like a good news to her. It seems that situation was extremely serious. Did Dudian intends to hide the news from both of them? But as she looked at teenager’s relaxed expression it didn’t seem that he was deliberately trying to disguise anything. Many ideas flashed past her mind but her face was calm without any emotions. She asked: “Master, do I need to reply?”

“No.” Dudian answered: “For the time being don’t enter the wall.”

Gwyneth replied: “Yes.”

Sergei looked at Dudian but didn’t make a sound.

Whoosh!

Dudian left the subway in hurry as he moved towards the splitter’s nest. He fed the seven young splitter and found a flat and dry place to sit down. As he leaned against the wall he he reached into the backpack and took out a huge cold crystal. It was shiny and much purer in comparison to normal cold crystals.

He bit his left hand and grabbed the cold crystal.

The crystal began to melt and mix with his blood. It was as if the mucus had consciousness of its own as it drilled into his body through the wound on his finger. It turned into a blue line as he spread into his body along his arm. The coldness spread into his organs.

In few moments the cold feeling quickly passed through every part of his body.

The cold feeling faded away as the energy of the cold crystal

diluted within his body. Dudian felt surge of vitality burst out through his body. His eyes seemed more bright.

"It is improving my constitution." Dudian looked at his left arm: "It's just I can't absorb much or my left hand will freeze again. It should adapt if I continue to absorb one a day."

He looked at the seven young splitters. There rich energy within the flesh and blood of the adult splitter had nurtured these young splitters and made them grow fast. Originally they would need about two months to grow up to ten meters but right now it took only few days for them to reach eight or nine meters. He believed that after a few days they will enter the growth period and they will give birth to parasitic worms.

"The longer they get the better it is..."

Dudian's mouth curled up.

...

Dudian's castle. Commercial district.

"Mr Neuss, did you send the letter?" Old Fulin looked at Neuss.

Sander, Jake and others eyes fell onto Neuss. He answered: "Old patriarch I have sent the letter and I believe soon the young master will get it. If he saw the letter then he will be back as soon as possible."

Old Fulin, Sander, Jake and others were relieved as they heard this.

“I wish he could get back as soon as possible.” Old Fulin sighed.

Neuss said: “I have sent people to wait at the exit of the passage. If there is anything new then they will immediately report back.”

“It’s been hard on you.” Old Fulin nodded slightly.

A brown haired boy who saw standing in the hall checked the clock hanging on the wall. He looked at Old Fulin and others: “Patriarch, we will be having a guest. Is it possible…”

Old Fulin looked at the teenager: “Guest?”

“Young master’s guest.” Teenager nodded.

Old Fulin turned around and looked at Sander and others: “Go upstairs and sit quietly.”

“Yes.” Sander got up and took the lead.

Everyone followed him in silence. The Ryan family had suffered a disaster and the whole family had turned into a frosted eggplants. There was not a trace of anger in them.

The teenager looked at servants: “Get ready to meet the guests.”

“Yes.”

It didn’t take long before a carriage came to stop in front of the castle. An extravagant woman got off the carriage. The teenager and Neuss greeted her at the door: “I’ve heard that Mr Dean is free today. I’ve come to talk about ‘lightning rod’.”

The teenager replied: “Hello Miss Rossie. I’m Mr Dean’s butler Kroen. This is the captain of our knight team Neuss. Please come into the castle.”

Rosie nodded as she went into the hall. She saw Old Fulin sitting in the hall. There was a trace of smile on her face: “I didn’t expect to meet the chairman of New World consortium in here. I haven’t prepared any gifts, please forgive me.”

Old Fulin laughed but he was surprised. He didn’t expect that messenger of Scott consortium would be Dudian’s guest. He hasn’t come back yet so how they will talk about the contract? He couldn’t help but glance at Kroen. He had nurtured him carefully but it seems that right now it was very difficult to see through him.

Kroen asked Rosie to sit down as he ordered the maid to bring tea: “Miss Rosie, today our young master is working on a new invention. He had already printed the contract and given it to me regarding the sales of rights of ‘lightning rod’. Please look over. If there is no problem then you can sign it now.”

Rosie was slightly started. According to the information from their intelligence network she naturally was aware of recent happenings. She was aware that the genius architect was outside the giant wall so she had come here in full doubts today. But it seems that the other side had left a contract. She looked through the contract after Kroen handed it to her.

In addition to the basic terms there were several specific conditions in the contract. Although some of them were petty but she felt that it was acceptable. After all it was an important civil invention and the market was huge.

Rosie raised her head and looked at Kroen: “There is no problem with the contract. We agree to it. However I didn’t think that Mr Dean is so bold to let his butler to finish the contract. It seems he trusts you a lot.”

Kroen smiled: “Miss Rosie is polite. Young master have always trusted us. If you think that there is no problem with the contract then please sign it.”

Rosie pulled out pen and quickly signed the contract. She smiled as she looked at Kroen: “It seems Mr Dean is working on a new invention. How long will it take for it to be ready? Our Scott consortium has cooperated with Mr Dean quite a few times so tell him on our behalf that we are willing to give the price of superior grade four star item as an offer. If architect Dean estimates the price to be less then we are ready for further discussion. Thanks you.”

Chapter 349

Kroen smiled: “Miss Rosie, young master had expected your words so he had let me to tell you on his behalf that if you want to pre-order the next invention then the offer should be equal to ‘legendary’ item’s price. You can go back and discuss but the time is limited. Please, seize the opportunity.”

Rosie was shocked.

Old Fulin who was sitting on the chair also got stunned.

Rosie had expected to hear an extraordinary price but never imagined that this proud genius would ask for a ‘legendary’ level item’s price. They had planned before and imagined that Dudian would ask for a five-star item’s price.

What was legendary gods?

It was an invention which brought up a new era!

There were very few masters who could produce two pieces of legendary items. In the history there were very few of them. Those characters were not called masters but ‘legends.’

Rosie’s mouth twitched and she was about to spoke out her mind but she restricted herself. She realized that the young butler was someone who had earned Dudian’s trust and it was not smart to offend him. Perhaps the butler may say bad things about her to

him which could affect her business: “It seems that architect Dean is very confident with his new invention. But the price is too high. Although we would like to purchase it as Scott consortium but our financial resources can’t keep up with such a price… ”

“Well.” Kroen smiled: “I’ll relay miss Rosie’s words to the young master.”

Rosie smiled politely. Although Dudian had given her chance to go back and discuss with the members of the consortium and give tell back the conclusion but she was aware that consortium would never agree. The difference between the price of five star item and legendary item was like day and night. Even such a consortium like Scott wouldn’t be able to digest such a big piece of cake. If they paid with money then they would be left behind by other consortia as they would lack funds at all levels of operation.

“I’m happy with this level of cooperation. I’ll leave now.” Rosie didn’t continue to talk so she got and was ready to leave.

Kroen also got up to send her off. He took out an envelope from his pocket: “Miss Rosie, this is a letter by our young master which he wanted me to give it to you.”

Rosie took the letter and was about to open it on spot when she heard Kroen’s voice: “Miss Rosie, I’ll send you off.”

She nodded but didn’t continue to open the envelope.

After Rosie left, Kroen and Neuss returned back to the hall.

Old Fulin looked at Kroen: “Dean is outside the giant wall. How come he is talking about the new invention? Is it to raise his fame?”

Kroen bowed: “I’m not sure about the details. Young master told me to speak so but didn’t tell the reason behind it.”

Old Fulin was startled but didn’t say anything.

…

In the carriage.

Rosie was sitting in the spacious compartment. After the carriage left the castle she took out the envelope and opened it. The letter was made from the expensive snow paper and light fragrance floated from it. She read the content but her brows wrinkled. After reading it she immediately pushed it back to envelope.

She delved into deep thoughts as the carriage slowly went away.

…

Mel family.

Office in the castle.

Sarah slowly put down the quill as she comfortable leaned back onto the chair. She looked at short maid in front of her desk: “Are you sure?”

Lisa didn’t dare to look directly into her eyes. Her head was down as she clearly said: ” According to the information miss Rosie traveled today to talk about ‘lightning rod’ with architect Dean.”

Sarah’s fingers gentle stroked the pen: “I heard that he send some high end materials back from the giant wall. Old Fulin’s letter should reach him by now. Is there any movement?”

“No.” Lisa continued: “Although Sherman Charles is a hard to buy a man but there is an informant knight of light in the team. If there is anything new then the news will reach us instantly. The architect hasn’t got the letter or else he would returned back by now.”

Sarah narrowed her eyes: “Inform me if a slight movement happens.”

“Yes.”

“So he sold the invention to Scott consortium. Hmpf! He wants to suppress us by using Scott consortium. He is really a person who was able to break out from Thorn Flower Prison! However even if he goes through thousands of calculations he should know that

even if we can't destroy Scott consortium but we will be able to exterminate that small consortia of his. Him going outside the giant wall at this sensitive time is nothing but giving us chance to stab a knife at his spine. I'll make sure that we stab two but not one!"

"Miss, the articles have been prepared. We will release the news about attack of barbarians and others."

"Alright...It doesn't matter what kind of a genius he is after he is a public enemy!"

...

Outside the giant wall.

Splitter's nest.

Another two days had passed and it was the eighth day that they had come outside the giant wall.

The temperature within the nest was cold. Seven huge shadows were lying on the ground. They would roll from time to time. The shadows were young splitters. However even though Dudian called them 'young' their trunks had increased to unimaginable size. Dudian had smeared lime powder on the roots of their limbs so they had rapidly grown in volume. All of them had become eleven or twelve meters in length. Fortunately the nest was large enough or it would be very hard to accommodate seven giants.

Dudian leaned against the wall as he calculated the time. It was eighth day so it was almost time to go back.

He looked at seven splitters. Yesterday they had reached the size where they would give birth to parasitic worms. But he didn't slaughter them immediately.

Now the time had come.

He grabbed the bow and arrows as he moved to the depths of the cave. The splitter's trunk was about ten meters away from him. The arrows were toxic and fatal.
puff!

The screams echoed as the arrow pierced into the body of the young splitter. It didn't have its scythe like limbs to protect it so Dudian had targeted the joints which were easy targets. The ground violently trembled as green liquid oozed out. Moments later the splitter stopped moving.

Chapter 350

Dudian put away the bow and arrows. He looked at the splitter to confirm that it was really dead. He quickly approached it and pulled out his dagger. He pierced through the joint with dagger and pulled out the arrow. The blood poured out and soaked the ground into dark red.

Dudian pushed his hand into the wound as it was soaked in blood of the young splitter. He was waiting for parasitic soul worm to automatically climb onto his arm because of his body temperature.

Moreover he wasn't worried about being infected with viruses or other possible diseases as he had the magic marks from juranzhi which made him act so. He had found it when he was a junior hunter that his body was immune and had resistance against vast majority of viruses!

Dudian wouldn't be infected even if he was bitten or soaked in other monster's blood. It was very difficult for other hunters to survive in such a case. Even the senior hunters were no exception.

Dudian frowned as he quietly waited. His heart was a bit nervous.

Dudian felt soft tentacles touching onto his finger after five or six minutes. He quickly retracted back his hand. There was a dark red worm that had a very small needle like organ that it used to pierce into his hand. It had very short feet that it used to climb onto his hand.

The scene was so disgusting that it made his scalp tingle. His body was about to throw it away on instinct but he held back. Although this little parasitic worm was slightly smaller in volume in comparison to adult splitter's parasitic worm but the appearance was similar. He was able to see its body structure as it was directly in front of his eyes. The worm looked like a centipede. But its legs were much shorter and thinner and they were hidden under its body. It would be hard to distinguish them at first glance as it would look like a naked worm.

"Parasitic soul worm ..." Dudian took a deep breath and raised his right hand. He was staring at the parasitic soul worm that was drilling into his hand. It was an awkward and 'twisted' scene. The picture in front of his eyes made him nauseous but he silently watched as the latter could bring him great power and strength.

There was no blood that flowed out of the wound after the parasitic worm completely drilled into his finger. The wound healed in a speed visible to the eye.

However now there was an object that had the shape of a bug that bent and climbed along his arm.

Dudian's face turned ugly as he raised his arm to observe the insect that quickly climbed over under his skin. It reached his shoulder and hurried over to his throat. He quickly raised both his hand to pinch his skin to stop the parasitic worm. He wasn't able to see the bug like shape but he clearly 'felt' its movement as he could feel every step taken by the parasitic soul worm. It was like a group of ants were quickly moving over.

It was a very creepy feeling.

The worm that was moving under his skin touched the edge of his hand which was holding onto his throat.

Dudian face changed as he didn't think that the aim of the parasitic soul worm was his brain!

What a joke!

He clenched onto his throat so that it couldn't move over.

Dudian felt that the parasitic soul worm changed its direction and began to crawl down his throat and reached his chest. He quickly tore away his armor and looked down. He saw that the worm was in his middle of his chest. However the worm wasn't going towards the magic mark but slightly to the left.

It was advancing towards his heart.

Dudian's eyes narrowed as anger gushed into his heart. How could parasitic soul worm choose directly to go to occupy his heart after it couldn't cling into his head? Both of them were cores of his body and once any of them were damaged he would die instantly. The worm tried to take over his body!

He moved his hand to press onto his skin so that the parasitic worm couldn't move forward while he used his other hand to pull out the dagger. He was angry and puzzled! However he panicked a

lot too. He knew that if the parasitic worm penetrated into his body then it would be very difficult to seize it. He even regretted to letting it penetrated into his own body. Did he used the wrong method to replace his magic marks?

Dudian had decided that if the worm tried to pierce below his skin then he was going to kill it that instant even though he would be seriously injured as a result.

The parasitic worm suddenly changed its direction as it tried to move along his palm. Dudian moved his palm to intercept and direct its movement.

After a few minutes of repetition the parasitic worm seemed to understand that its actions were useless. It slowly changed its direction as the worm moved to the center of Dudian's chest.

Dudian was relieved but there was some doubts in his heart. Why did the parasitic worm of the splitter didn't dare to replace the juranzhi's magic mark? Why did it try to go to other two deadly place as if it was aware from the beginning that those two place were the key to take over his body? Is the difference between his physical condition and constitution and young splitter's way too big?

Or, is it just this parasitic worm was aggressive?

He looked at his current magic marks which looked like blood vessels that had popped up on his chest. The parasitic worm crawled close and quickly sucked them dry. The magic marks that

looked like red blood vessels sank back onto his chest and began to slowly bulge. However no their color wasn't red but dark black. Moreover their appearance change as they didn't look like circular blood vessels but a rhombus like triangle which was similar to a diamond.

Dudian raised his hand to reach out and touch it. However he felt dizzy and his eyelids became heavy. He wanted to bit his tongue to awake himself but his mind became chaotic as his body turned weak and as a result he fainted on spot.

Darkness.

Dudian woke up from slumber. He looked around and saw that the other six splitter were still lying on the other side of the cave. However he was shocked as he saw that there was a red heat distribution on their bodies. It was like lava was flowing through their bodies and as a result they emitted huge heat.

Could he detect the heat?

He was stunned as he looked down at his chest. The previous magic mark was replaced by a new diamond-shape magic mark. He raised his hand and touched it. The magic mark was not soft as it was earlier but hard and sharp. It was like a scale.

Is this the magic mark of the splitter?

Did he successfully replace the magic marks?

He winked few times before looking back at six splitter. There heat emitted from their bodies. Then he looked at the splitter that he had previously killed. It still had heat emitting from its body but it was very weak. It seemed like the ashes left after the fire and it would go out any time soon.

In addition to the newly acquired ‘thermal vision’ he still had the dark vision. He hadn’t lost the ability from the juranzhi. He looked around and saw the dagger that he was holding onto. He used his nails to touch the handle of the dagger.

The dagger’s handle was intact without any scratches.

Dudian was a bit disappointed. It seems that while the new thermal vision ability was acquired he was able to keep dark vision because of they were similar to each other. It was no wonder to him now why the splitter’s nest was so dark and young splitters could act so freely after they were born. This thermal vision was one of the main reasons why the splitter could find the mutated crocodiles within the swamps without any difficulties.

“It is an awesome ability to track. Basically I will be able to see any monsters even the cold-blooded creatures aren’t an exception. Every creature has a body temperature level, especially the hearts!” Dudian was at peace. His eye-sight and visualization abilities had upgraded a lot. Most probably the other abilities had gone through an excellent evolution too. It was just there were no records on abilities gained after acquiring the magic marks of the splitter. He would be able to slowly explore the new abilities in the future.

Dudian's nose gentle switched as he sniffed the air. In addition to smell he heard the 'sounds'. It was like numerous worms and insects were crawling around. His face turned ugly as he looked around. There were no red dots(heat tracking) so it meant that there were no insects lurking around. He sniffed more. It was clear that he was hearing very subtle voices. The sound was very strangle. It reminded him of the sounds when sands flowed and waters crashed.

After 10 minutes of observation Dudian finally understood the source of this sound. It was the sound of the smell.

He was literally able to smell the scents of sounds!

"It is a rare medical phenomenon called 'synesthesia'. The probability of something like this to appear is one in hundred thousand." Dudian had read a lot from the super chip. He was concerned about natural medicine so he had read a lot. It was the result of confusion in senses. He was able to make the judgement right now about this phenomenon because he was able to hear the scents of sounds as he blocked his ears. He just had to sniff!

"My vision had evolved from 'dark vision' into 'thermal dark vision'. (both of them)"

"My sense of smell and hearing is in a confused state. So the scope of sense has been reduced a lot. I can't detect the smells like I previously did but I can sense the scent of sound. So if I listen to them then my range will be as big as my hearing can detect. In

short basically no monster can hide from me within my hearing range!”

“My eyes, nose and ears have evolved a lot! There is no big changes in my mouth.”

“There are physical changes too. My finger and toenails have become very hard unlike human nails. They more like metal blades. However I have yet to find any abnormalities in other parts of my body.”

Dudian classified the changes in his body after a time period of induction. He was extremely satisfied. It was indeed the magic marks of a legendary monster! Although the scope of his perception wasn’t as far as the juranzhi’s but within his range and domain he was without a competition. He was able sense and smell anything that would hide. He could see the monsters hidden under the soil. In short there were no dead ends! Unless a monster with some special ability would come out.

However it would be tough to meet such a monster. Moreover the abilities he had acquired weren’t surprising as the splitter had evolved into an ultimate attack-based monster. It’s body structure and attitude made it a war machine. Its perception had to be corresponding to its abilities or else it would be an empty shell which lots of power. It had to find the enemy and prey on it or else it wouldn’t be called legendary monster for nothing.

It was called legendary because all aspects of it had to reach the apex!

This was a monster which was literally the perfect one.

“The perception is way too strong as a result of splitter’s evolution. I assume the combat abilities should be more terrifying…” Dudian’s eyes lit up. He was eager to test things but his time was limited. He didn’t continue to ponder as he went close to the other six young splitters.

The other six splitter were lying on the ground. Their bodies began to gently twist and they squeaked as they saw Dudian approaching towards them.

Dudian was very familiar with this position. They wanted food.

Dudian ignored them and grabbed onto the tail of one of the splitters. He dragged it to the side and pierced its body with the dagger.

The splitter struggled as it twisted its body but Dudian was tightly holding onto it. After a few laps it gradually weakened and stopped moving at all.

Dudian twisted the dagger to stimulate the wound. There was no response from the splitter. He cut it up as the organs gushed out.

Previously he had the magic marks of the juranzhi so he wasn’t afraid of diseases and viruses because of the extraordinary resistance to them. However he wasn’t sure the new magic marks

had resistance to these tiny bacteria and parasites.

Dudian closely observed as the internal organs and blood flowed out. He saw a red dot come out with the blood flow. This red dot was very bright because of the heat it emitted. It was like a pinkish red point.

Chapter 351

Dudian pulled out an arrow and moved closer to the worm. He looked at its appearance which was similar to the previous one.

He took out a jar from his pocket and caught the worm. Dudian opened the jar and threw the parasitic worm into it. It was full with filtered drinking water that he had prepared in advance. The blood stains turned the whole bottle into red.

Dudian shook the jar and opened it. He bit his finger and flowed few drops of blood along the edge of the jar. It didn't take a moment as the parasitic soul worm slowly climbed out in the direction of the blood drops. Dudian caught it with his fingers. The latter made a fierce struggle as it tried to poke its spike into his palm. However there was no pain but dumb feeling because of its attacks.

Dudian took out the syringe that he had prepared in advance. He pushed its needle fiercely onto the parasitic soul worm.

The parasitic soul worm violently struggled in panic. Dudian pushed the metal handle and pulled it back. The last drop of the blood within the parasitic soul worm was drawn into the syringe. It was full of dark red mucus.

Dudian stabbed the needle into the splitter's magic marks on his chest. The magic mark was hard so he could penetrate for a few millimeters after few stabs. Dudian controlled the force as he injected the dark red mucus into his magic marks. Slowly, the

mucus flowed into his magic marks through the needle of the syringe.

Dudian made sure that he had injected the last drop of the mucus inside the syringe. Finally it was flattened.

He wiped the sweat from his forehead as he felt the slight changes in his magic marks. He felt a faint saturated feeling. His body was full of strength.

He looked at the other splitters. Dudian didn't pause but put away the syringe and pulled another splitter. He slaughtered it and collected its parasitic soul worm.

After the absorption of the mucus of the second parasitic soul worm he felt visible change on his magic marks. The corners of the magic marks had turned faintly silver.

Dudian rested for ten minutes and killed the third splitter.

After sometime Dudian had absorbed four parasitic soul worms. He was dragging one of the last two surviving splitters. The one he was dragging seemed to realize the fate it was going to encounter. The splitter struggled hard as it was being dragged over by Dudian. It squeaked in panic.

Dudian stopped after some distance. He wagged the dagger as he slaughtered the splitter. A red spot slipped out. It was exuded heat.

Dudian squatted down and used the arrow to attract its attention. He put it into the jar, washed it and took it out. Afterwards he used the syringe to draw the blood(mucus) of the parasitic soul worm.

“Fifth ...”

Dudian looked at the parasitic soul worm that was struggling as he pulled the handle of the syringe. There was some tension and big expectations in his heart. Although using five splitter’s wasn’t going to give 100 percent success in ‘deification’ so he had prepared the sixth one too. If the sixth try failed then he was going to use splitty who was inside the giant wall. According to the girl from Dragon family(clan?) using seven parasitic worms would give 70 percent of chance in successful deification!

It is already a very high chance!

Dudian was prepared to use seven of them but he still hoped to reach success after five tries. He hoped that his luck won’t turn its face against him.

He prayed in his heart. Although there was no point or goal in a prayer but it was like a hidden instinct that was coded into his gene. Dudian took a deep breath and pointed the needle at the point on the magic marks where he had previously pierced through. He slowly pushed the needle into his magic marks and pressed the handle of the syringe.

The liquid inside the syringe penetrated into Dudian’s magic marks along the needle.

“Success! Success!”

Dudian clenched his teeth as he secretly prayed.

He pushed the handle until the end. He opened the valve of the syringe and withdrew the handle. He once again pushed it down.

The little residues of the mucus were driven by the pressure and slowly injected into his magic marks.

Dudian repeatedly pushed for several times until nothing was left. He pulled out the syringe.

His heart was in peace as he looked down at the magic marks on his chest.

One second, two seconds…Time passed…The magic marks didn’t change after few minutes of waiting.

Dudian’s face turned ugly as he didn’t think that it will end with his bad luck. He clenched his teeth as he came to stand in front of the last splitter.

The splitter was scared as it saw Dudian approach towards it. It was full of fear as it began to twist its body to move back. The hunters would be shocked if they saw such a scene. A dignified legendery monster was afraid of a human!

Dudian squatted down to kill it with dagger. However he felt a strange feeling flock through his chest to his body. It felt like numerous ants were crawling all over his body. The itchy feeling that popped up was unbearable.

He was startled as he backed away from the splitter to increase his distance. He turned his head and witnessed the scary scene. He saw blood vessels were protruding from his spine like spider webs. They were constructing into a strange patterns. The color of the blood was becoming more brighter as time passed. Moreover he tears flowed out as pains bursts became more intense.

The blood vessels become clear as time passed. Additionally the skin was raised out as if it was torn. He clenched his teeth as he wanted to roar out to let the pain go away. He saw that the skin on his back began to fall down as they turned dead. He felt a different feeling emerging from his spine. It seems like a separate organ was created out of his body.

He was terrified because of the unknown changes to his body. It made him even forget the pain. He turned to check once more. The dead skin was torn and fallen down. There was transparent wings on his back.

They flapped and a light breeze blew.

It was like the time was frozen.

Transparent wings were strength out from his spine. He was

shocked as the breeze hit his face.

Wings?

Do... I have wings?

He was startled. Dudian's eyes blinked as the transparent wing shook in the back.

Is this the result of deification of the legendary magic marks?

He remembered that the splitty had used the small wings on its back to catch up with him. Although it had wings which were hidden under its shell but its body was too big for the wings to be used to fly. It could glide at low attitudes or use them to increase its speed and make maneuvers.

However he had proper wings after the deification!

Similar to the wings of the splitter!

Dudian touched the transparent wings at his spine. He felt warm. Moreover they were extremely hard as if they were thin metals. He pinched them and that part slightly deformed. However after letting that part go it restored back to its original composition!

Dudian tried to control the transparent wings. He found out that it was like he had grown two arms out from his spine. It was a

wonderful feeling as the wings waved. He felt the breeze that blew by his arms. He controlled them and gradually increased the frequency of flaps. His body began to float up as his body was removed from the ground.

Dudian looked down as he saw his toes were dozens of centimeters away from the ground. Excitement burst out of his heart! He was able to fly! He could fly!

He landed down and tried to control each wing one by one. The left one moved then the right one moved. It felt very natural to control them.

Dudian recovered after playing for some time. However there was this strange feeling in his heart. He didn't know whether to be excited or frustrated at the situation. It was no doubt that having wings was a great help to him. He would be able to have air superiority. Especially if he hunted down land monsters. It was like giving him invincibility. He could keep attack for long time! However as a human being...what did it mean to have pair of insect-like wings? Was he still a human?

Dudian knew that parasitic soul worms did increase his strength but also changed nature and essence. At least by definition he wasn't a 'human' anymore.

Perhaps, the saying of aristocrats about hunters were true. Hunters are monsters!

It was indeed so.

After the absorption of the parasitic worms palms of some hunters could turn into claws. Some had changes in their eyes while the teeth of others became sharper. None of the were characteristics that belonged to humans! In addition after a long time of hunting and battles of life and death the hunters turned more violent. The tendencies would change to a great extent. At some point there would be a hunter would be no different from a monster but their appearance.

There was faint sadness in his heart as he thought of these. The excitement he felt because of the wings faded away. He sighed as he controlled his wings. Moreover as he looked back he saw numerous bloodshots on his back!

He was startled. He controlled his wings and created a gap. There were patterns that looked like bloodshots. They extended from his waist onto his neck. He bowed his head and looked at the patterns from his waist to the armpit. He could see bloodshots all over his body. In his arm, chest legs...Everywhere!

His pupils narrowed as his heart turned aghast. Although there was no mirror to check his face but he could imagine how ugly his appearance had become because of the bloodshots.

It would be impossible for him to step into the Temple of elements with such looks.

The fame that he had previously accumulated would crash in a moment. There was only one label which he will be assessed as:

MONSTER!

He could imagine the propaganda that will be thrown at him be the hostile consortia!

He bit his lips and clenched his fists. However he saw that the bloodshots on his fists were suppressed after clenching the palms into fists. He turn to check the splitter that was next to him. The anger on his face disappeared.

He saw that the splitter was wrapped in numerous blood vessels in various sizes. Those blood vessels were much larger than the ones he saw on himself. He could even see the blood flow in some of those blood vessels.

Dudian was startled as he thought of another possibility. He looked at the splitter he had killed recently. Its body was also wrapped in blood vessels but the color was much lighter.

There was a wry smile on his face. Actually it wasn't that his body has changed. It was his own eyes that evolved!

Because of deification his eyes seem to have evolved once more.

In addition to 'dark' and thermal' vision now he was able to see the blood vessels of the living being.

Dudian bowed his head as he looked at his own chest. He saw the blood vessels and his own heart. It was bright red, beated

constantly and pumped the blood into his body.

Dudian was relieved. The wings at his back had stimulated his imagination to think that his body has also changed. He couldn’t keep his calm for a moment and scared himself!

He gentle sniffed and test the other abilities.

He found out that his sense of smell and hearing hadn’t evolved but the scope had expanded. It was almost the twice of the previous range. It was a terrifying result!

Chapter 352

Dudian cleaned up the things on the ground and neatly wore the hunter armor. Now he didn't have the extraordinary resistance of juranzhi's magic marks so he could be affect by the radiation, rain and bacteria contained in the rotting corpses of the monster. It would all could cause a damage to his body. He didn't know if the magic marks of the splitter had improved his resistance. He had to go back to the wall to check. He couldn't take the risk at this moment.

Squeak~~

The splitter lying on the corner screamed in fear as it shrank its body.

Dudian whispered as it looked at it: "Don't be afraid. You survived."

As he had gone through deification there was no need to kill it. There were two options. The first was to sell the parasitic worm of the splitter and the second option was to give to the person he trusted. For now he didn't plan to do anything and shelve it for time being.

Dudian moved out of the cave and closed the gap. He felt fresh air blowing at his face. He took a light breath. He calculated that monsters will migrate to this area after some time as the adult splitter wasn't around anymore. But it would be very difficult for these monster to pass into the splitter's nest. Moreover even

though the young splitter was in a growth period but it had reached level 40. Although it didn't have no scythes or claws but it was strong enough to tear of most of the monsters with its sharp teeth.

Dudian glanced around the cave. He saw small red heat being emitted from the bushes about few hundred meters away. It should be the most common monster of the wilderness.

He retracted his eyes and turned away.

Whoosh!

Dudian was surprised as he ran. His speed was much faster than he imagined it to be. The air whistled by his ears and he felt like he was flying.

He suddenly stopped and his body firmly braked without shaking.

Dudian checked his hands and feet. Did his body evolve into a senior hunter after the deification?

However he remember that the dragon girl told him that his constitution would not improve after the deification!

"It is clear that only top senior hunters can achieve such a speed!" Dudian ran. Each step that he took moved his body four or five meters away. He couldn't help but try to jump out of curiosity.

He felt amazed as he could jump up to seven or eight meters!

It meant a two-story leap!

Dudian's knees slightly bent as he landed. There was no pain or extra efforts added for his landing. He was extremely surprised. He hadn't seen Gwyneth or Sergei have such jumping force or such speed! Although they had spikes nailed onto their bodies but in times of crisis body of them broke through their limits. However it was still far from his current speed!

Dudian was not clear about what had happened but he felt happy because of unexpected increase in power and strength. Splitter wasn't called a legendary monster for nothing!

"I'm still an intermediate hunter if the dragon girl didn't deceive me. At least she is right in terms of magic marks. But for me to have such a force...It is likely that the structure of my body has changed. The muscles around my body seems to have increased and they have grown. I think I will be able to burst out several times more power than usual!" Dudian made guesses but he had to wait to confirm until he went into the giant wall. He may use a new parasitic worm to try to advance to a senior hunter. If that would be a success then it would be a proof that he was an intermediate hunter. If it was a failure then the dragon girl had deceived him.

Dudian continued to run as he sorted out his thoughts.

Whooosh!

There was a smile on his face as the wind blowed and whistled by his ears.

Dudian looked at the ruins of a building after running for a few kilometers. There was a dark red heat hidden inside. From the shape he thought that iwas a crawling creature which was similar to a crocodile.

Dudian thought that it would be a jungle lizard as he took into account that it was a humid environment!

He didn’t slow down as he ran straight over to the building. Dudian stopped tens of meters away from the building. He saw that giant lizard-like heat shook its tail. It seems the monster was disturbed by his arrival. It crawled as it approached the door of the building. The gate was covered in vines and moss. It was a great cover and it seemed that there was nothing behind it at first glance.

Dudian wouldn’t be identify such a monster if he didn’t have thermal vision. He would have never imagined that such a monster was waiting for an opportunity to move any moment.

Dudian didn’t want to use arrows as jungle lizard was only level 14 monster. He could fight it on in a melee combat relying on his strength. Even though his close combat abilities were lacking but taking into account his current constitution he was sure that he would be able to handle a jungle lizard.

He squatted down and picked a stone. Dudian threw it over.

Whoosh!

The stoned hit the lizard.

There was no movement.

Dudian was surprised as he didn't think that this monster was so tolerable. He bent over and picked a boulder which was two or three hundred pounds. He walked to stop ten meters away from the building's door and mercilessly threw the boulder.

Bang!

The giant monster retreated to avoid the boulder. However as if it was a crouching tiger waiting for its prey the next moment it broke of the shelter of the vines and weeds and rushed towards Dudian.

Dudian was shocked the moment he saw the monster's appearance. It was not a jungle lizard but a sword-tailed rocky crocodile! A level 26 monster!

Run!

The first thought that popped up in his mind was to retreat. Originally he had hunted black weaver with Glenn and was aware

of how dangerous such level monster was. Not to mention him being an intermediate hunter but in addition he was a close combat rookie! He didn't have a chance!

Whoosh!

He turned and ran for his life.

Bang! Bang! Bang!

The sword-tailed rocky crocodile rapidly chased behind him as the earthquake like sounds echoed because of its movement. However the sounds echoed from farther and farther away.

Dudian looked back to see that there was 100 meters of distance separating them.

He saw that the sword-tailed rocky crocodile was still chasing after him so he slowed his own pace. But he still kept running in front and easily controlled the space between them. After a few kilometers there was an eager feeling that gradually appeared in Dudian's heart. It seems that a level 26 monster wasn't as terrifying as he imagined it to be.

Maybe even he wouldn't be totally hopeless against it if he fought back.

He slowed down, pulled out his dagger, turned back and rushed up at it.

Roar!

The sword-tailed rocky crocodile roared in anger as it saw the prey was running back at it.

Dudian was prepared as his body made a sudden turn and slide past by the monster. At the same moment he fiercely stabbed the dagger at the side of its jaw.

Puff! The dagger penetrated the jaw slits which had lots of blood vessels and cut them off. Dudian pulled back the dagger as he withdrew. He found out that the tip of the dagger was bent!

Dudian was shocked. He didn't know from where the courage poured into him but he used his palm to grasp onto the scales of the sword-tailed rocky crocodile.

Roar!

The monster roared in anger and twisted its head to bite at Dudian. However its head could only twist for ninety degree and it couldn't reach Dudian.

Dudian's fingernails clung onto its back as if they were metal spikes. The gray crust of the crocodile was comparable to rock. That was one of the reasons why it was called 'rocky crocodile'. But at the moments Dudian's fingernails had pierced its scales through the gaps.

Dudian lifted his fist and punched onto its head.

Bang!

The sword-tailed rocky crocodile’s head was violently knocked onto the ground.

Dudian seized the chance and smashed once more.

Bang!

Once again the sword-tailed rocky crocodile’s jaw was knocked onto the ground.

Dudian repeatedly hammered the monster.

The crocodile twisted its body in a crazy manner because of pain and finally dumped Dudian.

Dudian landed on ground and rushed past. The crocodile seemed that have been weakened as it was acting slowly. Dudian waved his dagger and stabbed into its eyes. He cut out a big hole and jumped onto its head. He trampled over its upper jaw as he mercilessly stabbed the dagger onto its other eye.

There was no sound coming off the sword-tailed rocky crocodile as its body was lying in the pool of blood.

Dudian was gentle breathed as he sat on top of the crocodile. He was excited because he was able to kill a level 26 monster with his own bare hands! Even an experienced senior hunters would be having difficulties to accomplish such a task alone. They had to rely on traps that they had made in advance and use the geography into their advantage to kill such a monster.

However he was in plains and he relied on his speed and strength to accomplish the task. Dudian didn't use any external factors!

"My strength and speed as well as the timing of my body's responses should be comparable to top senior hunters...If I used bow and arrows then I would have killed the monster without an effort!" Dudian was excited. He was planning to buy other magic marks and use them as nutrient to break into senior hunter level. It was an important part of his next plant! After deification he had such power so he hoped to get further ahead!

But it had to be noted that it may not be traces of deification. Maybe it was the impact of the magic marks of the splitter. He hadn't tested anything before a successful deification so he wasn't aware of improvement.

Dudian stood up and looked at sword-tailed rocky crocodile. He collected the two long teeth at the front of its mouth. Its front teeth were comparable to its body fat and leather. But for him the value of these two teeth was much expensive than gold. They could be forged into sharp daggers!

Dudian washed both of the teeth with filtered water and left the place. As for the leather and claws...He was too lazy to collect them. It was a good money for an ordinary hunter to collect them but it wasn't worth anything for him at this point.

Whoosh!

Dudian returned to subway after ten minutes.

Gwyneth and Sergei were relieved to see Dudian as they heard the movement.

Dudian saw that both of them came out from hiding: "Are you ready?"

Sergei replied: "We have transported the sharp body parts of the monster to the vicinity of the giant wall and have created an underground base according to your orders."

Dudian nodded slightly as he came into the subway station. He saw the huge skeleton of the adult splitter and its rotten flesh. All the limbs were gone.

"Let's go." Dudian took the lead.

Sergei and Gwyneth followed after him.

In the blink of an eye they were standing in front of the passage.

Sergei was about to open the giant door as he was too lazy to listen to Dudian's orders. He heard Dudian's orders: "Wait."

Sergei wrinkled his eyebrows: "Where?"

"From there." Dudian pointed to the top of the giant wall.

Sergei smiled as he was confused: "Boss, are you joking?"

"Do you think I'll be joking with you?" Dudian looked at him and turned to the side. He picked up suction cups that were hidden behind the grasses. He cleaned the dew and moisture. Dudian jumped over seven meters and pushed the suction cups towards the wall. His strength was totally different from last time so the cups connected on first try. He rapidly climbed up.

Sergei and Gwyneth's pupils shrank in shock.

Both of them recovered their eyes as Dudian had reached four or five hundred meters of height. They looked at each other to see the surprise reflected in their pupils. They were surprised at the strange climbing method of Dudian. Moreover they were shocked the height he jumped up.

Dudian climbed to the top of the giant wall in a short time. He found the remaining shark spears and rope on the ground not for from the place he had climbed on.

He threw the rope to pull Sergei and Gwyneth.

Their faces had turned white in fear after reaching the top of the wall. Although they had dangerous experiences but they have never been at such altitudes. It was like the experience of facing the monster for the first time.

“You were like a crawler.” Sergei wryly smiled as he wiped the sweat off his forehead.

Dudian faintly smiled. Crawler should be a monster that could climb over the giant wall.

He pulled the rope and threw it to the other side of the giant wall. Sergei and Gwyneth were first to go down as he went last.

As he was two or three hundred meters away from the ground Dudian released the rope. He fell onto a wooden frame on the giant wall. It was a platform made to repair the wall. The height from the ground was approximately three hundred meters and the project could be considered very vast.

Chapter 353

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Dudian, Gwyneth and Sergei used the frames built for maintanence to quickly go down to ground. They were like monkeys in the jungle which jumped from one branch of tree to the other. They landed on top of weeds.

“Young master, why didn’t we come out directly from the passage?” Sergei asked as they squatted on the ground.

Dudian was checking the surroundings as he indifferently replied: “Didn’t you learn how to use your brain after being in the prison for so long?”

“We are not in prison now.”

“That place is being monitored. Is it different from the prison? ”

Gwyneth whispered: “Master, is someone at the entrance monitors our movement? Is it your enemy?”

“Not just enemy but even the people who care about us.” Dudian looked at her: “I had previously forbid you to come back so that we cut off contact with the giant wall! If you were my enemy and didn’t have information about me then will you be able to attack me at any time? Would you be prepared for my attacks?”

Sergei nodded: “I got it!”

“Good.” Dudian glanced at him. He turned around and looked for a moment. There were no one around so he bent over and ran forward.

The other to followed behind him in the same manner.

Dudian, Gwyneth and Sergei came to the fort controlled by the Holy Church after half an hour. There were several teams of knights of lights in the vicinity. They were touring and patrolling the surroundings. In addition there was a beast about two kilometers ahead. It had a humanoid shape as it lurked close to the fort.

“Master this is the barrier preventing hunters from sneaking back to the outer wall area. The knights are comparable to senior hunters. It wouldn’t be so easy to pass by them.” Sergei looked at the fort and barrier as he said.

Gwyneth looked at Dudian. His face remained calm so she couldn’t see through his mood.

Dudian looked at the sky over the barrier. His eyes lit up and mouth curled into a smile. He turned towards Gwyneth and Sergei: “Are you willing to kill them and pass the barrier?” He said in a relaxed tone as if he was asking the two for a dinner together.

Sergei and Gwyneth were stunned as they looked at the smiling face of the teenager. Sergei took the lead as he replied: “Kill them? Are you sure?”

“Do you have the guts?”

Sergei’s eyebrows wrinkled: “There is nothing in this world that I wouldn’t dare!”

“Gwyneth what about you?”

“Un.”

Dudian turned back to the fort. The wind swept over the bushes that they were hiding in. He removed his bow from his back and looked to the front: “Get ready for an attack!”

“Are you sure? I like it.” Sergei licked his lips. There was a trace of excitement in his eyes as he clenched onto his spear.

Gwyneth silently took out two swords from her waist.

Whoosh!

Dudian rushed out.

Gwyneth and Sergei followed after him.

The trio approached the barrier. The sentry above the fort was three black spots that appeared in his line of sight. He took out the telescope and saw that it wasn't an illusion but real people. The three figures were approaching the fort at high speeds. Moreover they had weapons!

The enemy?

Sentry was startled. He quickly reacted as he rushed back and ring the alarm.

Pound!

The alarm echoed all around the fort.

The people in the barracks, patrolling teams and the beast lurking around were alerted by the alarm. The knights gathered towards the fort.

Whoosh!

A black and blue arrow shot past and hit the neck of the sentry. The force of the arrow was so strong that it pulled the sentry's body from the ground and nailed his body onto the wooden pillar of the bell tower.

Dudian shoot the arrows numerous times as there were still a

hundred meters to reach the barrier. It didn't take long for them to reach the wall. He raised his feet in a sudden move and stampede on the wall to run up the wall. (His feet would touch the bricks and move up his body)

The scene stunned the knight of light on the wall. They wanted to react but Dudian had already stepped over 13 meters from the ground.

"Arrows!"

The captain roared as he moved out of the barracks.

Dudian was using his toes to pedal his body over the high wall. At the last moment he put a bit more strength as he made a vertical jump.

His body rose up like the phoenix. The knight of light was stunned but quickly reacted as he tried to use his bow.

Dudian waved his hand to change the direction of the bow. He quickly went into the crowd as he began the massacre. One of the knight's head was pierced by the arrow. Another one tried to use his spear to attack Dudian.

The knight didn't have the change to attack when he fell down the wall as he screamed.

Dudian had grabbed the spear and waved it as he threw the

previous knight. He used the same spear to cut off the throats of knights in the surrounding.

“Rush over!

“Stop him!”

“This man, this man is … … ah!”

It seems that few knights were aware of the Dudian’s identity but there was not enough time to call out his name. Dudian pierced the chest of another knight as he went through the crowd.

Nevertheless, a knight standing in the outer edge recognized Dudian and said out his name in shock.

Dudian was like a wolf which had gone into the flock of sheep. His face was colored in red as the warm blood of the knights was spilled onto his face. He recalled the way splitty had gone to fort to kill the knights of light. He also remembered the alchemist’s death scene at his first trial as a scavenger.

In a matter of short minutes everyone was dead in the fort.

Sergei and Gwyneth joined Dudian who was absorbed in the battle.

“You, you are De …” The middle-aged knight who was the

captain of the fort spoke out. He wasn't wearing a knight armor as he rushed towards Dudian. Before he was able to finish his words the spear in Dudian's hands stabbed over and interrupted him.

There was a shocked expression on his face. He would never expect an architect being able to use weapons.

Dudian stabbed out spear as he continued to attack middle-aged knight's chest. The man was forced to retreat. Naturally his ability was no less than a hunter's. But they lacked the experience that hunters had. However the man had the constitution which was comparable to a senior hunter.

Both of them had attacked and retreated for more than hundred times in the a few minutes of fierce battle. One of Dudian's attacks was able to pierce his chest but he wasn't able to directly stab onto his heart. The man fell backwards from the wall.

Dudian jumped form the wall which was almost twenty meters in height.

Dudian rolled once as he landed. The next moment he stabbed the spear onto middle-aged knight's neck.

"Architect, no ~~" The middle-aged man looked frightened. He tried to resist but failed to stop the spear as it pierced through the neck. The man's eyes widened as he looked at Dudian.

Dudian pulled out the spear. He pierced the man's heart, hands,

feet and stabbed in few other places. He poked out seven or eight holes. He was relying on his thermal vision to check on the living being around the fort.

Gwyneth and Sergei's bodies were covered in blood too as they came to stop beside Dudian.

"Are you finished?" Sergei looked at the corpse in excitement.

Dudian nodded "Destroy the original wounds in all the corpses and poke out new ones."

Sergei understood the meaning behind Dudian's words. He picked up a weapon from the ground and went towards the corpses of knight.

Gwyneth pulled out a knife as she went after Sergei.

Dudian squatted down by the middle-aged knight's side. He pulled out an arrow from the quiver and nailed it onto man's mouth. He picked the finger of the man and wrote three words on the sand next to the corpse:

Dean is murderer!

Chapter 354

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Sergei and Gwyneth came back from the barrier and stopped by Dudian's side. They were surprised to see the writing on the sand. Sergei rapidly approached and lifted his foot to erase the memo.

Dudian stopped him.

"Ah?" Sergei was stunned.

"I wrote it" Dudian said as he looked at both of them: "Are you done? If so, then let's go!"

Sergei pulled him back: "Are you crazy? We have killed so many people who belonged to Holy Church. If such a message is leaked out no one will be able to protect even an architect like you!"

"Who said I did it?" Dudian asked.

"Your name is written on the ground. It will put you on the first row in the suspect list as the most suspicious person. What do you reckon they will think when they saw your name on ground? Even the Holy Church may not believe to you!"

"There will be a proof…" Dudian turned away as he looked at the red heat.

Sergei was startled as he looked at Gwyneth for a tip.

Gwyneth shook her head as she went after Dudian.

Sergei touched the back of his head as he was at a loss.

...

Dudian's castle.

A number of journalists from various news agencies were by the gate waiting for an interview. They were whispering one after another which made the place very boiling and lively.

"You can't enter!"

"I said no one can not enter! Young master is an architect. If you dare to break into this private property then we will sue you!"

Neuss, Sander and four knights from the Ryan family were blocking the entrance. There were many people from different news agencies which wanted to sneak into the castle.

Old Fulin sat in the chair inside the castle's hall. From time to time he looked through the windows to the situation outside the castle. There was anxiousness in his heart. This same thing has been happening every day for the last two or three days. They had

sent message outside the giant wall but no reply was received. The noise coming off from the outside made him very upset.

"Patriarch, You should go upstairs to rest." Kroen said in a low tone as he came to Old Fulin's side: "I will inform you when the young master comes back."

Old Fulin shook his head: "I'll be here waiting for him. You should go outside to help to deal with those flies. "

Kroen sighed and turned away.

Sander who wiped the sweat of his forehead entered the hall after few moments. He sat on chair as he kneaded his sore arm. Jake who was sitting in the hall whispered: "When do you think the young master will come back? Is it really as the newspapers write about him?"

Sander turned his head and looked at him: "Shut up, you idiot!"

Jake didn't say anything. If it was before then he wouldn't care much about his brother let alone fear him. But know because of his mistakes the Ryan family could decline or even perish.

Sander looked at him in disgust. He felt ashamed as he knew that he had the same father as Jake. He stood up and went towards Old Fulin: "Father if he continues to sit still then Mellon will continue their wanton attacks. I'm afraid even if he comes back there won't be much of a change."

Old Fulin looked at his son. In the last few days the hair on Sander's temples had turned white. He sighed: "The greatest contribution we can do to him at this point is by doing nothing. If we move out of this castle then Mellon will use us once again to attack him. So the only option is to wait. We have a hope as long as the barbarians don't attack!"

There was sadness in Sander's eyes: "I'm afraid there is nothing we can do to hold the attack of the barbarians. There are news in the papers to sway the public opinion. It is written that Mr Dean has secretly sold information to the barbarians. Moreover it is mentioned that he has sold his inventions to the barbarians so that they could easily pass through the Fort King (The one by the Red Maple mountain). Many civilians believe these stories to be true. In addition today's military newspaper also reported that the barbarians that they had captured had admitted that Mr Dean had cooperated with them. I believe that Mr Dean will never do such a thing. I think both Mellon consortium and military wants to frame him!"

Old Fulin lightly smiled: "Except civilians everyone else is aware of this dirty trick."

"It is fortunate that we have Scott consortium and Holy Church who makes the balance or else..." He continued: "They will send someone to make the charges."

"Pray..." Old Fulin closed his eyes.

...

The conference hall. Mellon consortium.

The acting patriarch of the Mel family, Mark was sitting at the table in the conference hall. Patriarch Rudolp from the Burong family was sitting on his right. As of now the situation was totally different to the one few months ago. Mel family held the right to veto as they had 51 percent of the shares in the consortium. They didn't need to comply with Burong family as they did back in the old days. Even if Burong family cooperated with the other forces within the consortium there wouldn't be much they could do.

It was a very heavy blow to Burong and other families within the consortium. It would be very difficult for them to sway the direction of the consortium. At this point the Mel family was holding onto the absolute executive power.

"Mark, your daughter is just over sixteen years old now. I don't think she should be participating in the conference at this age. You should not misunderstand me as I think that Miss Sarah is a good girl She looks so charming. The girls in her age should be studying piano or listening to White Swan music." A middle aged man smiled and said.

Mark glanced back at him. He hadn't opened his mouth yet when the girl sitting on his left side said: "I think its not right to judge the person's ability because of their age. By the way I have reached level six in piano studies. Which level your daughter has practiced to?"

Middle-aged man laughed as he wasn't angered by her words: "How can my little girl be compared to you? I just feel bad that your father brought you into such an environment at such a young age. It will break the beautiful childhood that you should enjoy. Be careful."

"Not worth mentioning." Sarah indifferently said as her tone was very calm.

Everyone quietly watched the little girl.

"Okay, let's talk about the main issue at hand." Marked patted his palms to grab the attention: "According to the intelligence reports the barbarians will attack in two days. It will be the moment when we act."

Rudolph who was sitting next to him asked: "Can we rely get information about military decisions of the barbarians?"

Mark smiled: "There isn't that you can't know as long as you are willing to pay its price. Our consortium lost money and people in the process but it was worth the news."

The man continued: "In that case I have a question. Patriarch Mark I would like to hear your answer."

Chapter 355

“Please ask…” Mark looked at Rudolph then back at the man.

The man nodded: “We are investing all our financial resources and materials in the war as the outbreak of war is inevitable. We have taken this opportunity to associate ourselves with the Temple too. We have been very careful in our deployments but I have heard rumors that after the war we will be creating an alliance with Scott consortium…”

“Alliance?”

“With the Scott consortium?”

The people on both sides of the table were surprised as they looked at each other. Some of them laughed out loud.

Mark’s eyebrows tightly wrinkled: “Is it because of age that my hearing has become so bad? Am I hallucinating? How can you come up with such an absurd and fantastic thing. I’m beginning to doubt that you have come from the inner wall.”

The man laughed: “Mr Mark I was just saying the things that I have heard. After listening to you deny it, now it seems more foolish than ever.”

Mark continued: “I’m interested in people who are spreading such rumors. You should look into the source of the rumors.”

The man respectfully replied: “Of course, I will look into the details even if you didn’t ask for that.”

…

Mount Er. Burong castle.

Rudolph directly went back to his home after the conference. He took off his jacket and handed to maid that was inside the castle. He removed his hat and threw it at female servant. The latter rushed out to catch it as she was scared for the hat to feel onto ground.

“Master.” Butler greeted Rudolph inside the castle: “Miss wants to see you …”

“I don’t have time.” Rudolph quickly went upstairs through the hall.

“You may not have time but I do.” A figure came out from the corner of the second floor and stopped in front of Rudolph. It was Jenny who was wearing a green skirt.

Rudolph stared at her for a moment then went into his office. Jenny followed into the office after him and sat down. Rudolph sat by his desk. She handed out the newspaper: “Father, this is the newspaper written by agency under Mellon consortium. You had promised me that as long as I don’t see him then you won’t hurt

him. Why?”

Rudolph looked at the sketch of the teenager’s face on the newspaper’s cover. He recovered his eyes and looked at her daughter. He indifferently said: “The reason is clearly written in the newspaper.”

“Father!” Jenny continued in bitter tone: “It’s fake. Do you think that you can convince me with such a reason? He is one of the most prominent architect’s in the Temple. As long as he wants then he can make lots of money from six consortia including our Mellon consortium. Is he short of money? Even if he lacked he wouldn’t do such a thing!”

Rudolph looked at her with a poker face: “Perhaps he is after revenge? It doesn’t mean he would do such a thing if he is rich!”

“No, never!” Jenny stared at him: “I know him well. He would never do such a move!”

Rudolph indifferently replied: “Never say never. He has spent three years in Thorn Flower prison…Who knows what kind of changes happened inside him after being in that kind of environment? If you argue that he doesn’t hate…Would you believe in that? Should I believe in that?”

Jenny heard the rhetorical questions of her father. She stared at his eyes: “Hate! Of course he would hate you! You have wronged him and you deserve his hate! However he would never use such a mean to retaliate against us! Do you know the number of

casualties? He is not that cold! I believe in him!”

Rudolph slowly raised his eyes then looked back at the newspaper: “If he had the status which has today three years ago then I would never object for you two to be together… But now it is impossible. You don’t know how people change in environments like Thorn Flower Prison! Perhaps…”

He stopped the moment he said the word ‘perhaps’… Rudolph slowly said: “I have already promised you that I won’t participate in such a deal. I too believe that he won’t collide with the barbarians. But don’t treat him as the ignorant teenager from three years ago.. Actually he wasn’t an ignorant teenager back then. He had the strength of primary hunter. He was able to run away from a group of hunters.. His mind is beyond your understanding.. I think that you are way too far away from him…”

Jenny’s eye opened wide: “If you aren’t involved in it.. Then who…”

“It’s the planning of your childhood playmate.” Rudolph slightly frowned as he looked at her: “You should be aware that our position in the Mellon consortium is deteriorating as a result of Mel family’s attacks. Now our shares have fallen less than 30 percent. Mel family can control the consortium on their own and today Mark brought his daughter into the conference. Although I was aware that the girl was as cunning as her grandfather but I didn’t imagine that she would be so insidious. She was the mastermind. I think even if the kid has so much fame and wealth but it wouldn’t take long for her to send him back to the prison.”

Jenny was shocked: “Do…Are you talking about Sarah? How could she participate in the conference? She was played around all day long. She didn’t even attend parties so that she could listen to concerts or learn piano. How could she be let into the conference?”

Rudolph sighed: “It seems the little girl was more capable that I thought she is. She has learnt to disguise herself from the young age.”

Jenny stared at him as her face was blank and her head buzzed in confusion. Pictures passed in front of her eyes. She recovered the next instant: “I always though that she was different from the other girls which were grew up with. I understand it now. She had said that poetry wasn’t worth for her to pursue. She had told me that her dream is to have soo much wealth that it could fill in the giant wall full and she would stand on top of tower made out of gold to watch the landscape outside the giant wall.”

Rudolph was stunned: “How old was she when she had said it?”

Jenny replied: “If I’m not mistaken then we were eight that year. We were talking about our dreams and I remember thinking that she was making a joke at that time. However it really seems that this is what she loved.”

“Her goals are same as with her grandfather. If George was 20 years old right now I think in 30 years the Mel family would have control over the whole Silvia…But… ” Rudolph looked at Jenny with a trace of fatherly love in his eyes:” Your life is much more meaningful in comparison to theirs. Don’t worry I will top over them!”

Jenny bit her lips as she whispered: “Father, will you?”

“Yes.”

...

Outside the wilderness.

Dudian went through the mountains as Gwyneth and Sergei followed after him. Along the way they beheaded some mutated beasts. Most of the beasts were mutated because of the radiation. These were the ones that were killed by adventurers and sold in the black market.

“Master, where are we going?” Sergei asked as he followed behind. He was curious as it seemed that Dudian knew the route they were rushing out.

Chapter 356

Dudian didn’t answer him as he went along the familiar terrainn. He was going to the place where he had hid the splitty. He had stayed outside for more than seven days so he wasn’t sure whether splitty had starved to death.

After ten minutes.

Dudian stopped in the plains where he had hidden splitty. He looked at Gwyneth and Sergei: “I’ll be back soon so wait here for me.” He took the bags that he had put the corpses of mutated beasts that they had killed along the way.

Sergei shrugged as he sat on ground. He pulled a stalk of grass and put it into his mouth. He was humming a tune as he narrowed his eyes and looked at Gwyneth: “This kiddo is hiding a secret which doesn’t want us to be aware of. To tell the truth, I don’t care much…”

Gwyneth glanced at him: “If all the hunters were like you then our job would have been much easier.”

Sergei raised his eyebrows: “Like me? If they were like me do you think that you would be able to catch them? I don’t care about nobles, consortia or anyone. I’m not a person who would close one of my eyes to the activities of influential while open the other for the weak one. I just kill!”

Gwyneth sneered: “Ignorant.”

“So what? I’m fearless and also indomitable, ha!” Sergei pulled out the stem of grass from his mouth and threw it away.

Gwyneth turned away her head: “Naive.”

……

Dudian went through the forest. He turned to see that Gwyneth and Sergei hadn’t moved. He went to the abandoned building. He saw a faint red dot inside the building. His heart was relieved as he jumped into the basement. Splitty was sleeping inside the cage made out of tungsten steel. It weakly raised its eyelids as it heard the movement.

“It’s good to know that you aren’t so easy to starve.” Dudian smiled. He stepped forward as he pulled out the corpses of beasts from the bag and throw them into the cage.

Splitty’s spirit was aroused as it began to bit and devour the bloody corpses.

Dudian smiled as he fed it: “After we are done with the problems I will take you outside to play. Your brother or sister has grown a lot stronger than you.. We gotta raise your strength too.”

Splitty was concentrating on its meal as it didn’t care about the words of the human.

Dudian didn’t way for much as he returned back. Gwyneth and Sergei were sitting as they backs faced each other. It seemed they weren’t interested in talking to each other.

Dudian said: “Let’s go.” He looked at the sky then led the way.

Sergei patted his pants as he followed up. He said to Dudian: “Master you always check the sky. We gotta find a place to hide if it rains…”

“We won’t be able to get rid of all the rain.”

“What do you mean? Don’t use those intelligent quotes. Actually don’t beat around the bush when you talk to me… Say it straight out.”

Dudian didn’t bother with him as he went forward. It didn’t take long before they bypassed the fort and went to a steep cliff at the hill. It was covered with moss. Dudian’s was slightly relieved as he reached out his hand.

“Master, you are …”

Sergei wasn’t even finished when he saw Dudian poked out the vines and moss. There was a cave hidden behind them..

Dudian went into the cave. There were stone bowls, bonfires, grills on the bonfires and bucket which had rotten human arm and fingers. Dudian frowned at sight.

Sergei and Gwyneth also went inside. Gwyneth was silent like a shadow. Sergei vigilantly looked around and saw that there were no enemies. However his face turned ugly as he saw the human arm and fingers damped in salt: “These barbarians are really like they are told about in legends. They even eat humans. You would never know who had eaten whom if you stayed with them!” He was trying to make a joke.

Gwyneth glanced at him but didn’t say anything.

Dudian checked around as he found a lot of equipment of barbarians. He picked up something and showed it to Sergei and Gwyneth: “What do you think?”

Sergei shrugged his shoulder.

Gwyneth replied: “I don’t know.”

Dudian looked at the black horn. He wiped the dust as he blew it with his mouth. Suddenly a sound was echoed so he stopped: “It seems the barbarians have left this stronghold long time ago. As I have expected its about to start.”

Dudian turned and left the cave.

Sergei and Gwyneth followed after him.

Trio came to King's Fort after few hours.

"Is it fort breached? Has the army of barbarians gone into the commercial district? Is the war over? " Sergei looked at the broken fort.

Dudian said: "This is King's Fort."

"Oh, so it's the fort broken through by barbarians. I was scared as I though barbarians have broken through the barrier." Sergei patted his chest.

Dudian glanced back at him: "Can't you differentiate forts?"

"I've never been to this fort and I don't care much about forts at all. All of them look alike to me." Sergei said in a confident tone.

Dudian raised his hand to stop both of them: "Let's find a place to hide."

"In the bushes over there." Sergei pointed to.

Dudian whispered: "There is someone over there."

Sergei bent his body as he slowly crawled back.

It didn't take long for Dudian to find the right place to hide. They

were sitting on the ground and looking at the sky doing nothing.

Sergei and Gwyneth squatted besides him. Sergei asked: “Master if we aren’t planning to sneak into the fort then why are we here?”

“We are like the wind.”

Chapter 357

Barrier wall. Commercial district.

Auburn was looking at the horizon from the edge of the wall. The land and sky came together. The black radiation clouds kept rolling as they swallowed the light. There was the smell of reign of terror as the dark clouds covered the sky with the help of the wind.

He narrowed his eyes as he checked the place.

A handsome officer with golden hair came over. He put his hand on his chest as he saluted Auburn: “Everything is ready. We can begin the war!”

Auburn heard his voice but didn’t look back.

Adjutant Junlang (pretty, bright? Can’t find proper western name) raised his head to look at the awe-inspiring legendary figure in front of him. The latter was a man who was just over forty and had won five stars because of his accomplishments in wars. Auburn was the young of the five star generals of the military and one of the most respected ones: “General the barbarians have occupied the Red Maple Mountains for the last seven or eight days. According to the official analyzis there are wide range of materials and rich water in the fort. Aren’t they satisfied?”

Auburn slowly said: “I also hope that they would be satisfied but the barbarians aren’t a bunch to appease their greed with just a fort. Their appetite won’t be filled with this place alone. Even the

entire outer wall area may not be able to fill their stomach!”

Adjutant Junlang bowed his head: “Then why didn’t they attack from the slums or residential district? The barriers there are protected by less troops. If they had attacked from there then I’m afraid the barrier wall would have fallen long time ago.”

“There won’t be much of a influence if they break in through slums or residential district. Instead they would fall into a more unfavorable environment because of the walls...They would have fallen into our net in that case.” Auburn calmly said: “Make sure that spirits are high in the barracks and soldiers are ready to fight. Thunder may be the beginning of the war!”

“Thunder?” Adjutant Junlang was startled as he doubted his ears. However the next moment he thought of something and his face changed.

...

Near the giant wall. Outside the fort.

A knight wearing a silver armor appeared in front of the barrier. A young handsome teenager who seemed like to be around 16 years old twitched his nose twice as he quickly ran forward.

The captain’s brows wrinkled as he saw the teenager.

Everyone’s face turned ugly as they reached the barrier.

“Bastards!”

“It’s as the intelligence had told us!”

“Damned beasts!”

Several of them cursed.

Captain Koln glanced around: “Search to see if there is someone alive.”

“Yes.”

The other immediately dispersed to search the barrier wall. They turned to check each corpse to see if they were alive.

The former handsome teenager shouted out as he stood on top of the high wall: “Captain over here! There is one!”

Koln immediately put down the body in his hand and turned to ran in the direction of the voice. He saw the teenager was holding onto a primary knight of light. The latter’s beck was cut off and bloodstains were all over. He didn’t know how he was able to survive. However he was pleased to see the man. He quickly touched the man’s waist: “Wake up! Who has attacked you? We are the people from investigation group!”

The young knight opened his eyes as he vaguely said something for a few times.

Koln quickly leaned over as he put his ear close to his mouth.

“Yes …” The sound came to an abrupt end.

Koln waited for a few seconds but saw that there was no follow-up. He couldn’t help but look at person’s crooked neck.

“Oh, bastard!” Kold punched the ground in anger.

The handsome teenager put down the knight’s body onto the ground: “Captain this man was the only one with scratches on his throat. The rest are full of injuries. His body was under the corpse of another so I assume the killers haven’t check his death. The murderers have acted very carefully. They have even confirmed the death of the knights. I assume its more than one person!”

Kol slowly stood up as the several other came over quickly to inform their findings one by one: “Captain no one is alive. All dead!”

Koln’s eyes were gloomy: “No one was left alive so that dead would talk. Check the wounds on the bodies and see if there is something is missing. Koge you try to memorize the scents from the scene. We will check the suspects and you will confirm.”

“Yes.” Koge nodded.

The others dispersed to work separately.

“Captain.” A girl’s voice echoed from distance: “There is a clue!”

Koln was startled as he quickly rushed and jumped from the wall that was 20 meters high. He rolled few times in the air and then landed. He quickly rushed over and stopped in front of the girl with freckles all over her face.

Koln had seen the armor on the corpse from distance. He was able to distinguish the man as an intermediate level knight of light which should be the captain of the fort.

“Here, the words … ” The woman pointed towards the ground.

Koln looked: “The murderer is … … Dean?”

The young woman continued: “Captain its written that it was Dean. Is it the Dean from the Temple or someone else with the same name?”

Koln frowned as he looked around the corpse: “These words weren’t written by him but added after his death.”

The woman was surprised. However she realized after carefully looking around: “Oh, no wonder I felt wrong. The words are so deep and different to his lying position.” She walked a few meters

away and lied down the same way and posture as the corpse. Then she tried to use her fingers to write. Although she was able to write but she felt that it was tough and awkward to write in that manner. Why would a person who was dying choose such a difficult posture to write his last words?

She quickly stood up and squatted in front of the corpse: “Captain, it seems that someone was planning to use us to frame the person called Dean. The person should be the architect Dean from the Temple. Moreover the forces who would be interested in dealing with him would be able to quietly kill the people in here. They would have enough time to destroy the evidences and traces of wounds.”

Koln frowned: “Don’t rush to make conclusions! Currently we can be sure that someone else has held his fingers and wrote the message. The man who had killed him made sure to write deeper so that we will be able to read it later on. It is a proof that the knight hasn’t written it himself.”

Young woman added: “Captain but it seems that they were killed around three hours ago. We have to check the wounds on their bodies and try to recreate the battle scene. We can find out if there were several murderers.”

“Alright.” Koln shouted: “Go on.”

The young woman returned back to the wall.

After an hour.

“Captain the information that we got from the research is that there were without a doubt three murderers! There are traces in the distant bushes about their movement. They should be around senior level knights to do such a massacre. The magistrate wouldn’t do such a thing and military is concerned with barbarians now. The greatest suspects are nobles and the alchemists from the dark church.” A middle-aged blonde man said. Apparently he was a noble form his hair color but he didn’t favor nobility as seen from his analysis.

Koln nodded: “We can reduce the scope. According to writing found by Ally the murderer is 90 percent related to genius architect Dean. Either it is him or his enemies! Koge go and find architect Dean. Check if his smell related to the scent of murderers! Moreover secretly check the consortia which have disputes with architect Dean. I’ll focus on dark church and to see which forces are trying to frame the architect against Holy Church!”

“Yes.”

Everyone nodded.

Rumble~~

Sound of thunder echoed from the sky.

The crowd looked up to see the dark clouds floating in the direction of the giant wall. A heavy rain was coming!

It was the beginning of the black snow season. The temperatures were going to be very cold when the season reached its peak.

Rumble~~

The lightning rushed through the clouds like snakes racing against each other..

Koln's face changed: "Damn it!"

Ally quickly said: "Move the corpses into the wall. We can't let the rain wash the marks off."

Other people quickly reacted.

"Ungodly hour!" Koln clenched his teeth.

"It's about time!" Dudian looked up at the sky as he heard the sound of the thunder. There was a slight smile on his face as he stood up and looked at Gwyneth and Sergei: "Our battle is about to start!"

Sergei was shocked: "Battle? Are we going to join the barrier war?"

Dudian smiled as he looked at the broken part of the King's Fort. He waved at both of them to follow after him. He avoided the eyes

of sentries that were checking the place.

Dudian turned towards a more remote place. He took off his hunter jacket and filled it with sand.

He indicated for Sergei and Gwyneth to do the same.

Dudian took the lead as they sneaked into the fort.

Sergei and Gwyneth understood the Dudian's idea as they secretly went into the fort.

Whoosh!

After few moments the trio were in a town behind the fort. This town had been emptied for a long time. The streets and houses were clean. There were chickens at some houses which issued sharp calls once in a while.

"The guards are fast as they have retrieved the civilians so quickly." Sergei smiled as he walked in the street.

Gwyneth was silent all the way.

Dudian picked a house and they were about to enter it when he turned around and looked at a different house. His brows wrinkled as he noticed something. He immediately turned and walked towards that house.

Sergei and Gwyneth kept up with him.

Dudian kicked the door and entered the house. He quickly found the way leading to the basement. He jumped down. There were bags piled in a corner and a wine barrel. However he was able to see to red heats behind the bags. He reached out and grabbed one of the bags and threw it away.

“Ouch!” A loud voice echoed.

puff!

A knife stabbed towards Dudian’s face from behind the bags.

Dudian used his two fingers to grab the knife and pinch it. It was a boy who was seven or eight years old that had tried to stab him. His hair was brown and his face was full of freckles. There was a surprised look on his face.

Dudian frowned as he slightly bent his wrist. The boy’s hand was in pain as he loosened his grasp on knife.

Dudian threw the knife away as he looked at the figure that drilled out from behind the bags. It was a girl with pale green hair and white skin color. She had huge lovely eyes. She seemed to be five or six years old.

“Brother, brother, are you alright?” The girl rushed at the boy as she saw him fall to the ground.

The guy clutched the girl as he bit his lower lip. His legs were trembling and there was a frightened look on his face. However he was courageous as he faced Dudian. He didn’t even blink.

Gwyneth and Sergei were surprised to find the pair of brother and sister inside the basement.

There was a wide smile on Sergei’s face: “We have two little devils hidden in here.”

Chapter 358

The boy's face turned pale as he heard Sergei's words. He stepped out to stand in front of the girl as his bode trembled: "Y-ou! Don't come over! I-I am very powerful! D-on't-don't come!"

Sergei smiled: "You have seen what you shouldn't see. Blame yourself." The big body of Sergei approached to stop in front of the two. His large palm grabbed the little boy's head.

The boy punched and beat Sergei's arm as his face was twisted in pain. The girl was frightened as he grabbed onto Sergei's thigh and began to beg: "Uncle! I beg you please don't hurt my brother! Please..."

Sergei's leg moved as he hit the girl and the force of the kick threw her body to the wall.

"Leave them." Dudian ordered.

"It will be trouble if they talk about us." Sergei answered.

Dudian went over and grabbed boy's body from Sergei's hand. The boy fell down to ground and quickly ran towards the girl: "sister, sister..." He picked up her small body.

Dudian looked at them: "Are you siblings?"

The boy looked up at Dudian. His face was tense as he replied: “Yes, yes!”

“Really?”

The boy’s voice was trembling: “I’m not sure. I’ve seen her in our family since when I was young.”

Dudian nodded slightly: “What about your parents?”

“My father died early on and my mom passed away two years ago.”

Dudian asked: “The residents of the village have taken refuge in other places. Why are you still in here?”

“There is a fee to pass the barrier to get into commercial district. I-I-we have no money and could only hide in here!” The boy replied.

Sergei snorted: “Fee? How much would that cost? Even though both of you are poor but you could sell some things and get enough money to pass the barrier.”

The boy’s face turned white as he quickly answered: “No, it won’t be enough! Earlier it was only two copper coins to enter the city. However after the news of the barbarians attacking were reported the fees increased. Right no its ten silver coins per person! There is no pawn shop to sell anything at this point. Moreover the

roar to other towns is too far away. If we travel there is a possibility of running into beasts or barbarians... ”

Sergei frowned but he didn’t say anything.

Dudian looked at both of them: “I need two more servants. If you are willing then you should join me. You will get food and clothing.”

The boy looked at Dudian in surprise. He hesitated for a moment before saying: “I-I am afraid we are too clumsy...we...”

“There is absolutely nothing that couldn’t be learned. ”

The girl turned around and looked at the little girl. He clenched his teeth: “We are willing! Please take us with you!” Both of them pressed their heads onto ground.

Dudian didn’t stop them: “Stand up! From now on you don’t have to kneel in front of anyone, including me.”

The boy pulled up the little girl and stood up.

Dudian asked: “What is your name?”

“My name is Gabriel.” The boy said: “My sister is called Artemis.”

Dudian looked at the boy: “Bandage your wounds..We will leave.”

Gabriel looked at Dudian “Mister.”

“Yes?”

“Can you wait for us? We will go to pack our luggage.” Gabriel asked.

Sergei snorted: “Its getting more funnier. At the best you will be picking pieces of broken things. Don’t forget that you will get the best and the most expensive things from now on. Do you understand me? ”

There was a trace of fear in Gabriel’s eyes as he looked at Sergei. He couraged up as he said to Dudian: “Mister, my parents left keepsake at our home. I want to take it.. I ask you..”

“Alright.” Dudian answered.

Gabriel was overjoyed as he pulled Artemis.

Dudian and the other two followed behind Gabriel and Artemis as they went towards a creek behind the town. Occasionally, fish that swam along the stream could be seen.

They walked towards a hill where a dilapidated wooden shed was

located. Gabriel waited for her sister by the foot of the hill as Artemis was wounded. He went inside, picked a small bag and ran down.

"Mister, I packed up." Gabriel pulled Artemis by her hand as he came to stop in front of Dudian.

Dudian looked at the small bag and nodded slightly.

They found new sets of clothes from the town and put them on. All five of them went to the closest fort to the town. Dudian used charcoal to smear on his face. Their appearance had changed a lot. Sergei and Gwyneth also used the same method.

"Stop!" The guard outside the gate commanded Dudian and others.

Dudian took out the badge of Ryan family.

The guard recognized the noble emblem that was engraved on the medal. His tone changed instantly: "Please come inside." He stepped sideways.

Dudian took the lead and passed the gates. They found the closest town and rented rooms in a small hotel. Dudian looked at Sergei and Gwyneth while Gabriel was bandaging Artemis's wounds: "You guys stay here and try not to expose traces."

"What about you?" Sergei asked.

“I will go to the Temple.” Dudian opened the window of the room and looked at the dark clouds that had covered the sky. The people felt depressed just from the haze of the weather.

“To the temple?” Sergei frowned.

Gwyneth who had been silent all the way spoke up: “We should sneak back to the Ryan family. Although they have been in decline but we can at least inquire about the situation from them.”

Dudian shook his head: “The enemy should be watching them closely if they want to deal with us. Such a move will expose us.”

Sergei looked at Dudian: “Do you want Mellon consortium ‘dealt’ with?” (I assume everyone understands what Sergei means...)

“I am more than enough to deal with them.”

Chapter 359

Finally, rain began to fall down.

It was the first rain of the black snow season. The thunder echoed out as the dark clouds had shrouded the sky like a curtain. The people in slums were like having the battle of life and death as they blocked the fronts of their houses with sandbags or else the rain would spread into their houses. No one expected the drainage system that hasn't been repaired for long time to play a role during the rain.

The soldiers were wearing military raincoats as they stood on top of the walls while the torrential rain poured down. It was very difficult for them to see the distance as their line of sight was blurred because of the rain.

"General, you should take a cover as the rain is too hard." Adjutant Junlang was standing on top of the wall by General Auburn.

Auburn's face was gloomy: "Do you want be to go back now when the war is about to start? Make sure that soldiers are ready to fight any moment soon!"

Adjutant Junlang was shocked: "War? Do these barbarians will …"

"Go!" Auburn interrupted the adjutant.

Adjutant Junlang quickly turned and ran.

It didn't take long for the officer responsible for intelligence to join the general Auburn on top of the wall. He saluted in hurry and said: "General, the barbarians have began their march from the Red Maple mountains. They are rushing towards the 'golden wall'." The barriers or walls covering the commercial district were known as 'golden wall', the wall covering the residential district was called 'silver wall' while the wall protecting the slums was called 'bronze wall.'

Auburn's eyes had turned cold: "Make sure that waterproof measures are taken for the artillery!"

"Yes." The officer left away.

General Auburn clenched his fists as he looked at the white rain curtain in front.

Rumble~~

The plains were dyed dark red. The barbarians marched towards the golden wall like a dense ocean . Their speed was medium but not fast. After all there was a dozen of miles until they reached the golden wall and they needed to save their physical strength.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

There were figures hiding in the bushes that secretly checked the barbarians. In their imagination the barbarians were rough monster but at the moment it was seen that the barbarians were wearing well-made armor and had good weapons. They were like lions!

Boom!

A sound echoed from the side of the barbarians. A huge monster about 7 or 8 meters tall was bouncing forward. It look like a toad but was covered with hard scales as a natural protective gear. Apparently it was tamed and obeyed the commands of the barbarian controlling it.

...

Dudian hired a carriage from the hotel and went to another place. He hired another one and moved directly to Church Mountains.

Dudian got off the carriage and paid the money after he arrived at Mount Church. He held onto the umbrella as he walked down the mountain road. There was no one on the roar because of the rainy weather. Dudian reached the castle and the guard stopped him but after seeing his face the guard said: “Sorry architect! How come are you here in this rainy day?”

“I have just produced an invention and I’m here to give it for assessment.” Dudian indifferently said.

Guard was shocked: “A new invention? Did not you just made the lightning rod?”

“This is a new invention.” Dudian added.

The guard’s eyes went wide: “N-new invention?” The man was surprised as it would cause another sensation because of continues production of high-level invention.

The guard stared at Dudian’s back. He reacted after a half a second as he went back to his guard room. He took out a pen and began to write. Guard wanted to be the first one to pass out the news.

Dudian came to his own building.

He shook the umbrella for the water stains to drop down and then put it against the door. He went to the room on the second floor. He came towards a bookshelf and took out a roll of white paper.

He slowly rolled out and spread the paper. There was a very sophisticated and meticulous pattern on the paper.

“The era of steam has official began… ” Dudian whispered. He slowly closed the paper and put it inside a big papyrus reel. He took the umbrella and went downstairs. Dudian went in the direction of the hall under the heavy rain.

Dudian saw a lot of people inside the hall. Most of them didn't have an umbrella and were sitting in various places quietly reading their books.

Dudian shook his umbrella and put it by the door. He walked towards the counter.

A young woman wearing a scarf was sitting by the counter. She had the medal of an intermediate level architect on her chest. She looked up at Dudian: "Are you for submission of invention?"

Dudian smiled as he gave the papyrus reel to her: "Yes this has the manuscript inside for my newest invention."

The young woman's eyes were wide open as she recognized Dudian's appearance: "Are you Mr Dean?"

Dudian blinked his eyes.

The girl was excited as she carefully took the paper and asked him: "Mr Dean, would you give me an autograph?"

"Yes."

It didn't take long for Dudian to complete the procedures for the submission of the new invention. He left the Temple's hall.

He took a carriage of the Temple and went back to his own castle.

…

Layers of ripples could be seen on top of the river because of heavy raindrops.

Most of the reporters had gone back but there were some who took shelter close to the entrance of the castle. They were the professionals who wouldn’t back down at all costs.

“Finally the annoying flies went away.” Jake stretched his neck as he looked out of the window and complained.

Old Fulin whispered: “The rain is too heavy… I assume he should return back from the outside.”

“Father the weather is too cold… You will catch cold so please go back upstairs to rest.” Sander said and asked the servant to deliver blankets to put on the knees of old patriarch.

Old Fulin got up but heard the sounds of hoofs. He looked outside: “A carriage is coming and it has the banner of the Temple of Elements…”

Chapter 360

The reporters who were hiding behind the shelters outside the gate saw the carriage. They were surprised as there was a trace of excitement in their eyes. Some of them took out notebooks to record the possible conversation.

The door opened and Dudian stepped onto the trail as he used umbrella to cover himself from the rain.

The reporters were stunned to see the long missing Dudian to appear in front of them at this point. They ran over in hurry and tried to enter the castle. However they were blocked from entering the castle's perimeter.

"Mr. Dean, you ..."

"Architect Dean, we are from ..."

The people were scrambling to ask questions. One of them used the most appropriate location to face Dudian: "Mr dean you have been missing for the last few days! Were you secretly negotiating with barbarians? What's your purpose with cooperating with them? Is it for money? Or for..." He wasn't finished when another person pulled him.

"What are you doing? Y-you ..."

"I was the first to arrive! Please, Mr Dean ..." That man was

pushed and interrupted by another.

Dudian saw that the people were competing with each other. He smiled: “I’ll be answering your questions. It’s rainy outside so come inside with me.”

The reporters stopped pulling and pushing each other as they heard Dudian’s statement.

Neuss who was standing by the door of the castle shouted in happiness: “Master, finally you have come back!”

Old Fulin, Kroen, Sander, Jake and other rushed to the door in surprise as they heard his words.

Dudian walked up to the door: “Let’s go in.” He handed the umbrella to Neuss.

Old Fulin had just stood up and saw Dudian surrounding by crowd. There was a hint of joy in his old wrinkled face: “I would have sent someone to pick you up if the news passed to us.”

Dudian smiled: “I had already said that I was working on new invention! I would naturally come back after finishing my work.”

Old Fulin understood the meaning behind his words: “It’s raining outside let’s talk over after you have a cup of hot tea.” He looked at the maid.

“Yes.” The middle-aged maid immediately went away to prepare tea.

Dudian’s eyes lit up as he saw all members of the Ryan family in his own castle: “Old patriarch, let them go upstairs. These friends from the newspapers are here to interview me! Jin give them towels and chairs. Don’t let them get sick.”

“Yes.” Neuss replied.

Old Fulin looked at Sander: “Let the children go upstairs to rest.. Otherwise it will get chaotic in here.”

“Yes.” Sander turned towards the crowd in the hall. “Hurry, go upstairs to rest.”

Jake secretly glanced at Dudian. He waved at his wife and children and took the lead as they went upstairs. In the blink of an eye the hall was open.

Neuss arranged towels and chairs to five reporters from the newspapers.

All five of them were surprised as they thank him. They didn’t expect to get such a treatment. Before they had to take shelter in front of the castle’s gate now they were accepted as guests.

Dudian sat down in hall and picked up the cup of tea the middle-aged maid brought to him. He took few sips then looked at five reporters: “All of you have worked hard. My time is limited but I can arrange half an hour to all of you. So each one will get six minutes. Who wants to be the first?”

All of them replied: “Mr Dean is kind.”

“I will be the first.” A middle-aged person opened up his notebook and looked at Dudian: “Mr Dean, why have you disappeared for so long? Is it really for the work on your new invention?”

Dudian smiled: “Of course it was for that. I guarantee it by making in a pledge of faith! I never lie.”

“Sorry for taking the liberty but the military newspaper has reported that they have captured barbarians and there is information about your involvement...”

“Is there any proof?” Dudian was angry as he interrupted the man.

The middle-aged man narrowed his face as he continued: “But this evidence... Mr Dean do you have any evidence to prove that you were working on a new invention?”

“Of course, I have already produced it and handed over to the Temple to assess. I believe that results will be out soon.”

“Is it already produced?” The man was stunned: “So quick? You just produced the lightning rod recently. How could you create a new invention in short span of ten days or so?”

Dudian replied: “If there was not so much noise and interference from the newspapers then it should have been ready much faster! I had the idea for a long time so it was easy to put it into paper.”

“This … ” The man’s mouth stuck open as he didn’t know what to ask.

After a second the man adjusted his thoughts and asked once more: “Mr Dean even if you created a new invention it doesn’t prove that you haven’t been cooperating with barbarians. Did you do so to get your revenge on Mellon consortium?”

“I need to correct your question. First of all I didn’t to collide with the barbarians. Secondly I don’t have a need that would make me collide with the barbarians. I wouldn’t be able to spend my wealth in this lifetime.”

“Mr. Dean …”

“Sorry, your time is up.”

“Next person.”

“Mr. Dean. Hello. I just heard about your new invention. I know that major consortia compete with each other to get the rights to your inventions. Moreover each time the pre-sale prices are extremely alarming. I would like to know how much is the price for an offer for your new invention?”

“Price of a legendary item! This is the lowest price. Thanks.”

“Did I hear it wrong?” The person was stunned.

Old Fulin and the other reporters were shocked to hear Dudian’s claim. They suspected that it was a slip of the tongue. However the reporters thought that Dudian was using such a tactic to change the unfavorable situation that surrounded him.

Half an hour later.

Dudian commanded Neuss to bring five umbrellas and sent the reporters away.

After they left Dudian turned towards old Fulin: “I have read the newspapers and I’m aware that New World consortium is currently almost bankrupt because of the debt. However it is now wartime and the bankruptcy process will be delayed for some time. I’ll use the money from the lightning rod’s sales to fill in the hole. We lost out one but they will lose thousands of times more!”

Dudian had read the recent newspapers when he was in the hotel. The situation was almost the same as he expected. But he

didn’t imagine the New World Consortium to go bankrupt and Ryan family to owe such a huge debt. It was not surprising that it was a move by Mellon consortium.

Old Fulin’s heart was in peace after he heard Dudian’s words: “You have come back too late. The Mellon consortium is directing the general trend and your prestige that was built has fallen to the bottom. Especially after the military newspaper published the blatant accusation you have been target of public anger. I think if there was no rain then there would be lots of people protesting at the gates of the castle.”

Dudian smiled: “So, we should thank the rain!”

“Ah.” Old Fulin sighed: “You have been smiling all this time.”

Dudian replied: “Why should I not laugh as the enemy has gone crazy? You don’t have to worry about the public anger. Since ancient time the civilians are fools. They see what we let them see. They feel good when we boast to them and they feel sad when we criticize. It doesn’t mean that we can’t change the hate into the love!”

“But overall situation is controlled by the hands of the Mellon consortium. Although your identity and the value of inventions was enough to push Scott consortium and Huasheng consortium to wash your white using their newspapers but today’s military newspaper completely dyed you black. Whatever we claim at this point is useless and sophistry. No one will believe us.”

“That’s why I will not say anything.” Dudian continue: “It’s black or white… The world will comment! I’ll continue to do my thing.”

Old Fulin was startled: “Do you mean the invention?”

Dudian smiled but didn’t elaborate.

Dudian looked at Neuss as he saw rain getting shallow: “Go on and bring back Sergei and Gwyneth.”

“Yes.” Neuss replied.

Gwyneth and Sergei returned back to the castle along with Gabriel and Artemis after an hour.

Dudian commanded Kroen to arrange room for the siblings. He looked at Sergei and Gwyneth: “Go to the golden wall and investigate the current situation of war. Return back afterwards.”

Sergey, Gwyneth, Fulin, Sander and other were surprised.

“War? Has the barbarians attack the golden wall?” Sander was perplexed: “There is such a rain! Why would they attack today?”

Old Fulin looked at Dudian: “Are you sure?”

“Un.” Dudian nodded.

“We will have no explanations to make if the barbarians attack. The civilians are concerned about the war and no matter what we say there will be no one to listen to us. It will arouse the public anger! Moreover regardless if the barbarians win or lose we will be finished. After everything ends and dust is settled we will be wasted no matter what!” Old Fulin’s face turned ugly as he couldn’t help but cough for a few times.

Dudian patted his shoulder to appease him: “Old Patriarch don’t worry. Everything is within the plans.”

Old Fulin’s cheeks had turned crimson red: “Dean, you must grasp the opportunity. Our time is running out!”

Sergei looked at Old Fulin: “Old man why are you panicking? Who knows when the barbarians will attack? I’ve been with the young master and we haven’t been to front line of the battlefield. Maybe the young master’s presumptions are wrong.”

Old Fulin looked at Dudian.

Dudian said: “The military won’t be able to pass the message today. I hope they can hold through today or everything will turn bad.”

“How do you know the barbarians will attack?” Old Fulin asked.

“It’s because of rain. The barbarians have been living in the radiation zone and have no fear of rain. Their bodies have strong resistance against it. But our soldiers are different. Even if their bodies are strong once they get hit by the rain it’s a matter of time for them to get illnesses. No to mention fighting under the rain. Barbarians broke through King’s Fort and went to Red Maple Mountains not just for the show. They have thought about the timing of their attack for a long time. If I was the head of their military then I would propose to fight at this moment!”

Dudian didn’t want to explain other things. He continued: “However if they are intelligent enough they won’t launch full frontal attack but try to consume our strength. The barbarians will have losses with each wave of attacks but at the end our soldiers will be affected by the battle. They will have diseases and it will affect their strength. Them being sick is no different thank being dead! So barbarians will have much more better chance at success in the future attacks.”

Old Fulin was confused.

Sergei and Gwyneth also listened to him but didn’t think that it was the sole reason why Dudian was so sure about their attacks.

Dudian in fact didn’t give the most important reason why he knew the barbarians would attack in the rain. It was the gunpowder!

A long time ago he had found out that the gunpowder was banned by dark church and kept in their vaults. It made him think about it. Why would such an evil organization who would do

experiments on human body will give up on use of gunpowder?

They would be able to finish the Holy Church with the help of the gunpowder!

So why would such a weapon would be classified as forbidden? There should be a deep reason behind it. Although he didn't know the details but he was sure that if there was one power which could force the dark church not to use gunpowder then without a doubt it would be military!

So, Dudian believed that the military was aware about the existence of gunpowder!

Therefore military was going to rely on gunpowder to attack. But a rainy day would beb extremely unfavorable for military. The role of gunpowder would be greatly suppressed in such a condition!

Chapter 361

“Kroen go and contact the reporters from the agencies under Huasheng and Scott consortium. I’m going to make an open conference regarding the new invention.” Dudian looked at Kroen.

Kroen nodded in confirmation and left.

“An official statement?” Old Fulin looked at Dudian: “I have heard of announcements after the invention was made but never heard of things doing such as this. Aren’t you worried that your invention will be leaked?”

Dudian replied: “I’ve already submitted my work to the Temple and moreover its not just a commodity so I’m not worried about any leakages. I just want to briefly introduce my invention to attract the attention of people.”

The previous reporters mainly focused on his ‘cooperation’ with barbarians which was a hot topic. Although he had repeated changed the topic to his new invention but he was aware that the reporters were biased and wouldn’t make a news out of his words. So he planned to make a conference which would focus on new invention.

“This would be good but if the war outbreaks at the golden wall then I assume tomorrow all the headlines will be focused on it. Even if you have a conference regarding your invention but it is difficult to see it getting published.” Old patriarch spoke in a worried tone.

Dudian said: “Then I have to create a wave which will attract the attention of people.”

Old Fulin was startled: “What can I do to help you out?”

Dudian laughed: “Your greatest help to me would be taking care of your health.”

Old Fulin smiled.

At the same time one of the guards entered the hall and announced: “Old patriarch, young master Dean. There is a carriage from the Temple that has arrived!”

“A carriage of the Temple?” Dudin was surprised.

Old Fulin looked at Dudian in doubt.

“Bring them in.” Dudian commanded to guard.

IT didn’t take long for the carriage to park in front of the castle. Three people came off the carriage wearing the pure white robes with gold patterns on it. They were led by a middle-aged man: “I’m the reporter from the Temple’s newspaper. My main purpose in coming to visit architect is to interview you.”

Dudian’s eyes lit up as he nodded: “No problem. Please sit and

enjoy tea."

The maid handed them tea.

"Architect Dean I have heard that you have come up with a new invention! Can you tell us what type of an invention this is?" Middle-aged man politely asked.

Dudian smiled: "It's a bit hard to say the specific type. In simple terms it could be applied to any type of field."

"Any field?" Middle-aged man uttered in surprise.

Old Fulin who was sitting next to them was also stunned.

There were total of nine faction. Each faction had sub-faction within them such as military, civilian and other categories. Moreover military could be also divided into categories such as sub-melee, attack, remote, defense and so on. Civilian sub-faction was much more mixed which had manufacturing, sewing etc...

An invention which would be classified as a top in any of those sub-factions would be regarded as a superior grade product. So an invention which could be applied to any field was simply unheard of!

The man recovered and said: "Architect Dean isn't it a bit... too exaggerated. According to six years of experience in the Temple I have never heard of an invention which could be applied to all

areas. Even the most recent plastic can't cover that much of a wide area."

Dudian replied: "I believe that you are a professional but I also hope that you should believe that as a senior architect I would make judgement without slightest concern to anything. I don't have the slightest exaggeration in my assessment. If you insist on my telling the areas which it could be used very widely then I would have to say it would be the military use. Especially my new invention will played an incredible role in large-scale wars. If I was given a hundred man army and they used my invention then they can topple and slaughter easily an army of million!"

"Uh……"

Old Fulin, the middle-aged man and the other were stunned. Hundred soldiers could kill such a big army? Isn't it the gap in strength in hundred fold? Was it a joke?

The middle-aged man was stunned for a long time. He gradually recovered: "Architect Dean, although I believe in your judgement… this is not an exaggeration but a miracle we are talking about. Do you say that the new invention is a legendary level item?"

Dudian said: "I have to wait for the Temple evaluation but I believe that the power of my invention in the military field is in no way inferior to other legendary items!"

The middle-aged man almost choked.

Old Fulin was shocked. He knew that if Dudian deliberately ‘increased’ the value of invention then it would backfire at them. Even if the the people from magistrate came over then they wouldn’t be able to maintain order because of public anger!

The middle-aged man’s heart was timid as he saw Dudian’s confident expression. The two assistants sitting close to him recorded Dudian’s words intact, word-by-word. He continued: “Architect Dean, may I know how you would name the new invention?”

Dudian replied: “I call it ‘steam’.”

“Steam?” The middle-aged man nodded and asked: “Is it very hard to study the process of steam?”

“Yes. It would take a long time and it’s a very complicated process.”

“Is it your own idea?”

“Yes.”

“Did you ask for help from someone else?”

“No.”

The interview last for more than half an hour. The middle-aged man bid farewell to Dudian and Old Fulin as he took both of his assistants and left the castle.

“They didn’t ask anything about your disappearance. It seems that the ‘rumors stop the wise man’ is very reasonable.” Old Fulin looked at Dudian.

Dudian calmly replied: “It is not that they didn’t ask but they were here to help me restore the momentum.”

“Help you?”

“I’m part of the Temple. Moreover as a genius architect with a great potential I am very rare figure in the Temple. Moreover the Temple is under the command of Holy Church. Although Holy Church and military seems to have harmonious relations but there is no details about the real relationships. In addition they don’t want to see me lose as the image of a genius from the Temple is on line with cooperating with barbarians. It could spread to affect the image of the Temple.”

Old Fulin exclaimed: “No wonder they have to interview at such a bad weather. Although the reports about war will seize the main pages but they want to have a layout for you.”

Dudian narrowed his eyes: “I want more than just a layout.”

...

The outskirts of the commercial district.

Golden Wall.

Row and row of soldiers run along the steps to the top of the wall. It was heavily raining. They were wearing raincoats but at the moment there was a war and inevitable their faces and necks were spilled with rainwater. Because of the urgent battle the soldiers refused to take care of rain spewing onto their faces.

“Argh!”

“Argh!”

Even though the wind whistled by their ears but the soldiers were able to hear the voices coming off from the barbarians. Their scalps tingled as their faces turned pale in fear.

Chapter 362

General Auburn's face was gloomy as he looked at the barbarian army that was approaching under the heavy rain. His eyes were full of chill as he shouted: "Order the fire department to start the artillery as soon as the barbarians enter the range. Make sure to kill the 'giant frog' at spot and don't let it jump up!"

"Yes." The adjutant responded.

Sounds of cries echoed from the outer part of the golden wall. Moments later the barbarian army rushed into the area outside the golden wall that was area for traps. Large number of them fell into traps and there was much casualty. However the morale of barbarians was high because of the rain. They rushed towards the wall. In the middle of the army there was a monster that was seven or eight meters high. It moved as it bounced from one location to the other. It didn't take long for it to reach the ground under the golden wall.

"Shoot!"

Huge black cannons was aimed towards the barbarians. The cannons fired as the shells were projected onto the barbarian army. At the same time archers shot the arrows. Endless number of arrows fell onto the barbarian army. The barbarians fell to the ground as the arrows were successful in killing them.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The sounds of bombing echoed out. The soil was blown up splashing a feet tall. The barbarians were blown up and the bombing resulted in numerous casualties.

The poised war that was planned for along time officially kicked off.

The general Auburn's expression was still gloomy as he looked at the barbarians killed by the shells and arrows.

Boom!

The giant frog bounced up as it was able to sway away from the fire and arrows. The man riding at the head of the giant frog had long been shot by arrows. However the giant frog itself had scales which was good enough to deflect the arrows. It was successful as it breached through and jumped up.

Whoosh!

The giant frog's single jump was more than tens of meters in height!

Boom!

The giant cannon's direction was changed as the aim was the body of the giant frog. The shell hit the giant frog's chest as it was in the air. It was able to pierce through and burst open its scales. The impact of the shell forced it to fall down. There were two holes

on its body as the blood flowed down to the ground. It's leg gently twitched but giant frog failed to get up again. Apparently it was at the doorsteps of death.
However the soldiers on the wall were scared as cold sweat flowed down their spines. If such a giant frog was able to jump onto the wall then the outflow of the battle would be affected.

...

At the same time the headquarters of Holy Church in commercial district, the 6 consortia, magistrate and other forces received 2 news. The first was the development of a new invention by the genius architect!

The consortia sent messengers to Dudian's castle as soon as they learned about him submitting an invention. They prepared gifts for the young architect and went over to talk about the pre-order terms of the new invention. Of course, Mellon consortium wasn't involved in this kind of discussions.

Mel family.

In the castle.

"What did you say? He appeared? How could he? Wasn't he outside the giant wall? Was he smuggled back?" Sarah Mel was surprised as she sat in the spacious office and listened to the short maid's report.

Lisa bowed: “There were no news from the people from death passage. Maybe the message was delayed by the rain and wasn’t received by us in time.”

“It’s impossible.” Sarah frowned. “The flight of the crows isn’t affected by rain. He either leaked information that he was gone outside or he was smuggled back. There is no other way!” Sarah thought of something and took out a map from the drawer. She spread it out on the table.

It was a map of the entire giant wall of the Silvia. The twelve passages rented by the consortia were marked with gray.

“The closest to this death passage is the Scott consortium’s areas. If he directly passed and went into Scott consortium’s area no 1 which is full of monsters that are level 20 or more...No he should have taken a detour because the river would block his way. The only way is for him to go to area no 7 of the Scott consortium and come in through their passage...” Sarah whispered as she checked the map: ” But the hunters station in the area no 7 of the Scott consortium wouldn’t let him get into their hunting area unless there is an approval from higher ups of the Scott consortium. But how could they let him into their own hunting area and even let him use their own passage to enter the giant wall?”

“Was it part of the negotiations for his last invention? Did he buy access through the contract?”

Sarah looked up at Lisa: “You told me that he had submitted a new invention to the Temple. What did our people say about his whereabouts in the Temple? Did they see him go through the

processes of the Temple?”

Lisa replied: “Miss, I have asked our sources in the Temple. They had seen him submit his invention while it was raining this afternoon. He was wearing a raincoat and using an umbrella. Some saw him walk through the mountain road carrying a reel which had to be his new invention.”

Sarah was startled as she whispered to herself: “Strange… Was he really working on the new invention? Did he send someone disguised as himself out of the giant wall? How could he? If he was within the giant wall he should have reacted to the action. Why didn’t he jump out to refute the claim? However if we can’t explain his disappearance then all the attacks would be baseless… What would be their use?”

Lisa spoke up: “Miss, maybe he was working on an invention which is so fascinating that he didn’t contact the outside world for that time.”

Sarah slowly shook her head: “Unlikely… If he really was within the giant wall then the only reason for him to stay silent for that long was to deliberately pamper us to attack and discredit him. Why would he do that? What would be the purpose? I can’t think of a reason. It’s not good for him…”

Sarah’s eyes lit up as her thought fluttered and she shook her head: “Maybe I’m overthinking and overestimating him. The only way for him to appear right no is that he went outside the giant wall and contacted the Scott consortium. Moreover they helped him to smuggle him back. This way it shows that he was aware of

the turmoil within the wall. If he doesn't have a way to win then he is way too foolish to think that he can restore the situation with an invention alone! Its too stupid to think that a new invention would help him to gain the respect and love of everyone!"

"The public anger is at peak. He is in a district for the Temple. So how can we pressure him? Too naïve! It seems I have really overestimated him. Even though if he produces an excellent invention but there would be not much of an effect of military and public... He is destined to lose!" Sarah shook her head as there was a trace of regret in her eyes.

Lisa added: "Miss, I inquired about the price of the new invention. I was told that he says it's a legendary item. Did he really make a legendary level invention?"

Sarah shook her head: "Lisa, you don't understand. No matter what kind of invention he has come up with there is only one outcome for him. He is doomed. Even if he comes up with an invention which is at the same level as legendary new textile machine it will be very difficult to restore his reputation. After the end of war he will drown if a single person spits on him. Moreover the better his invention will be the greater the public disgust and hatred will follow!

Chapter 363

Rostov castle.

“What? Did he appear?” Rosie was surprised as she asked the servant: “Where is he now?”

“In his castle.”

“Good, you can leave now.”

The young servant retreated. Rosie put down the book in her hand and came to the closet. She quickly put on the clothing and rushed out.

“Miss, where are you going?”

“Get the carriage prepared immediately!”

“Miss, its raining outside …”

“Go!”

…

Huasheng consortium, Krylov consortium, Green consortium and others received the news too. Before they were calmed down

their nerves another shocking news came out which thoroughly boiled the consortia.

“Did barbarians attack the golden wall?”

“When the war started?”

“It’s alright. Prepare enough materials. We as Green consortium have the best medicine. The soldiers will get sick after fighting under the rain. Go to the front to reinforce them with supplies! Remember to record everything in details in the books!”

All of the consortia were busy in the rainy night. The news of Dudian had fallen back of their minds at this point.

...

Mount Church. Temple of Elements

A carriage parked in front of the the majestic hall of the Temple. The servants and guards were around the perimeter. The carriages standing in front of the hall had the banner of the Temple. In addition to the banner there was a flag. Each flag had the same prominent symbol at their side. It meant that the carriages belonged to masters!

At the moment about eight masters were sitting by the round table. Some of the were old, some gray-haired. Most of the were calm and full of vigor.

“The meeting was rushed at such hour as we have to discuss an urgent matter.” A thin old man called master Chen whose cheekbones protruded out spoke up: “Recently a lot of negative comments were made about the new senior architect Dudian. Especially yesterday’s military report was the worst. It had stirred up a lot of anger.”

“The magistrate has been commissioned to investigate the matter and bring out the truth. The results will be open to the public. If Dudian really cooperated with barbarians then we won’t tolerate such an action. However if he didn’t then it means that military maliciously attack him and us. We can’t stand by right now!”

Everyone glanced at each other in silence.

Another old man said: “I’ve just received the news that the barbarians have attacked golden wall. The war has began. Regardless of the outcome the architect Dean’s reputation will fall to the bottom in public’s eye. Right now the best we can do is to help him delay time!”

“What?!”

“Did it really begin?”

“Are the barbarians attacking under the heavy rain? Aren’t they afraid of the rain?”

“If the Holy Church doesn’t get involved then the golden wall could be destroyed by the barbarians.”

Some had worry in their eyes while the others had surprise.

Master Chen calmed the audience: “I haven’t called you to worry about the war but to think of ways to help Dean to delay the time! Use the resources at your hands with maximum degree to help him out. Contact the the consortia that you have interacted before. Make sure that everything is done timely and orderly. In addition, architect Dean has submitted a new work for assessment. He has filled in the information blank that the invention can be submitted to any field! So the Temple has decided to make sure that all nine masters review the invention. There will be groups of three for assessment! Afterwards we will come to a unified evaluation!”

“Applicable to any field?” A white-haired old man laughed: “He has gone crazy! Even if he wants to create uproar to sell for a high price its just way too much! He is too ignorant!”

“I have heard that the consortia rush to book his inventions even before the identification and assessment is out. The prices are scary high too. I’ve heard that he was offered price of a four star item by the consortia before the lightning rod was out but he had rejected them. Although the assessment proved that he would suffer in case he had agreed. No wonder as a young man his arrogance has reached the roof top. He acts like a master.” Another old master with a beard whispered.

An old man with a wide face shook his head: “He haven’t said such a thing. It is the rumor of the newspapers. He has offended a

lot of people who deliberately try to discredit him. We have to think ways of helping him out. After all you gotta admit that in the future he is likely to sit by our side."

The previous old man looked back: "Discredit him? How do you know that it was deliberately done to discredit him? If his attitude wasn't that arrogant why would people try to discredit him? Naturally the popularity is related with it. Moreover I have heard that he has a hunter in the past. He has been stained with the arrogance of a hunter too! No wonder he has such a temper!"

"The last time when he contradicted me, he wasn't even a senior architect." Master Terence slowly said: "Now as a senior architect I think it will be much more to control him. I can't think how he will act if he becomes one of us!"

The wide faced old man looked at them. He sighed lightly but didn't continue to talk.

The thin old man raised his hand to interrupt them: "No matter how his character is, don't forget that he is a member of the Temple! To be put bluntly, if any of your face the same thing in the future the Temple will act the same to protect you. Of course, I hope none of you will provoke the others and get into such a situation." Finally the man added: " Moreover the Lord hopes that his invention is identified as soon as possible. Be sure to assess it before the end of the war!"

"In addition, all of you use your contacts to help him restore his image. We will let the magistrate to rule fairly. At least he must get a fair chance at the trial!"

Everyone silently looked at the old man.

“Meeting ends here.” The old man waved his hand.

...

In the castle.

Dudian was sitting in the living room. Old Fulin had gone to his room to rest. Only Sander was left to accompany him.

Dudian had a cup of hot tea in his hand as he looked out through the window and observed the heavy rain.

Chapter 364

The hall was silent. The rhythm of the rain penetrated into the hall.

Sander quietly looked at teenager. There were many thoughts passing through his mind. He hesitated for a while but at the end he couldn't be ask: "Master, can we ride over the ide?"

Dudian recovered his eyes as he slowly replied: "The hardest problem is the Mellon consortium."

There was a trace of loss in Sander's eyes.

After sometime the rain got weaker.

A team of carriages came to park in front of the castle. A team of knights of light led by a blonde youth entered the hall. The man looked at Dudian: "Architect, because of recent chaotic situation I was ordered to protect your safety in case a criminal mob tries to attack you."

There was a trace of surprise in Dudian's heart: "Thanks for the hard work."

Sander's eyes lit up as he heard the knight of light's words. It meant that the Temple hadn't given up on Dudian. They still had a hope to survive if the Temple backed them.

Dudian made sure that the knights of light were settled in the castle. He commanded the servants to prepare his own carriage. He looked at Sander: “I’m going to Knight’s Hall. If Gwyneth and Sergei brings news about the situation at the front line then send them to Knight’s Hall!”

“To the Knight’s Hall?” Sander was surprised. “Why would you go there? Do you have friends in Knight’s Hall?”

Dudian slightly shook his head but didn’t answer to his question. He ordered the coachman to drive.

…

By the golden wall.

Roar!

The barbarian army used a catapult to throw large rock at the golden wall. It had caused great damage to the wall and to the soldiers.

General Auburn’s face was ugly as he observed the scene: “The intelligence department wasn’t even able to detect so many catapults! Damned idiots!” He clenched his fists as his heart was full of anger. There was great responsibility lying on his shoulder as the commander of the guards of the golden wall. Although he had expected the barbarian would attack in the stormy weather but he didn’t imagine that they will have so many ways to cope up

with the military.

He hadn't seen such siege weapons used by the barbarians when they broke to King's Fort. He found out that he had underestimated the barbarians. Right now, the barbarians weren't inferior to the regular army in no way.

"Boom!"

A sudden sound echoed from the distance.

Auburn saw an eight-meter high giant frog bouncing up to the golden wall. It's huge body rolled as the soldiers were suppress under it. They didn't even have time to issue screams as they were pressed into meat mud.

Auburn's face changed as he grabbed an object which looked like a microphone. He shouted: "Regie! Quickly send soldiers to block the giant frog. Order the purple feather troops to behead it as soon as possible!" His sound went through the microphone's pipeline to another huge speaker.

A brawny man standing not far away from the speaker heard the general's words. He shouted in hurry: "Purple feather troops!"

At the same time the adjutant rushed to stop by Auburn's side: "7^{th}, 9^{th}, 12^{th}, 34^{th} artillery have stalled! The rain is to heavy and we can't ignite the artillery after the replacement of the shells."

“Damn it!” Auburn frowned. He growled: “Make purple feather troops to replace the artillery. We have to block the gap!”

“Yes.” The adjutant ran back in haste.

“Damn it! The logistics department is useless! Damn!” Auburn’s fist hit the wall in anger. He deliberately had made another batch of artillery whose purpose was to be used in such weather. However the war was not over as he had expected. Moreover in case the artillery was withdrawn from the battlefield their output would drop more than 50 percent. They wouldn’t be able to stop the barbarians with just boulders and arrows!

The rain continued to pour down.

The rain water and blood was mixed as it colored the earth in red.

Barbarians rushed to the wall even though the numerous arrows dropped on them like hedgehogs. The barbarians kept marching over the dead bodies of their companions to climb the wall. Their brutal methods had frightened the soldiers. It was the first time that they saw the terrifying force of the barbarians.

...

The situation was tense in the golden wall while Dudian sat in his carriage as he moved to the Knight’s Hall. There were very few carriages in the streets because of the heavy rain. The streets were

kind of isolated. It gave him sense of serenity.

The carriage stopped and Dudian got off. He used umbrella to cover himself as he walked upstairs to the Knight's Hall.

One of the squires who was standing as a guard in front of the Hall recognized Dudian: "Are you architect Dean?"

Dudian nodded in confirmation: "I want to be a knight and want to participate in the Hall's assessment. Please show me the way!"

"Become a knight?" Both guards were surprised. Even a senior architect wants to become a knight?

After a moment, Dudian entered the Knight's Hall.

It was a magnificent building and the organization itself had a very ancient history. The power of the Knight's Hall was as big as the Holy Church and magistrate's. Moreover the knights of the magistrate and Holy Church were assessed by the Knight's Hall at the beginning. So the other two forces didn't want to offend the power that prepared knights for them.
Dudian went through a long corridor after passing through the entrance. There were huge sculptures at both sides which were as tall as ten meters. They were the depiction of the glorious knights from the history. Some of the were riding on a horse while the others held onto spears or swords.

Dudian walked while observing the sight.

There were information about the outstanding achievements acquired by the knights under the sculptures.

“Mr. Dean. Here please.” They reached the end of the corridor and the squire showed Dudian the way.

Dudian nodded and went inside.

The huge golden door opened as he entered inside.

Dudian sat by the tea table as he looked at the ancient hall that stood for hundreds of years. Moments later an old man wearing a blue robe came to sit in front of Dudian. His eyes lit up as he respectfully said: “Greetings architect Dean. It’s raining very heavily outside so may I know the purpose of your visit?”

Dudian got up and followed the ceremony: “My childhood dream was to a heroic knight! I want to see if I’m qualified to become a knight.”

The man’s brows wrinkled as he slowly said: “Architect Dean you are part of the Temple and serve the God of Light. Why would you want to become a knight when you are spreading the love of God?”

“The knights are righteous, fair and just! I don’t think my choice is impulsive as there things are what the God wants us to do!” Dudian smiled.

The old man looked at him: “The Knight’s Hall does not refuse anyone who wants to participate in the assessment. We don’t care whether the person is poor or a noble, whether they are disabled or sound. As long as there spirit of the knight is existent then there is a high chance that the person will be member of our Knight’s Hall. We serve the spirit of knight and don’t violate our codex at all times.”

Dudian seriously replied: “I’m willing to defend the spirit of the knight for the rest of my life! I’ll never make the slightest violation that could affect my choice.”

The old man looked at him: “Alright, come over with me. I’ve to see if you have the spirit of the knight!”

“Un.” Dudian nodded.

Chapter 365

Dudian followed behind the old man wearing the blue robe. They went to the back of the hall where another huge round hall existed. In the middle of the hall there was a huge sculpture of a man holding onto a sword. The face was wide while the man had thick eyebrows. He looked majestic but the eyes were portrayed so that you could feel the touch of warmth and compassion emitted from them.

The blue robed old man put his hand over his shoulder as he stood in ceremony of a standard knight in front of the sculpture. There was a table below the sculpture. The old man took out a roll of paper and turned back to Dudian: “Fill out this form. It’s the first part of the official knight assessment.”

Dudian slightly nodded. The Knight’s Hall had developed a systematic assessment after a long time. It was much more accurate and rigorous assessment in comparison to medieval era he was aware of. The evaluation wasn’t only restricted to public support and meritorious service but the conduct of the knight was checked stringently. This was one of the reasons why the Knight’s Hall was one of the most respected and loved institutions.

Moreover passing the paper test wasn’t enough to qualify as a knight.

Dudian grabbed the papers and turned to sit by a desk on the edge.

Blue robed old man came to stop by his side as he used the hourglass on the desk to time Dudian's test.

Dudian finished when the one-third of the sand had flowed.

There was a trace of surprise in old man's eyes as he saw the speed of Dudian. He picked up the papers and checked them after Dudian submitted his finished work. After a few minutes, the old man slowly put down the papers and calmly said: "Almost full marks. You have qualities of the spirit of the knight in your character. Moreover you are aware of knight's etiquette and can be qualified to become a knight in the future. Therefore we can go to the next assessment."

"First of all, you have to get love of thousand poor, one hundred civilians, ten nobles and recommendation of two regular knights! Do know that you can't falsify this by using money or bribe. It will lead to cancel your qualification to become a knight for lifetime!"

Dudian replied: "It's a matter oh honor so blasphemy is unacceptable."

The old man slowly nodded: "Good. As you are aware there is a foreign invasion in the border. The Knight's Hall would remove all other procedures for anyone if they could accumulate enough meritorious service at the war and become an official regular knight! You have to comply the will of Lord and follow the way of sword!"

The man paused for a moment: "However the battlefield is

extremely dangerous as you are an architect from the Temple. I suggest you to go through the normal procedures which is low risk."

"I know." Dudian nodded.

"You are a trainee knight as of this moment. The next assessment period is limited to three months. Don't forget that you can't do anything against the spirit of knighthood! Otherwise your assessment will be canceled!" The old man deeply looked at Dudian.

"I would never dare to violate the code of knighthood!"

...

The castle used for identification. The Temple of Elements.

Eivissa and other masters from the eight different factions had come together. They were chatting with each other as they were ready to carry out the identification and evaluation of the next invention. He was feeling a bit different. There was no doubt that he appreciated the skills of the youth. Especially the lightning rod had deeply shocked him. Moreover the more he thought about the product the more he thought that the concept was extremely simply but a core concept to lightning faction. It was more like a 'guide'.

It was enough to protect all the building from the lightning

trouble.

But on personal level he didn't like Dudian. From the first glance he could see that the teenager was totally different from an average person. The kid was ambitious, arrogant and his presence made Eivissa feel discomfort or even fear. Intuition told him that he should stay away from Dudian as far as possible.

Although many people in Temple didn't believe that the promising teenager had colluded with the barbarians but felt that the military took the opportunity to attack the Temple. However Eivissa thought that perhaps it was the truth.

In addition he was aware that this time all the masters were invited to evaluate the invention because if the product was good enough then there was a possibility that military and civilians perspective would change. But after reading the newspapers for the last few days he didn't have much of a hope.

"It's the first time I see nine masters coming together to identify an invention... Hmpf!" A brown haired short old man said in an impatient tone.

"Pete there is nothing that is impossible. You are stuck with your old ideas and haven't made an inch of progress." Another white haired old man spoke up. There was a medal of master on his chest.

The brown haired master snorted: "I heard that the genius architect from the wood faction has invented a product which

belongs to lightning faction. It seems that the kid is too ambitious...I'm afraid he won't be sticking to wood faction for long!"

The white haired old man smiled: "It's a proof that wood faction is the king of nine faction and closest to understand the mysteries of the God. A wood faction architect could produce a top grade four star product from another faction. I won't ever see an architect from your wind faction to be able to do such a thing!"

Eivissa frowned but he didn't say anything.

The brown haired short man's face turned gloomy and he didn't stare back at the other old man but turned away.

At the same time a door was pushed open from the corner of the hall. A middle-aged man wearing senior architect's robes came out. He respectfully said: "Masters, everything is ready for inspection. Who would like to come first?"

"I will." The brown haired old man spoke up: "I would like to go early back to reading some books. I don't want to delay anymore time! Hmpf!"

White haired old man said: "I will check too." He stood up to join the room.

Another master laughed and followed behind the two.

“This is the drawing of architect Dean’s invention.” The previous senior architect smiled: “Masters, please identify.”

The brown haired old man was the first to step and stand in front of the table. He saw finely drawn design on the white papers. His eyes narrowed as he stared a bit. Suddenly, he was attracted by a pattern. He carefully looked at it and read the small note next to it. He began to murmur as he concentrated more.

The white haired and the other old man leaned to check because of curiosity.

It was the first time both of them had seen such cumbersome design.

“Water … … burn … … heat … …”

“Steam? kinetic energy”

The white haired and the other old man muttered. The expression on their faces changed as they were surprised. Their mouth were slightly open because of the shock.

“Vapor…Steam… Under high pressure to generate kinetic energy…” The previous brown haired short man murmured. He recovered after a long time as he shot his palm onto table: “This… It’s not water faction… Neither the wood faction nor the fire faction… However it contains water, fire, pressured wind… I have never seen such a thing! This ‘steam’ has never appeared before..”

White haired old man stared at the design: “This is not just an invention if its as said above! It’s a vast new world!”

The other old man looked at the drawing in surprise: “I get it! It’s what we have seen in the new textile machine. It’s the future! If its fully utilized then its not just a product but the basic energy flow of each faction!”

The man was excited as his voice was trembling. The white haired and brown haired old men recovered their eyes and glanced at each other in deep shock. As the masters they understood what the new kinetic energy meant!

It was creating a new faction!

Eivissa and the other five masters were sitting in the hall drinking tea and chatting. The door opened after an hour. Eivissa looked to see the emotion filled faces of the trio coming out of the room.

“Is it a good?” Eivissa asked.

“Pete what do you think about the invention?” Another old man looked at the brown haired short old man.

The brown haired old man sighed and slightly shook his head: “You check out yourself! I give up!”

All the masters, including Eivissa, were surprised.

What kind of invention could make a master admire it?

Was it a five star item?

Chapter 366

Time passed

At about seven o'clock in the evening the twilight came. The rain gradually weakened but the clouds were still hovering in the sky. They weren't dispersed. Because of the annual rain season it would take a few days time for them to break off.

On the golden wall.

Fire was burning on beacon towers about tens of meters apart from each other. Oil from beasts and sycamore wood was used to burn the fire. The flames would last for long and weren't easy to extinguish as a result. The walls were as bright as a day as team of soldiers stepped up to replace the other ones in the posts.

General Auburn ate his dinner. He looked at the sky. There weren't going to be stars tonight and the sky was doing to be as dark as ink. He didn't know how long it would take it to rain again. He turned towards his adjutant: "Tell the generals not to relax so that they wouldn't be caught in surprise because of a sudden attack. Moreover ordered the intelligence to improve the frequency of the reconnaissance information."

"Yes." Adjutant Junlang turned away.

"Make sure that six purple feather troops are prepared and ready to attack." Auburn told to another assistant.

“Yes.”

“I would like to see what kind of military adviser thought of this idea.” General Auburn’s face was gloomy as he narrowed his eyes. He had experience war in jungle, deserts, hills and other different terrains. He had gone through large and small scale wars with a defeat. However this war was unprecedented. Although he occupied the high ground but the climate and morale of soldiers weren’t on par with the geography. There wasn’t much cards in his hands to use...

...

At night.

Dudian’s study room in the castle.

Dudian called Old Fulin as well as Nicholas, Kroen and several others. He came up with an idea after meeting with the Old Fulin. He told Nicholas and Kroen to be responsible for the implementation of the task. After everyone was dispersed Dudian sat by his desk and delved into thoughts for a long time. He slowly recovered his eyes as he sighed. There was a trace of sadness in his eyes. He set off curtains as he looked at the dark night without a word.

The next day.

The rain drizzled as the sky was covered with dark clouds.

The kid was wearing a raincoat as he delivered the newspaper to each household in the light rain.

The whole of outer wall area fell into an uproar after the reading the newspapers.

Border war had begun as the barbarians have attacked the golden wall!

This news appeared in the headlines of almost all newspapers. IT was reported in financial, entertainment and other kinds of newspapers.

This news spread like a virus to all the corners of the outer wall. The largest response came from the residents of the commercial district. Most of them wore raincoats to ask the neighbors or gather in the squares to ask for the truthfulness of the information from the Holy Church. Most of them saw the same news of war written onto various squares belonging to Holy Church.

“The barbarians took advantage of the rain yesterday afternoon and attack the golden wall! The battle lasted until 6 pm. The barbarians temporarily receded after the heavy rain. The military stubbornly hold onto the fort. There are 26,200 casualties and 71,800 soldiers are injured...”

Dudian ate break and milk while read the morning newspapers.

Although he had information about the tide of the war because of Gwyneth and Sergei but he still checked the military newspaper to see their attitude and ideas.

"More than 20,000 soldiers died in the first day..." Old Fulin was shocked as he saw data on casualties: "Are barbarians so cruel? Why do we have such heavy losses as we rely on golden wall to defend?"

Dudian replied: "How could they win the compassion of people without losing soldiers? I think the military will make a big move after the war... It's just there are warming up the fools."

Old Fulin looked at him: "It should be because of the development of the magistrate and Holy Church in the last years. They have become more ferocious as the image of the military fell down in the hearts of the people. The people want their children to become soldiers as its an easy job with great remuneration. Moreover no one would bully them because they would be part of the system. Actually the soldiers and guards could bully others. Even if there is no corruption but such an impression was left by the military. That's why they had directly retreated back to the golden wall to make sure that they would have a chance to restore their reputation."

Dudian added: "This is a big chess game. If they can win over the enemy then it will be a great victory. However if they lose then military will lose all. But this time there is too many things that's out of their expectations. They didn't expect the enemy to be much more difficult that in their information. According to the information given by Sergei the barbarians have used a monster

called ‘giant frog’ to make siege.”

“If that this is able to cross the wall then it goes in a rampage of grazing. The barbarians have picked a great opportunity. I didn’t think that military doesn’t have any other cards than artillery.”

Old Fulin looked at Dudian: “Would you like them to have?” (other means…)

Dudian smiled and frankly answered: “Of course its not good for them to have other means.”

Old Fulin was perplexed.

Dudian checked the newspaper in his hand and slowly said: ” People will realize the tragedy and difficulty of the war through the battle, casualties and injuries… I assume military is well prepared but I hope they will be able to control the situation.”

Old Fulin picked another newspaper: “This is an influential newspapers under the wings of Huasheng consortium. There is information about you under the war headlines. It’s about your new invention. I hope you will get good results.”

“If we want good results then we have to rely on both of them.” Dudian slowly said.

“Do you mean Nicholas and Kroen?”

“Yes.”

“What kind of mission did you give them last night? Why haven’t they come back yet?”

“It’s nothing much for you to worry about. Its just the rallying by newspapers isn’t enough. I send them to spread leaflets and spread gossip. I think it is a good opportunity to draw the attention of the people.” Dudian said.

Old Fulin was puzzled but didn’t ask for more.

At about ten o’clock in the morning.

There were dozens of figures outside the castle. All of them were farmers and civilians who wanted to rush into the castle but were stopped by knights of light at the gates.

“We want Dean!”

“Ask him come out!”

“He has sinned! Ask him to come out and apologize for the dead soldiers!”

“The reason of my son’s death is him! Huhuhu (crying sound)…”

Dozens of people loudly shouted.

Dudian was learning from the super chip. His brows wrinkled as he heard the voices. He glanced down from the window. He was able to see the scene outside the castle.

Pound~~

The door was knocked.

Dudian glanced at the door: “Make sure that knights of light stop them! If you have chance get some people to come forward and mix with them.”

Sander was startled as he was standing outside the door. He turned away.

The people went back after an hour as heavy rain began.

Dudian was seriously studying as he checked the information form the super chip. He wasn’t affected by the noise.

Another day.

“The situation has deteriorated?”

Dudian opened up the military newspaper and read the title.

Chapter 367

“September 16th. Year 307 giant wall calendar. The first battle at the golden wall. 867 units of the ‘dragon’ class artillery weapons were dispatched by the military all over the golden wall. However because of two days of consecutive rain the power of artillery was lost. The situation is very dangerous...”

“At 4:23 am the barbarians launched their 8th attack. The total number of casualties for today was 12,700 ...”

Dudian quietly read and closed the newspaper. He delved into thoughts as he looked at the cup of milk in front of him. He has long known the detailed information about the war because of Gwyneth and Sergei’s intelligence reports. Their reports were more accurate than military’s. Of course, they couldn’t keep statistics of casualties but they had more clear information about the general situation.

The barbarians were successful in breaking through the wall by using the giant frogs in the morning of the 8th battle. The barbarians climbed onto the wall and fought with soldiers in a melee combat. The battle was very chaotic and lasted for more than 10 minutes. The military had sent more soldiers and special troops to block the gap and kill the enemy.

It was a proof that the situation was beyond the control of the military. Soon it would get out of control!

Dudian could feel the anxiety within the content. It seems the

military wanted to play a big game but they had screwed up.

"The number of soldiers had to be replaced with others as a result of the 8th battle. However the rain is like the poison attack and military can't avoid or prevent it!" Dudian's eye lit up: " The next battle will be harder than the previous one. The number of sick soldiers would be much more and the military will have to use the reserve troops. Those reserves are no different than boy scouts!"

"Although the military hasn't used their top forces in the war but the number of the losses is to much at this point. It would be difficult to resist all the barbarians by using those top troops. The barbarians are bound to enter the commercial district and it will cause panic!"

"Military ..."

Dudian's eyes narrowed as he gently patted his fingers on the table.

Another day passed in the blink of an eye.

The third day after the war broke out.

Dudian enjoyed his breakfast as he read the military newspaper. The situation was more severe than yesterday. There were heavy casualties. A giant frog was able to broke through the golden wall. However the soldiers were able to kill it before the giant frog was

able to enter the commercial district.

Dudian checked the other newspapers. There were few newspapers who had interviews the retired general of military and got the analysis of the current war. Some of them focused on reporting the situation on the front line. The giant frog that had crossed the golden wall was also recorded in the news. A rough sketch of it was drawn. There were soldiers depicted by the corpse of the giant frog. It was shockingly big.

Dudian looked at the drawing and then picked a fruit from the table as he went back to his room.

“Bastard! You have killed my son!”

“Traitor! Spy!”

“Get out!”

More than dozen people who held umbrellas shouted under the rain. The knights of light firmly stood by the gates as they kept them out. They couldn’t attack civilians because of their knighthood.

Dudian glanced through the window but continued to learn from the super chip.

A stir happened inside the castle while they were having dinner in the evening. The captain of the knights of light quickly came

into the dining room and said to Dudian: “Architect, the military is coming…We have no right to stop them.”

Dudian frowned: ” Let them in. ”

“Yes.” The young man was relieved as he turned away.

After few moments a team of military knights came to the hall. All of them had swords on their waists. The commander had little contempt in his face as he looked at Dudian.

“Are you Dean? We have received order to take two people from your New World Consortium. They are Gwyneth and Sergei. Both of them are hunters under your consortia.” The middle-aged captain spoke in a cold tone.

Old Fulin, Sander, Jake and other juniors were surprised to see these people. Some of the members of the young generation shivered in fear as they saw the military men wearing black armors.

Dudian narrowed his eyes: “Nicholas tell them the rule of my house.”

Nicholas’s face changed. He didn’t expect Dudian to have such a tough attitude towards the military. He didn’t dare to persuade Dudian so he stepped up: “No one is allowed to wear swords in my master’s castle. My master is an architect of the Temple and you are offending him by such an attitude!”

“I would have caught him long ago if there was a direct evidence. As for his status as an architect, pooh!” The man spat on the floor.

Nicholas was anxious: “You!”

Old Sulin and Sander didn’t expect the military men to be so brutal. They looked at Dudian.

Dudian was sitting in his chair as he stared at the middle-aged captain. He spoke in a calm but very serious tone: “I advise you to clean it otherwise I’ll make you lick it back.”

“Haha … …” The man laughed and the uniformed men behind him joined. The laughter echoed in all directions.

There was a smile on Dudian’s face as he looked at them. He slowly got up and left the table towards the middle-aged captain. He step by step approached him and stood about half a meter away from him. The middle-aged captain stopped laughing and looked at Dudian who was a head smaller than him: “Architect, I’m a rough man and you are standing way close to me. You should be very careful because if I turn around I can hurt you. Don’t blame me in that case.”

“Haha … ” The people behind him laughed.

Dudian smiled: “I would like to tell you this.” He clenched all five of his fingers and lifted his palm. It was a slow movement but the

people standing in front of him were much slower to react. The next moment Dudian's fist hit the middle-aged man's chest in an extremely fast manner and it seemed as if the fist carried millions of tons of force behind it.

The captain was stunned.

Kacha~~

Sounds of broken bones echoed.

Bang!

The captain's body flied out suddenly and hit the four military men behind him. All of the turned upside down.

Dudian slowly walked towards the middle-aged captain.

Captain was in pain. He wanted to get up but the chest muscles tightened as he wanted to use his arm to stand. The tearing pain spread through his body.

Dudian grabbed one of his shoulders and twisted it. Kacha~ The shoulder was dislocated. He grabbed the other shoulder and dislocated it too. Afterwards Dudian used one of his hands and lifted the man from his hair. He dragged his body to the place the man had spat to. He pressed the captain's head onto the ground and cleaned the place with his head.

The middle-aged captain's cheek polished the floor as Dudian rubbed his face onto the floor.

"Captain!" The two men standing behind them roared and pulled out the swords from the waists. They waved it at Dudian. It seemed that they had totally forgotten the identity of the teenager as an architect of the Temple. There would be a big commotion even if they hurt a hair on his head.

Coldness flashed through Dudian's eyes as he saw two men try to attack him. His hands were as fast as lightning as he moved in an instant. Kacha~ The hands of the men grabbing onto their swords broke up and they cried up.

Dudian stepped forward he pushed them out as he used his hands to grab onto their faces.

It seemed like both of them were hit by a train. Their bodies were lifted off the ground and flied out. The other three that were about to stand up once again were hit by the bodies of these two.

Dudian glanced at them in anger. He turned away and squatted down. Dudian grabbed by the collar of the captain and put his scarf into his mouth to block his scream. He closed his mouth near the man's ear and softly said: "Tiger is a Tiger! Because its still the king of beasts even when it it sleeps. Do you understand?"

Chapter 368

The middle-aged captain's pupils shrank and painful whines echoed from his mouth as he heard the teenager whisper into his ear. There was shock in his face as in his impression the architects from the Temple would have weak bodies. However the teenager in front of him were comparable to generals in terms of power and speed.

Dudian glanced at the man's face. He loosened his grip and the man's head knocked onto the wooden floor. The middle-aged man's upper body was almost paralyzed as his chest bones were broken and both of his arms were dislocated from his shoulder.

Dudian rapidly moved his hand as he grabbed onto the shoulder of the middle-aged man. He made a slight twist and pushed down the man's arms. Kacha~ Kacha~ Both arms were skillfully fixed.

"Both of them will report to military tomorrow! If there is anyone else from military who plans to come over then I hope you will remind them to comply with the rules of my house. Otherwise they won't be so lucky." Dudian stood up and clapped his hands. He kicked the man across the back and turned to walk towards the table.

Nicholas immediately handed towel to Dudian.

Dudian took the towel and carefully rubbed his fingers. He made sure that all of them were clean. He handed the towel back to Nicholas: "Send them off."

“Yes.” Nicholas smiled.

The middle-aged captain stood up from the ground as there was an expression of pain on his face. He looked at Dudian for a moment and then turned: “Let’s go.”

The other knights looked frightened as they glanced at Dudian. They turned and followed behind their captain in silence.

Dudian held onto the knife as he looked at the table: “The dishes should be cold now. Tell the chef to heat it up.”

The younger generation members of the Ryan family bowed their heads as they didn’t dare to look at Dudian’s eyes.

Old Fulin slightly smiled but didn’t say anything.

After the end of the meal Dudian returned back to his study room. Old Fulin came to sit in a chair next to Dudian as Sander helped him move: “You have wounded officers of the military. If they go back and report it then it will work against you in this critical period. Why were you so impulsive?...”

Dudian looked up at him: “I’m not sure if their attitude was deliberately instructed by someone to test our bottom line. If it was so then the people behind them will know where my bottom line lies. If it is not like that then it doesn’t matter much as my heart is comfortable with what I have done.”

“The nobles are disgusted by the existence of hunters because of the danger and brutality.” Dudian smiled: “But hunters try to cherish their lives more than anyone after experiencing so many life and death battles. In addition there much more respect to our own lives and personalities. Those clowns were not qualified to test my patience.”

Old Fulin was startled as he slowly nodded: “I’m worrying too much. The life outside the giant wall has taught you how to live freely.”

Dudian smiled as he handed a letter to Sander who was besides Old Fulin: “After Sergei and Gwyneth comes back give them this letter. Moreover make sure that Nicholas is prepared to replace them and gather intelligence from the battlefield. We have to get the first hand intelligence rather than relying on newspapers from the next day.”

“Can we send old Nicholas?” Sander was surprised “he …”

“He is much stronger than you think.”

“Uh, I know, I’ll go now.” Sander turned away and left the room. He gentle closed the door without making any sounds.

Dudian opened the curtains and looked at the darkness of the night. The drizzle was still continuing and the window was half-concealed because of the cool air blowing onto it from outside. He opened the window to change the air in the room. He looked at Old

Fulin: “Tell Sander to order servants to prepare charcoal in your room. We have to prepare the fireplace in your room as the winter is coming.”

“Winter?” Old Fulin was perplexed: “Does it refer to black snow season? I always hear strange words coming from you and I’m not sure where you have learnt them. Do they call black snow season as winter in the slums?”

Dudian smiled but didn’t answer.

Old Fulin saw his smiled and sighed: “Don’t keep everything to yourself. Although I am old and may not help you at all but at least I can share the pressure.”

Dudian shook his head: “I’m not concerned about anything. But I didn’t expect the appetite of the army was this big. I thought they had screwed up but now it seems that they are more smarter than the rest.”

“Oh? Why do you think so?”

“I thought that they will do a forced conscription because of the outbreak of the war and push the youth into the front line of the battlefield.” Dudian sighed: “But military’s aim wasn’t civilians. This time they want to directly weaken the power of the six consortia! If military is going to get the hunters from our New World consortium then no other consortia will be spared. Moreover this is a special case and no other consortia can refuse them!”

“The military can suppress all of the consortia in the absence of the public support. After all no one would be able to resist as the consortium is only a body which has gathered the wealthy businessmen.”

Dudian sighed and continued: ” The ‘public’ is really strange. Its useful as it happens to be ignorant and listens to the indirect commands. Its hardworking as if it’s a group of slaves. However its useless as any power that has value in its eyes and heart is almost unapproachable. When it comes to this then the Holy Church is the most intelligent of all of us.”

Old Fulin heard the sentimental tone Dudian was talking. He was slightly startled as he looked at the teenager in front of him. Most of the sixteen year old ones would be ignorant of everything and generally would play around all day. However the kid was playing a power game with the six consortia, the military and even the Holy Church.

Old Fulin said: “My father had told me that although civilians are humble but they can’t be the cornerstone of our aristocracy. If our family wants to flourish then we can’t lose the favor of people. Therefore our family always approaches the civilians with a great care. This is related to my father’s teachings.”

Dudian looked out through the window: “Soon a group will lose the people and the public opinion. At the time we will see the performance of the military.”

Old Fulin was startled. He recovered his eyes and looked out the window at the dark night.

…

Morning of the next day.

Dudian got up on time. He was eating breakfast as he waited for the newspapers. Gwyneth and Sergei also came down from upstairs and greeted Dudian.

“Don’t ever forget what I said last night. The life insurance comes first!” Dudian gently cut the steak on his plate and put it in his mouth: “I’m not planning to put effort to collect corpses of the dead.”

Sergei grinned: “This battle is just a child’s play for us as the spikes have been removed! Why are you talking about life insurance and eating that greasy thing in the morning?”

“I have a good appetite this morning.”

Chapter 369

Gwyneth and Sergei once again came to the golden wall. They found out that after one night the wall had become unrecognizable. It was full of corpses and there was not enough manpower to clean them. Tsunami-like roars echoed from the other side of the golden wall which stirred the eardrums and minds of the soldiers.

Boom!

A giant frog jumped onto the wall. Its huge body swept around the crowd and threw out many soldiers from the golden wall. The soldiers fell to the ground like sandbags. There were no more sounds coming off them as most of them died on spot.

Gwyneth and Sergei glanced at each other. In such a war there was a high risk of death even for people with senior hunter's combat power.

"Are you from New World consortium? Go! Go! Go there!" A young man wearing a uniform of a lieutenant shouted at Sergei and Gwyneth.

Sergei clenched his fists and turned to look at the youth. Gwyneth slowly shook her head as she looked at him. According to the instructions of the young master they had to follow the orders of the military.

General Auburn watched the situation on the wall: "Are the

hunters from the consortia have been mobilized?”

“They are in the barracks.” Adjutant Junlang reported.

“Make sure that to form them into a separate team but they have to follow the orders from the battalion headquarters. Make them move!” General Auburn said in a cold tone.

“Yes!” Adjutant Junlang was surprised but didn’t dare to neglect the general’s order. He quickly turned away and left.

At the same time another adjutant said: “General the arrows that we have prepared isn’t enough!”

Auburn frowned: “Why are you coming to me for little things such as this? Make sure that new batches are produced and if there not enough in the warehouse then buy from the consortia! Why haven’t you prepared arrows in advance as we were going to fight a long war?”

“Yes.” The adjutant left.

Whoosh!

Barbarian army used catapults to throw boulders. They hit the wall. Some soldiers were smashed into pool of mud as they weren’t able to avoid it on time. There were huge pits blasted on the high golden wall.

Bang!

The part of the golden wall couldn’t hold and smashed after cracks were made by the thrown boulders. The stones began to fall down the golden wall and a huge gap was revealed.

Roar!

The barbarians attacked through the gap as if they were angry bulls.

The middle-aged man who was the captain of the area said in a hurry: “Fast! Arrows! Block!”

Roar!

The barbarians were like group of ants which tried to climb the golden wall. The first wave of barbarians were shot dead by the arrows. But the waves that followed up were able to set foot on the wall. They reached the wall in a rapid influx.

The width of the wall was limited. The barbarians quickly drowned the defending soldiers.

Whoosh!

A team of purple feather troops rushed into the battlefield. They

were using spears as they swept through the barbarians like a wolf that had gone into a flock of sheep. Because of the support by the archers they were able to block the rush of barbarians.

Roar!

Barbarians still didn’t give up as they crawled from the outside of the golden wall.

The men of the purple feather troops were much powerful than ordinary soldiers. They beheaded the barbarians and blocked the gap. The barbarians couldn’t take a half step onto the wall anymore.

The rain was still continued as the war went on.

After half an hour.

A group of barbarians with dark red skin jumped into the battlefield. Their faces were grim and angry. There were cracks on their red faces which looked like blood vessels floating on their cheeks.

ARGH!

The red barbarians issued howls similar to beasts as they rushed at purple feather troops. They were very fast. One of the red barbarians threw a soldier from purple feather troops onto the ground and began to bite onto his face.

Puff!

Members of the purple feather troops rushed to rescue. They used spears to stab onto the body of the red barbarians. However the latter was still roaring and biting even though its body was full of holes. They were able to kill the red barbarians. The previous member of the purple feather troop that was attacked by it was in a deadly situation. His companions were overwhelmed as they checked his face. His nose, cheeks and throat were bitten and blood flowed out.

Argh!

The entrance of the red barbarians caused a sudden chaos in the battlefield.

“Reporting to the general! There is a gap on the 7^{th} wall and the red barbarians have appeared. The number of purple feather troops isn’t enough! We need more help!” An adjutant reported to Auburn.

Auburn’s face slightly changed as he spoke in a low tone: “Send more purple feather troops. In addition, give the pills to the ordinary soldiers. We have to survive until the reinforcements comes!”

“Yes.”

…

At noon.

Dudian checked the afternoon news. The afternoon and evening newspapers didn't have a much of an audience relative to morning news. However because of the war people began to pay more attention to its state so the sales had gone up.

After all, the situation didn't seem to be optimistic.

The occupation of Red Maple mountains by the barbarians and the destruction of the surrounding towns and villages have been published by the newspapers. Once they passed through the golden wall then the horrors of the Red Maple mountains would occur in the commercial district and entire outer wall area.

"Military is really ruthless. They have used the hunters from all the six consortia. They have even asked for the majority of primary hunters to join the war. Its no different than using them as cannon fodder!" Dudian's eyes narrowed as he read the papers.

"Purple feather troops are unable to stop the barbarians. It seems I have to give them a hand…" Dudian murmured as he gently rubbed his fingers.

…

The same night. The news released by the military.

“Heavy casualties!”

“Golden wall will fall!”

“The military will establish second line of defense by the Red river. It will stick to the end to defend the civilians!”

“The help from the inner wall area has been summoned and soon they will send reinforcements…”

Dudian checked the eye-catching titles at the newspaper. He wrinkled his eyebrows as he pondered. Dudian put away the newspaper and turned to check the newspapers of the other consortia. All of them reported news related to the war. Although most of them analysed the situation from different perspectives but they still admitted that the situation was very difficult. However they found different reasoning to appease the civilians and try to avoid creating panic. If there were riots then the consortia would be the most to be influenced by it.

“Golden wall has always been impregnable! The barbarians were able to easily break through the King’s Fort and repeated attack the golden wall! We believe that Mr Dean, the traitor from the Temple, should be arrested and interrogated. Perhaps the information about tactics of the barbarians could be…” Dudian saw a report at the bottom of the newspapers. He looked at the lower left corner to check the name of the newspaper.

“I thought you have forgotten about me…”

in a vast territory at the north of the commercial district.

The headquarters of the military was surrounded by the soldiers stationed as guard. At the moment seven or eight people were gathered in a broad hall in a magnificent castle in the depth of the territory. All of them were wearing medal on their shoulders. The medals were engraved with golden figure of goddess Silvia. Some of them had one while some had five of those.

“We won’t be able to hold onto the golden wall because of soldiers fighting under the continuous rain. We have replaced dozen batches of soldiers and all of them are seriously ill. Although the medical treatment is done in a timely manner but its not enough!”

A white bearded old man said: “These fucking barbarians are more cunning than we have imagined. We have conveyed messages regarding reinforcements to the inner wall but no one has come over yet! I’m afraid we can’t rely on them at the critical situation!”

“Well!” Another middle-aged man said: “It’s too late to establish the second line of defense now! Previously I said that instead of using guerrilla warfare against the barbarians in Red Maple mountains we should have gone for straight battle. The area was in front of us and the soldiers were familiar with terrain but you all gave up on opportunity to delay the war to golden wall. What’s the result? The artillery is useless because of the heavy rain!”

“All right.”

A blonde middle-aged man frowned: “What’s the use of these arguments at this point? We have to come up with a solution to save the situation as soon as possible. We are at a disadvantage. Auburn can’t do anything with artillery and I assume that barbarians were aware of existence of the weapons. They understood the weakness of the artillery. It means that there are traitors and this matter had to be solved out too. If our plans are going to be sold to the barbarians then how are we going to deal with them?”

“Moreover the existence of the artillery is known not just in military but in the Temple of Elements and the Inferno family of the Dark Church. But I assume Inferno family wouldn’t be so stupid to deal with barbarians as they will turn into the biggest suspects.” Another man added.

“Do you think that the architect called Dean did it?”

“I doubt it. He was just a civilian. He was selected by the Mellon consortium as a scavengers and accidentally got his hands on a magic marks. That’s how he had become a hunter. Afterwards he spent three years in prison and was bailed out by a noble family. His talents were revealed after the prison term. He has no background and no contacts. How would he have information on artillery?” The previous man said in a disdainful tone.

The blonde man frowned: “It’s difficult to find out the traitor. We should focused on the front line. We can seize time and establish the second line of defense. There is only half a day travel

from here to inner wall so why haven't they replied yet?"

White bearded old man's face was gloomy: "Temporarily don't expect anything from inner wall. They won't stand by but they won't easily intervene either. We still have to rely on our own to delay time. This Red River's width is more than four hundred meters. Its unfathomable. Moreover there are aquatic monsters inside it so if we fight by the river the giant frogs brought by the barbarians will be useless. The only problem is that the barrier by the side of the Red River has to be repaired. Once we retreat from the golden wall the barbarians will chase after us. Moreover if they don't take the opportunity to chase us then they can attack the residential area from the side. The situation will be too bad in that case!"

"Maybe we should send some of our troops to the silver wall." Another man suggested.

Another man sighed:"The boundary wall of the residential area is smaller than golden wall. Its width isn't much too. The number of soldiers that could be accommodated there is limited. We won't be able to defend anything there. The only way is to let the civilians into the commercial district..."

The previous blonde middle-aged man flatly refused:"No! The situation is chaotic. If we let the civilians into the commercial district then the mobs will take the opportunity to attack the nobles. We won't be able to afford the responsibility!"

The others looked at each other as they sighed.

...

In the blink of an eye another day passed.

The fourth day since the beginning of the war.

Dudian was sitting in a spacious hall inside the castle. There were few shelves which had wooden swords, knight spears and other weapons. It was a room meant for the sons and daughters of the nobles to exercise. This way they could avoid the exposure to the sun.

At the moment two small figures were sparring with each other as they used wooden swords. Clank~ Clank~

Dudian was reading a book as he quietly sat in corner. From time to time he would look up at the figures as he would take a sip or two from the tea cup.

Thump~

The petite figure fell to the ground.

“Sister.” The tall figure put away the sword as he stepped forward to help his sister. It was Gabriel and Artemis.

Dudian looked up: “Let her go.”

Gabriel looked back at Dudian but he still reached out his hand towards his sister. He said in a gentle tone: “Sister, come on. Get up.”

The girl looked at Dudian and then shook her head. She grinned as she looked at her brother: “Brother, I’m fine!”

Gabriel turned towards Dudian and bent his body ninety degrees: “Master, I’m sorry..I...”

Dudian slowly said in a calm tone: “I know that you want to protect her. But you are harming her. Do you understand me?”

Gabriel whispered: “I know.”

Dudian casually said: “Since you know then from tomorrow on you will train with Nicholas. He isn’t as humble as you.”

Gabriel bit his lips: “Yes.”

“Master!” Artemis stepped out. She was almost going to cry.

Dudian glanced at her: “Your brother wouldn’t try to help you if you didn’t fall. Moreover you wouldn’t have to beg me for yourself... ”

“But ... but ...”

“Shut up and continue practicing.” Dudian spoke in a cold tone.

Gabriel looked at Artemis: “Sister, lets continue. Don’t worry.”

“Yes, brother.” Artemis replied.

Knock~ Knock~

“Come in.” Dudian said.

Kroen came in as the door was pushed open. He was wearing a black suit but one of his sleeves was empty. He respectfully said: “Master, the letter you were waiting for…”

Dudian nodded slightly and put down the book in his hand. He got up and said to Gabriel: “You can’t stop without my permission. Learn to endure!”

“Yes, young master.” Gabriel answered.

Dudian turned away.

Kroen always stuck to the manners and etiquette of butler. He bowed once more before Dudian. He glanced at the book that Dudian put on the table. There were words engraved in black color: “War and Peace.”

Kroen retracted his eyes and followed after Dudian. He shut the door without making a sound.

Chapter 371

“Prepare the carriage, I’m going to the Temple of Elements.” Dudian ordered the Kroen as he went to change his clothes.

Kroen ran out to make sure the carriage is ready. Dudian changed his clothing and put on raincoat. The carriage was waiting for him as he stepped out of the castle. Kroen opened the door for him.

Dudian nodded and entered the carriage.

The carriage began to move as it slowly went out of the castle.

The raindrops fell onto top of the compartment.

Dudian quietly sat inside the carriage as he listened to the sound of rain. After half an hour the carriage came to the front of Church Mountains. He got off the carriage and used umbrella as he went on the mountain road to his castle. He looked at the guard: “Is there any letter for me?”

“You are … … you!” The guard was surprised to see Dudian: “There are way too many letters. I’ll give you all of them.”

“I don’t want the ones from the past.” Dudian added.

The guard immediately replied: “There are few from today.” He pulled out a drawer and took out four or five letters.

Dudian took the letters and thanked the man. He went into his building and opened the envelopes one by one. In addition to the notice issued by the Temple the other letters were sent by the other architects. Some of them were asking about the problems they faced while the others wanted to make deals.

“Temporarily unable to assess the level? I have to personally get involved in the discussions? Strange... Can’t they analyze the designs? Or is it possible that they can’t understand the mechanical energy?” Dudian’s eyebrows wrinkled as he skimmed through the content. He put away the envelope and left the building. He used the umbrella to walk to the Temple’s Council hall.

Dudian saw seven or eight carriages parked outside the hall. The flags above them were wet and he couldn’t identify the patterns.

Dudian’s eye lit up as he went to the gates of the hall step by step. The guards stopped him but recognized Dudian after he moved the umbrella that covered his face. One of them respectfully said: “Welcome architect.”

Dudian asked: “Are the masters inside the hall?”

One of the guards replied: “The masters are discussing things. We have been informed about your visit so please go in.”

Dudian nodded and handed over his umbrella to one of them. He shook his sleeves to threw the rain and he stepped into the hall.

“Architect, please this way.” The maid greeted Dudian and showed him the room.

Dudian was led by the maid to the second floor of the hall. She knocked the door and gently pushed it after a voice echoed from inside.

Dudian’s eyes swept over the eight figures sitting around the table. All of them were old. The youngest would be at least 40 or 50 years old. Most of them had white hair. Dudian looked at the thin old man sitting at the top: “Greetings master Skagen. Greetings to all the masters.”

The old man laughed: “Architect Dean you don’t have to be polite…Oh… Perhaps after the change I will have to call you master Dean.”

Dudian was surprised even though he was psychologically prepared for the moment: “Master Skagen, what do you mean?”

“Haha … …” Master Skagen laughed: “Of course, I mean what I say. Your invention has been identified and according to the Temple you have the qualification to become a ‘master’! Its too late today or else the news about you becoming a master would have already released. But I can assure you tomorrow morning all the nobles and whole of commercial district will know your name!”

Dudian was startled. Although he had expected the invention to be a legendary level but he didn’t imagine the Temple to be so

efficient in assessment. It seems the Temple was determined to help him this time.

Dudian smiled: “Thanks masters! I’ll be in your care!”

Skagen was surprsied to see Dudian to be so calm. Perhaps he had expect to be a master and it was his long term goal. Skagen smiled: “We were looking for you because we want to discuss your incredible invention. We have talked with masters and Lord made the proposal so we won’t be evaluating your invention neither as a five star item nor a legendary. It will be a faction on its own! The new, tenth faction will be born in our Temple!”

Dudian was surprsied when he heard the word faction. It has been so many years but except nine basic elements no new faction was born. However his ‘steam engine’ and kinetic energy ideas would end up as tenth faction!

Is it acting like a foundation?

Skagen saw the dumb expression on Dudian’s face. He said: “Master Dean, I admire the new idea that was proposed by you. I had seen the new textile machine invented by you and I faintly felt inspiration. But after seeing your new concept called ‘steam’ I suddenly woke up from slumber. This is exactly what I was inspired about but couldn’t put it into words. Moreover you have manufactured the idea into applicable product. Its perfect... Impeccable...Haha.. ”

Dudian heard the man’s hearty laughter. He had good impression

of the man. Dudian smiled: “It’s the result of my works after the new textile machine. That’s how I was inspired too.”

“A predecessor of ours had made a well which he called ‘cloud’. He had used some kind of technology similar to ‘steam’..”

“We only marveled at his invention for so many years but never thought that steam can be used to propogate kinetic energy... A difference of thinking...A different mindset... ”

“It’s not about thinking a lot of times but thinking the right way. Actually you may never know if you had the right idea or not.” Another thin old man agreed with Skagen.

Skagen smiled as he continued: “We will give you the choice to name the new faction. Don’t rush to answer now and think about it.”

Dudian pondered a bit and replied: “I’ll use a simple word to describe the faction’s name. It should be called ‘Steam’ faction. What do you think?” (Qi as in air, gas or steam)

“Steam?” Skagen was surprised: “Alright, It is your right. We can’t interfere with the naming. But it can’t be an ugly name you know!”

Dudian smiled.

“In addition to the concept of the kinetic energy you have

submitted two pieces of designs related to new two products. The first is called steam engine and the second one is called rifle. We have taken liberty and produced both of them. Its effects indeed are the same as were written in the notes in the drawings. That's why we had to delay for two days before informing you. I hope you won't be offended by our move." Skagen said.

Chapter 372

Dudian smiled: “You are being polite. I’m sorry to produce designs only as the time was limited. I wanted to finish the products but half the way my servants passed me the news about unfavorable rumors about me in the outside world. So I hurried to submit the invention and concept. Fortunately there were no big mistakes or you will be troubled a lot.”

Skagen turned around and looked at the crowd in the conference hall. He sighed and looked at Dudian: “We have heard those rumors too but we believe that you won’t be involved in such a stupid thing. Unfortunately these crazy rumors have spread everywhere at this point and we have asked the magistrate to open an investigation. There isn’t any direct evidence found your involvement with the barbarians so please have a bit of patience.”

Dudian nodded: “I’m sorry for bothering you for such a thing. Moreover I have also implicated the Temple because of such unreasonable thing. I’ve brought bad influence to all of you. I would love to personally attest at trial but the witnesses are my servants so there won’t be much of persuasive power. I’m also uncomfortable as its very difficult for me to prove my own alibi.”

“Ha ha……”

Several masters loudly chuckled.

“I understand that you are depressed. The Lord has decided to send you to inner wall to study. You can come back after the end of

the war so that you can avoid this momentum."

"Inner wall?" Dudian was surprised. However he knew that it was possible because of his identity as a master which made him easy to enter the inner wall at this time. Even the consortia were helpless and couldn't set foot into the inner wall.

He thought for a moment and sincerely said: "Thank you very much! It's because of the Lord's and your kindness! But I think that escaping away is not a solution to the problem. In addition there is the military newspaper which have made the claims that are pressing at this point. The purpose of my works is nothing more than spreading the faith and benefiting the civilians. Right now, the civilians are in dire straits and I can't give up and run away. It's contrary to my work goals, my faith and spirit of the knighthood. So I'm asking you all to let me stay and fight!"

"Knighthood?" Skagen was surprised but there was no time to go into details: "What's in your mind?"

Dudian looked at him then at the crowd. He bowed and spoke in an enthusiastic tone: "I want to personally fight in the front line against the barbarians! I swear to defend the golden wall until the last drop of my blood! Please masters! Support me and I'll be grateful for lifetime!"

All the masters present in the conference hall were affected by the pious and sincere words of Dudian. Previously some of them had different speculations in their minds. Most of them thought that he would ask them to use their personal connections to help Dudian. But the boy had fearless determination and was brave

enough to personally set foot into the extremely dangerous battlefield!

Skagen was startled as he saw the teenager making a ninety degree bow in front of him. There was shock in his face. Skagen took a deep breath: “I admire your courage and believe in your love! But you are an architect and fighting in the dangerous front line is not suitable. The barbarians will break through the golden wall at any time and if you fall there it would not just affect our Temple but would be sorrowful result for countless civilians!”

“Yes ah, Mr. Dean don’t be so impulsive! We believe in you…”

“Yes, Master Dean the battlefield is too dangerous…”

“I’m willing to use all my connections to help you wash the dirt that was smeared by the rumors. There is certainly someone behind the shadows that is spreading those rumors! ”

Dudian didn’t lift his body as he still kept in the bowing posture. He said in a resolute and sincere tone: “I hope you will fulfill my request. I don’t care about master medal or the rewards of the Temple! I want to defend the civilians from barbarians!”

The masters looked at each other. Some of them were dissatisfied with Dudian earlier on but their face changed and their eyes softened after Dudian’s resolute action.

Skagen glanced at the crowd. He hesitated a bit before propping

up Dudian: “We will promise since you are requesting it. I’ll talk with the Lord. As for your new products. I assume the strong destructive power of rifle can play a great role in the battlefield. It may even be able to restore the situation. The rifle can be regarded as a legendary item!”

Dudian replied: “But its too late in a sense. Too many soldiers have died. Even dead soldier means there is a family which is saddened and fragmented! Only the total destruction of barbarians can end this war!”

Skagen sighed: “It’s true that the war ends in pain. Since you are willing the Temple will contact military in your stead and let them use the rifle in the battlefield. If they mobilize the manufacturing power of all the consortia then its possible to stop the barbarians before they break through the golden wall!”

Dudian nodded: “The sooner its done the better the results will be.”

Skagen asked: “The rifle is a legendary product. How much money do you want military to pay you?” The legendary items would normally cost millions of gold coins.

Dudian slightly shook his head: “I’m not planning to sell it. I’m willing to donate the rifle to the military free of charge. I hope that they can use the money to end the war as soon as possible!”

Skagen was startled.

Most of the masters were perplexed.

Donate?

Donating a legendary level weapon?

It had to be noted that Dudian could loot the military at this point. He could sell the rifle at several times expensive than an ordinary legendary item as there was a war going on! The military would buy it anyway! However, Dudian didn't act so but made a selfless move!

It meant millions of gold coins!

It was enough to buy at least 10 bustling neighborhoods in the commercial district! Even the masters present in the conference hall may not produce such a product in their lifetime! At most they would create several pieces of five star items and become a master! But the teenager in front of them was willing to donate a legendary item for free!

Moreover he wanted to donate to the military which slandered him!

Chapter 373

“Donate?” Skagen couldn’t help but ask: “Are you sure?”

“Of course!” Dudian earnestly said: “Why shouldn’t I if I can save the lives of soldiers on the front line by losing some wealth? It’s worth it even if only one person could be saved!”

Skagen stared at his firm and sincere eyes. He sighed: “It is the truth! Moreover the rifle is your product and you have full control about how to deal with it. But we must let the civilians know about what you are doing for them! Military must apologize to you too! They have slandered an outstanding master and this crime can’t be forgiven!”

Dudian sighed: “We can talk about this after the end of the war. It doesn’t matter to me if the civilians are aware of it. At least you are aware of this. Moreover I can go to inner wall to study after the war is over. So the disturbances in here won’t interfere with me. I just want to make new inventions and products to change our living environment. As for the way civilians look at me, its not much of a problem. I have attendants that protect me and they wouldn’t dare to trespass into my castle.”

Everyone looked at each other.

A wide faced old man shook his head: “No, that’s impossible. Even if you don’t communicate with the civilians but they are misunderstand you. There will be trouble in future. There are powers behind this and the civilians have to know how much you

have done to this war.”

“Yes, its not so easy to forget about the value of a legendary item. All the consortia and military have to know about it and this matter should be published in all the newspapers!”

“Mr Dean it was not just you suffer grievances but our Temple is also the subject of the questions from these fools. There are some who dare to talk about our Temple at the shadows. I assume they are instigated by the members of the Dark Church!”

Everyone added one after another.

Skagen nodded and looked at Dudian: “Everyone is telling the truth. We will help you and its not just about your personal reputation. It’s about the reputation of the architects of the Temple. We mustn’t give the opportunity to the Dark Church to spread rumors!”

Dudian had a startled look on his face. He apologized: “Sorry, my thinking was simple and didn’t think through the perspective of the Temple. I’ll listen to the arrangement of the Temple but before that I hope the rifle is given to the military for the urgent production! It has to be manufactured without delay!” Dudian had a serious expression on his face.

“I know, it will be send to the military after a discussion.”

“Thank you very much.” Dudian thanked.

“By the way you talked about the honor of knighthood. When did you become an apprentice knight?” Skagen asked.

Dudian replied: “Recently… I saw the number of casualties in the military newspaper and I went to the Knight’s Hall to test for knighthood. I hoped to have the opportunity to join the battlefield. However afterwards I learned that the military strong armed the consortia to send their hunters to the battlefield. If I knew about that I wouldn’t have to test for the title of the knight but directly go to battlefield as a hunter.”

Skagen replied without thinking: “Nonsense! You are a dignified architect! How can you join the battlefield with the identity of a lowly hunter? They are used as cannon fodder in the battle and no one knows how many of them will survive. Unless military wants to cut off relations with the Temple they wouldn’t dare to force you into the battlefield as a hunter!”

“I’m not sure about that.” Another master added: “The military moved by relying on the words of barbarians that they had caught! They dare to smear dirt on us through the newspaper. The military’s guts are getting bigger!”

“Yes.”

“We will give them what they want!” Another master said in a cold tone.

Dudian replied: “Gentleman the military is too sensitive to the

issues because of the war. We are fighting against foreign enemies and we can be seen as jokes by the barbarian if we raise an internal friction."

The other's couldn't help but see Dudian in a new sight.

Skagen patted Dudian's shoulder: "I hope everyone would be like you in times of war. We won't do anything now but after the war ends we will show them who we are. It's not internal friction but balance. Military's arrogance is getting more rampant. In the end they are losing big time and want to suspect a master of the Temple in haste. Although you were not a master at the time but your potential was without a doubt! Their move is no different than trying to slay a master. If we don't show them who we are then they will think that the Temple is soft."

Dudian bowed his head and blushed. He didn't know what to say.

Skagen smiled: "Since you don't want to go to inner wall to study then its alright. But military have to send an escort for you to join the battlefield. Otherwise we won't allow such a move!"

Dudian said: "Thanks predecessors! I'll keep it in my mind!"

"We are not predecessors but work mates!" Skagen smiled.

...

After the end of conference. North of commercial district. The

Military HQ

Whoosh!

A bird with white feather flied by. It's wings weren't stained with rain water. Obviously its flight couldn't be hindered by rain.

A middle-aged man reached out and grabbed the bird. He removed the reel from the foot of the bird. He took out the letter and rolled out the paper. He skimmed through the content: "Legendary item... Donate? Free of charge?"

The man recovered and turned to run into the hall in hurry. There was a huge sand table in the middle of the hall. It covered the terrain of the entire outer wall. Even the radiation zone was engraved in it. However the contours of the radiation zone weren't clear and were marked in gray meaning unknown or unexplored area.

Few people were standing by the sand table and chatting.

The middle-aged man ran into the room: "Generals! There is a report!"

The blonde general turned and frowned: "Colonel why are you so perplexed?"

The colonel said: "Reporting to the generals. We just received news from the Temple. They have produced a legendary level

military product and they will donate it to military!”

There was a sudden silence in the hall.

Everyone turned towards the colonel. Although they didn’t listen to his words one by one but the words ‘Temple’ and ‘Legendary’ caught their attention as they were too special.

“What did you say?!” The previous blonde general asked once more.

Colonel continued: “We just received the news that master Dean from the Temple has produced rifle which is a legendary item. He will donate it to army for free of charge. Moreover it is a military product!”

The general looked at each other.

“Military product and legendary level?” A middle-aged general was surprised: ” How many years has it been that the Temple produced a legendary level military product? Would they deliberately set its level so high?”

The white bearded old man who was standing at the top had traces of shock in his eyes. He stared at the colonel: “Did you just say master Dean?”

Chapter 374

“Master … Dean?”

Several other generals reacted in shock.

The colonel bowed: “It’s not wrong” He continued: “Master Dean has donated the new product called rifle to the military.”

The faces of some of them changed. The blonde general sucked cold breath and said in a shock: “Isn’t he the Dean who was reported by the barbarians that we took captive? We investigated the man. He was only sixteen years old and had become a senior architect. How come he was promoted to a master so soon?”

“Its reasonable for the Temple to enhance his position to a master’s if the so called rifle is a legendary level military item… But… ” Another general said in a calm tone.

The white bearded general retracted his eyes form the colonel and said: “Although the Temple always maintains their public image but their internal laws are too strict. They wouldn’t force this Dean’s item to legendary level and upgrade his status to master to earn face. I’m afraid in that case they wouldn’t be able to convince the other masters and their losses will be much greater. It would be a stupid move. I think this rifle is really a legendary weapon. Maybe it will be able to help us change the situation in the front…”

The doubts in the hearts of others dissipated after hearing his

words. One of them said: “If its really a legendary item and it was donated to us... It doesn’t seem like a move that a traitor would do. After all the price of a legendary item amounts to millions of gold coins. You can live luxury life for ten lifetimes without a worry! He would have taken asylum from the Temple and could go to inner wall to live and never come back to the outer wall area!”

“Yes, It would be too stupid to use donation to scrub suspicion!”

“We have to investigate this person! Although its not a noble move but there are lots of people who admire masters! If he is really wronged then we will be in big trouble!”

“This time we are in a pinch. Blame those idiots. They have directly published the news without investigating and figuring out anything! We as military won’t have a face if its found that everything was a misunderstanding!”

Everyone looked at each other.

At the same time!

A guard came in and reported: “Generals a master Skagen from the Temple has come to visit you. He wants to meet with general Lorenzo.”

“Master Skagen is here?”

“Could it be...?”

White bearded old man's face was gloomy: "Let him join us."

"Yes." The guard turned and left the hall.

After a moment, Skagen joined the hall as the guard led the way.

The white bearded old man was waiting in front of the sand. He stepped forward towards master Skagen. There was a smile on his face: "Master, it has been a long time."

Skagen calmly looked at him and other generals: "I won't delay your time as there is a war happening right now. I believe that you have much more things to do rather than wasting your time on me. I came here on behalf of the Temple and our new master Mr Dean. I'm here to tell you two things!"

Lorenzo's face slightly changed but he still maintained a smile: "You are resolute and vigorous. We have just learned about mr Dean being promoted to master. That's why we haven't come yet to congratulate him. I would like to know what you want to say."

Skagen calmly said: "First of all the military newspaper has to write about master Dean's donation on the front page as a headline. It has to be noted that he was wronged too. We need justice!"

"Even if the master didn't say we would publish master Dean's generosity in the military newspaper." Lorenzo frowned:

“However the battlefield is unpredictable. We can’t put such a news headlines.”

Skagen’s mouth tilted a bit but he didn’t laugh: “We are going to donate a legendary level military product. Are you saying that it has nothing to do with the war? Although you haven’t seen the product yet but have Temple ever disappointed military with our assessment level? We have evaluate from one star to five stars. Have we ever done a wrong identification?”

Lorenzo’s face slightly changed. If he didn’t accept Skagen’s words it meant that he was spitting on Temple’s face. If he agreed then he had to spit on someone else’s face.

“Master, I think we have to discuss…”

Skagen frowned: “General you just said that the situation at the battlefield is changing. Shouldn’t you put all your energy into the decision making?”

Lorenzo was silent for a moment: “Alright, I promise it. The second thing?”

“IT is very simple. Master Dean insisted to personally fight on the front line. I hope you can send the most elite fighter to protect him. I believe that you wouldn’t like to see a master from the Temple who is less than 18 years old and have produced two legendary items to fall dead in the battlefield. This will be a loss to the giant wall!”

Lorenzo was shocked.

The generals standing behind him were stunned in anger.

They were angry because of Skagen's previous words but at the moment they doubted their ears.

What does it mean to fight at the front line?

Even the generals were reluctant to go to that place!

Especially in this situation the barbarians were about to capture the golden wall. If the military failed to protect then even the generals wouldn't be able to escape death. In the army the individual power was like a dot of sand in the desert.

However the teenager wanted to take the initiative and go to front line? Moreover he insisted!!!?

Lorenzo recovered: "Master Skagen, did I hear it wrong? Master Dean wasn't to personally go to battlefield? Why didn't you stop him? The front line is too dangerous. Even if we send the most elite soldiers we can't guarantee the safety of anyone! To tell you the truth we can't even guarantee that the barbarians would not break through the golden wall the next moment. Once the golden wall falls then anyone who comes back alive have to rely on blessings and luck of goddess Silvia!"

"We wanted to stop but he insisted on going to battlefield! Mr

Dean isn't only the most talented architect in the last hundred years but all has passed the first test of the Knight Hall! Once he passes through the next assessment he will become a real knight! He has the spirit of the knighthood! We wanted to send him to the inner wall to study and never return back to the outer wall!"

Skagen stopped for a moment. His fingers clenched into a fist under his sleeves: "But! But he didn't want to escape! In order for the military to reduce the casualties he was ready to give up selling the legendary product so that the military wasn't burdened!"

"And for the glory of the knighthood he insisted on fighting in the battlefield! He was a hunter in the past but was imprisoned because of injustice! Now when he saw the crisis in the battlefield and heavy casualties he is ready to personally rush to fight for the civilians!"

"Perhaps you will think that he does so to restore his reputation and prove that he hasn't collided with the barbarians."

"But I have to remind you that he is already a master of the Temple! He has produced two legendary level products! He could have looted endless wealth from the military through the sales!"

"But he didn't do that!"

"He could have earned great wealth and joined the inner wall! He would enjoy superior lifestyle till the end of time! But he didn't! He abandoned glory to rush to the battlefield! A battlefield where any moment is death!"

“Now. General do you think that such a person would sell his compatriots? Would such a person collude with barbarians? Would such a person be a traitor?”

Chapter 375

Lorenzo and other generals fell into silence as they looked at the expression in Skagen's eyes. The vast hall stayed quiet for few moments.

Lorenzo slowly said: "Master we will send our top soldiers to defend the safety of master Dean. You shouldn't be worried about that. In addition we will thoroughly re-investigate the confession of the barbarians. This matter was neglected by military and the news was published in rush because of our negligence. We will take full responsibility for this matter. I hope it won't affect the relationship, friendship and covenant we had with the Temple for many years."

Skagen saw Lorenzo's serious expression. He added: "I hope there won't be a next time."

Lorenzo nodded: "Please forgive us. Never it will happen again."

Skagen was aware that oral promises had no effect. But he was looking at the opposite party's posture and standing. There was anger in his face. Skagen raised his hand and two men entered the hall. One of them had a metal item on his back. From their robes and medals it could be seen that both of them were senior architects.

The generals eyes were attracted to the metal item at the back of one of the senior architects. However from the size and appearance the item didn't seem to give a lethal vibe. There was no sharp edge

either.

“This is the rifle. The legendary military weapon.” Skagen indifferently said: “Is it alright if I show you its destructive power?”

Lorenzo was very curious: “Of course, please do so.”

Skagen nodded and glanced at the hall. There were no empty ornaments. His eyes fell on few chairs. He said: “Take one of the chairs and put a general’s armor on the chair.”

Lorenzo and other generals were puzzled but still went according to Skagen’s instructions.

Skagen saw that the shooter was ready and pointing the rifle at the target. He looked at chair which was fifteen meters away from the shooter. He said: “Generals please don’t stand in the middle.”

“Ah…”

Lorenzo and the other generals were stunned at the senior architect’s posture. It was similar to shooting a crossbow!

The middle-aged senior architect aimed at the chair. He adjusted the rifle to second gear and used the match to ignite the lead. He pulled the lock and pulled trigger. A metal ball suddenly ejected out from the muzzle.

Whoosh!

In a blink of an eye the sound of metal collision echoed and disappeared.

The eyes of Lorenzo and other generals narrowed in shock. They felt their scalps tingle because of horror. They were generals and all of them knew about military strategy and knowledge. But in addition they had high combat power which ensured them to come back alive one campaign after another.

However at this moment they felt the feeling of death passing by them.

Too terrifying!

Their constitution was much higher than ordinary person's moreover their senses were much better too. However at the moment they were just aware of something shooting out from the muzzle and nothing else.

Lorenzo looked at the armor on the chair. There was actually a hole on it!

Although it wasn't the best armor but it was one that was used by the generals! The sword would be able to pierce it!

There was a trace of pride in Skagen's eyes as he looked at shocked expression of the generals. He was scared the first time when he saw the power of the legendary weapon. The destruction was the secondary advantage of the weapon. The most terrible part was that even a child could use it! It was in no way inferior to the technique used by Inferno family!

Actually to some extent it was much more scarier!

After all to make an explosion sufficient amount of powder had to be used. However this rifle was totally different. It was light and small. Its destructive power would more ten times more than inflammation technique of Inferno family if it was used by some cult!

"This, this ..." An old general swallowed his saliva and looked at the architect.

The senior architect pulled the gear and the flame inside it was extinguished.

Lorenzo and other generals looked at him in fear and dread. Lorenzo's face was calm but his chest went up and down rapidly. He slowly asked: "This...It's used just like that?"

Skagen faintly smiled: "Yes the requirements are not that high. An archer is needed for good aim. In addition the range of the rifle isn't that far. The maximum is 50 meters which is on third gear. The range is 30 meters in 2 gear and 15 meters on first one. The speed and shooting intervals will be different in each gear. There

are information about this in documentation. I won't waste your time by elaborating on it right now."

Lorenzo looked at the rifle: "This isn't going to be used here."

"You don't have to worry about it. Just turn off the firing mechanism. "

Lorenzo and other generals were relieved to hear Skagen. However there was a little fear lingering in them. The attack rate of fire was too fast. Even if someone was prepared it would be difficult to avoid it. If the enemy was a bit lax then they would die on spot!

One of the generals looked behind the chair and saw a small ball embedded into the wall. He carefully reached and pulled it out. He looked back at Skagen: "Master is this the little thing that caused the attack?"

"Yes." Skagen nodded.

Lorenzo and other general were shocked as they wouldn't expect something as small as a marble could cause such a lethal attack.

"This is really ... a legendary weapon!" Lorenzo wryly smiled as he looked at the rifle in architect's hands.

"Our Temple never disappoints!" Skagen added.

“This thing can break through steel!” The blonde general spoke: “If we invest in it in large scale then the future of warfare will be rewritten! The scope of this weapon is too big. No wonder it was rate as a legendary weapon! It is creating a new era in warfare!”

Skagen continued: “The steel was soft as the thickness of your armor was not enough. So its normal for it to breakdown. The future armors should be tougher than the ones produced today. You saw the effect of the rifle and I hope you can produce and introduce it into the battlefield as soon as possible. It was the wish of master Dean to reduce the casualties of soldiers and win the war!”

Lorenzo said: “Our army has sworn to protect the golden wall and we will live up to master Dean’s expectations!”

Skagen nodded and turned away to leave.

The senior architect presented the rifle to Lorenzo.

Lorenzo wanted to stop the architect as his heartbeat was going crazy. His muscles were tightened as he got ready to take the rifle.

“General, please.” The architect handed out the rifle.

There was a trace of unnatural smile on Lorenzo’s face as he took the rifle in accordance to the position the architect was carrying it.

“General rest assured that as long as its used according to the instructions the rifle is very safe!” The architect smiled.

“Yes, yes.” Lorenzo politely answered.

Lorenzo watched as Skagen and two senior architect left. He turned and said: “Start the production of the rifle at the military workshops right now! Continue to manufacture it non-stop without sleep!”

“Yes!” A general said and left.

“General the body of this weapon is made of metal. I’m afraid we don’t have much of metal materials in our warehouse. We will have to collect from the consortia!” Another general who was responsible for logistics department spoke out.

Lorenzo coldly said: “The treaty signed with the consortia is very clear. During the war time they must fully support us! If any of them wants to earn dirty money then take over their factories forcefully!”

“Yes.”

“Now we will be able to change the tide after we use the rifle!” The blonde general said in an excited tone: “We will reserve them for archers and soon can use them in the battlefield.”

“I don’t know when our workshop can produce it. It looks to

have lots of parts. Damn, if we can manufacture it soon!”

Lorenzo looked at the man: “We would have this product in our hands much more earlier if it wasn’t for the influence of the military newspaper. Whoever published that news... Immediately arrest them and strictly investigate. I want to know who is giving them the courage from the shadows!”

Chapter 376

Dudian left the Temple and went straight back to his castle. He called old Fulin and others for a meeting. He told them the details of his accomplishments and let them know that he was appointed as a ‘master’. Everyone was shocked and speechless at turn of events.

“So the invention that you submitted last time was really a legendary level item!” Old Fulin felt incredible. The sixteen year old boy who was sitting in front of him had already produced a legendary level item which meant that he was very talented. But right now he had produced a second one. Never before such a thing had happened in the history of giant wall of Silvia.

Sander, Nicholas, Kroen and others were shocked to face a sixteen year old master who had created two legendary products.

Everyone was aware that Dudian’s previous senior architect identity was in no way comparable to his new status. He was one of the top figures within the outer wall at the moment!

Dudian saw the expressions on their faces. It seems that the title of a master had much more profound meaning than he had imagined. Even the old Fulin was no exception. They weren’t aware of him creating and heading a faction yet!

Creating a new faction and new system was much more sensational news in comparison to him becoming a master. Since the birth of the Temple there have been 9 factions. However in the

long years since the creation of the last faction no new extraordinary development was made for further improvement. It has to be noted that with the introduction of the ‘Steam’ faction he will enter the history books as a legendary master!

He will be able to do anything that he wants within the outer wall with such an identity!

“Don’t get too emotional!” Dudian coldly said as he could see through the thoughts that were passing in minds of everyone: ” There is a war going on and I will personally fight in the front line to win the war and restore the negative reputation that Mellon consortium has brought upon me. Now we need to do some preparatory work.”

Old Fulin and others were perplexed as they looked at Dudian.

“Are you planning to join the war?” Old Fulin was stunned.

Sander added: “Master, your identity and the invention of pair of legendary items is enough for people to not suspect you anymore! Why do you want to join the battlefield? Its too dangerous.. If an accident…”

“Yes ah … “Nicholas wanted to propose an idea.

“Huh?” Dudian glanced at Nicholas who didn’t utter another word.

Dudian retracted his eyes and indifferently said: “I’ve decided on this and nothing can change my mind. I’m not here for you guys to advise me. I know that my identity alone is enough to cancel the suspicion of most people. Moreover the military will find a way to restore the damage they have done to my reputation. But this is not my aim. I don’t want to cancel the public anger but to transfer it!”

“The ones who tried to smear dirt on me will swallow it back!”

Old Fulin was startled: “Transfer? Is this why you want to get involved with war? However unless we find direct evidence that the slander was spread by Mellon consortium then we are helpless at this point.”

Dudian said: “We don’t have enough manpower and time to find evidence to pull them out. And once the war ends even if the evidence is found the anger of civilians will be gone for long. Time heals pain so we have to take advantage of the chaos that was created as a result of outbreak of war! This is the perfect chance!”

“War? How we will lead?” Old Fulin frowned as he couldn’t understand.

Dudian slightly shook his head: “It’s a long story. In short everyone will act according to my instructions. Nicholas you must go to the workshop that you had previously rented. Speed up process of printing leaflets! Make sure that those leaflets are spread in commercial and residential districts! Don’t forget to put my image on the leaflets. Make sure it to be a tragic scene where I’m fighting against barbarians. Remember to add information about

me donating legendary level weapon to the military and write down about me becoming a master of the Temple. You should be aware of how to put these into proper words."

"I know, young master." Nicholas bowed in respect.

Dudian looked at Kroen: "After I join the battlefield begin to spread the news about Mellon consortium trying to frame me. Write some truth and mix some rumors. Add names of real locations, high-ranking officers and people from the Holy Church. But don't add real names. Make up characters like master Kroen or stuff like that! Do you understand?"

Kroen was startled.

Old Fulin and Nicholas were stunned too.

"I-I know." Kroen replied.

Dudian continued: "Everything has to be done in secret. Hire middle-men for these things and make sure that they are not traced back to us. Do everything according to the techniques I have taught you."

"I know, young master." Kroen said.

Dudian nodded and looked at Old Fulin: "Patriarch you help me out by contacting every consortia except Mellon. They should help us out by publishing news about us. Hint them that if the

performance will be good I'll remember their favor. However don't tell anything in my name."

"I know." Old Fulin nodded as he heard Dudian talk. He knew that Dudian had arranged every move in an orderly manner so he was relieved to see that Dudian had prepared to everything.

Dudian looked at Sander: "I'll trouble you to personally visit Mellon consortium in my name. Talk to them and see if they are willing to close down the previous problems. They have to withdraw and apologize for the previous slander. If there is a clarification then we can coexist in the future. But they have to pay a fee for my reputation loss. 1 million gold coins!"

"In addition, they must also give us a passage to the outside! Tell them that as long as they concur with these two conditions and remember to emphasize those ones then I as master Dean will swear in my name no longer to act against them and peacefully coexist together!

"Ah ..." Sander was stunned.

Old Fulin, Nicolas and Kroen were also shocked. Let bygones by bygones? Peaceful coexistence? They have been in contact with Dudian for a long time and they were aware that he wasn't such a good man!

"Do you remember what I told you?" Dudian frowned.

Sander recovered: “Yes, I do. But Mellon consortium… Will they really believe it? And, do you really don’t want revenge?

Dudian looked at him: “How can we attack if we don’t have an enemy?”

They suddenly understood Dudian’s purpose. However their faces changed as bursts of chill appeared in their hearts. They felt fortunate that this teenager was on their own side or they would have lots of sleepless nights.

“When are you going to start?” Old Fulin asked.

Dudian tapped his fingers on table as he whispered: “It’s too early right now. I’ll set off when the golden wall is captured by the barbarians.”

Old Fulin was surprised: “Do you think the barbarians will pass through the golden wall? Wouldn’t they rush into the commercial district? I’m afraid…”

“We will be fighting against Mellon in any case. But what’s the point of defeating barbarians at the golden wall? At best I’ll get some cheers from the public. But if it falls into the hands of barbarians then Mellon consortium will have no chance to make a comeback!” Dudian plainly replied.

Old Fulin reacted after a moment: “True, but if the barbarians take over the golden wall then there will be countless dead and

wounded. It would be way hard to repel them at that point!”

Chapter 377

Dudian looked at Old Fulin: “Patriarch it seems you are thinking to high of me.”

Old Fulin was confused.

“My appearance on the battlefield will be a show.” Dudian said: “All the civilians and nobles of the consortia think of me as a talented architect but nothing else. They may think that I can make excellent weapons but don’t think that I’m a mighty war general. Moreover, what kind of a role I can play in the war? In terms of personal strength I’m like a drop in the ocean!”

“So it’s pointless for me to enter the battlefield in the early period. As long as I join the battlefield towards the end I will win!”

Old Fulin was speechless.

Dudian continued: “I have never said that I’ll be fighting against the barbarians face to face and come up as a hero of the front line! Of course, if a physically weak architect did this then the effect will be different. But right now the civilians haven’t experienced enough pain. I want them to crush their teeth because of pain of loss. Their hearts have to be broken. Their anger has to be stimulated to the max. IF they don’t experience loss then how do you think I’ll use their anger to overthrow a consortia in the outer wall? If only a small number of people feel the pain of the war then the survivors will abandon those families. They will be excluded from the society. They will be powerless even if I wanted to use

them.”

“So the only answer is to let them experience ultimate pain. The desperation they feel have to drive them crazy and angry so that we can direct it.”

There was silence in the study room.

Old Fulin, Sander, Nicholas, Kroen and others looked at the indifferent expression on the teenagers face and listened to the words that came out of his mouth. The coldness spread through their body because of those words.

Old Fulin’s eyelids slightly shook. He looked at Dudian as he slowly said: “Will army be able to repel the barbarians by relying on your legendary military weapon? If not, I’m afraid…”

“Of course.”Dudian said in a tone full of confidence: “The weapon should be easily pierce through the armor and skins of the barbarians. However it will be hard to kill the monsters outside the giant wall relying on this steam rifle.”

In this era because of the monster intrusion outside the giant wall the cold weapons have advanced to the extreme as the smelting process was developed. But the purification of steel was lacking as the technology was insufficient to achieve that type of steel that Dudian wanted. So unless the armor was improved it wouldn’t be able to resist the bullets of the steam rifle. Otherwise when the rifles were introduced in the medieval Europe they wouldn’t be able to defeat the knights back then. The countries

well-equipped with cold weapons weren't able to stand in front of countries that used gunpowder technology. They were beaten and unable to parry with them. (I think it refers to Germany's accomplishments against Poland and other countries in the second world war)

Moreover his steam rifle's driving force was steam but no gunpowder. It was the earliest and most basic method used in the old era's firearm principles.

The firearms were invented in Song Dynasty in China. To be precise they were used by the Southern Song Dynasty. Although Tang dynasty was the first to introduce gunpowder to the military but they only made 'rockets.' (author note: gunpowder tied to the arrows). The firearms used by the Chinese had effective range of 100 meters and could easily pierce the armor of enemy.

But the mechanism used by the Dudian was able to generate kinetic energy due to steam and couldn't match the power of the gunpowder based rifles. That's why his steam rifles didn't have range and destruction power of the proper firearms.

But it was enough for Dodian.

He didn't want a real rifle or gun to appear in this chaotic wall.

After all he was in a high position and had too many enemies. He wouldn't be able to dodge every bullet if an enemy hid in the shadows and aimed at him.

However if he could reach the power that the Dragon girl had which was beyond the combat power of the senior hunter then even the firearms wouldn't be a threat to him.

Even though steam rifle couldn't be compared to the firearms but it would be able to break through the armor of the soldiers within the effective range of 50 meters. So using armor of hunters or general didn't mean that they couldn't be punctured.

Moreover the steam rifle had maximum range of 50 meters. He believed that he would be able to see through such a plot if someone tried to kill him. Even if the other person disguised very well but no-one was aware that he was able to see the heart and blood vessels of the others. He could roughly determine the hidden emotions of the others through the abnormal contradiction and speed of the heart. He had synesthesia which he could use to sense the sound that metal product emitted.

In addition, Dudian was fortunate about the deformity in the development. The Inferno family from the Dark Church had come up with gunpowder and the artillery was introduced into the military. IT was much faster than the introduction in the old era. After all, the gunpowder in its early days was used in alchemy in China and Tang dynasty introduced it to military at its last days. Afterwards it was passed to Southern Song dynasty. It took three hundred and fifty years for the firearm to be made after that gunpowder changed hands. If compared to the invention of gunpowder and artillery within the giant wall then that time leap is too long.

However it was not surprising as Dudian had learned history of

this development from the super chip. The reason the firearms were introduced was the frequent wars that happened at the borders of the Southern Song dynasty. The war was the most effective way which was a catalyst to the development of the new weapons.

The conclusion is that the development of advanced weapons was closely related to the environment.

This is the reason why the medieval society collapsed in the West after the introduction of the gunpowder.

It was likely the current situation within the giant wall. However the repeated harassment at the border by the barbarians played a minor role. A total of two or three times a large scale war had happened. As a result it gave birth to the artillery.

But after the emergence of the artillery the development halted. The firearms, missiles and other things weren't invented. The main reason is that the gunpowder was a taboo!

Artillery itself was a taboo weapon and wouldn't be used in ordinary small-scale wars. They wouldn't even leave a cannon at the top of the fortress. It was a proof of how afraid they were of this thing!

Who would dare to develop something which was taboo? In the old era the scientists dared to experiment on this that were contrary to the rules of the country. But it was different in the old days. The scientists could escape from one country and relocate to

the another. But where could you flee within the giant wall?

Moreover the Dark Church also didn't dare to study it and banned gunpowder!

Old Fulin was relieved and assured as he looked at Dudian's confidence. However he was not feeling good in his heart. Although he didn't care about the civilians but the thought of such a slaughter made his heart uncomfortable and guilty. He knew that those feelings were useless and from the rational point of view Dudian was right. But extreme rationality brought cold bloodedness...

"I'll go and contact consortia." Old Fulin sighed and got up.

Dudian nodded: "It's hard on you."

Old Fulin wanted to lift his palm and pat Dudian's shoulder but he changed his mind. He used the crutches to slowly leave the room.

Chapter 378

Mel family.

The retired old patriarch of the family George Mel was sitting in a chair. There was a gloomy expression on his face. Two figures stood up in front of him. One of his son Mark who was known as a genius businessman in the aristocratic circles. The second one was Sarah who recently was recognized as an exceptional talent. Both of them had ugly faces.

“Tomorrow morning all the nobles, knights and civilians will know that this kid has become the youngest master in the history of the Temple. He will be untouchable!” The wrinkled old face of George was as frosty as an ice block. His brows were like sharp swords. He was angrily looking at the slender figure of Sarah. She was his most proud granddaughter. But right now he felt disappointment and anger.

“Temporarily block the news that we got from Master Thomas. The members of the consortium can’t know about it right now.” George stared at Sarah: “This is something that you controlled from the beginning. It was your first job! You were using all the resources and contacts of the consortium but failed! The kid was someone without a background! Now he has the status of an untouchable and we won’t be able to cope with him!”

Sarah bit her lower lip and her fingers clenched onto her skirt. She suppressed the anger in her heart: “Grandpa, everything was according to the plan. I didn’t expect him to be so capable. He produced a legendary item after short time of proposing the

concept of ‘lightning rod’. No one could predict that, I also… ”

George smashed his palm onto the table in anger: “What did you do? Couldn’t you just kill him before he could resist? Didn’t I teach you that you can’t be soft with the enemy? You mustn’t even tease an enemy! Even a wounded dog will try to bite at you if its anxious. Even if it can’t hurt you it will dirty your clothes. Such a simple rule! Why did you forget it?!”

“Moreover he was outside the giant wall for seven or eight days! He had cut off all the contact with the wall. How couldn’t you kill him? He was wanted by almost every power… How did he dare to show up? How was he able to submit an invention?”

Sarah was startled: “Grandpa, I know I’m wrong. I will be responsible for this matter!”

“Responsible?” George heard the biggest joke of his lifetime but couldn’t laugh. He said in a cold tone: “What will you do? You won’t be able to deal with him even if he was an ordinary master! Not to mention he is the youngest master in the history of the Temple! The possibilities are infinite! He has come up with a new concept which has opened a new faction. If the new concept proves itself…Do you know what kind of a person he will become? He could destroy Mellon consortium just like pinching a mosquito. It will be as simple as that! His single word can make all the nobles and civilians to target us! They will cut all the trade with us. Do you even understand the magnitude of the problem?”

Sarah was pale. She realized that the situation what much more complex that she had thought. She was full of remorse. Actually,

she was looking forward to see the boy with the helpless look in front of her. But now it seems that her expectations were nothing but a joke.

“Father.” Mark said: “Blaming Sarah at this point won’t resolve anything. The kid has just become a master and his status isn’t stable. He doesn’t have time to establish network. As long as he goes to the front line then we can assassinate him. We can use the chaos of the war. As long as he is dead then there won’t be anything to talk about.”

George looked at him: “Now that’s the only option. But you have to be successful. The failure is not allowed. Otherwise our losses will be immeasurable. Don’t forget that there are other five tigers who are staring at us!”

“I will. I will make sure that ‘shadows’ obliterate the military escort. They would kill him when he is not prepared. He is just an intermediate hunter. Although he has the magic marks of a juranzhi but his combat power isn’t sufficient. The ‘shadows’ will be able to kill him as easy as slicing a vegetable. ” Mark replied.

George nodded and looked at Sarah “Go back and reflect on your mistakes! ”

Sarah clenched her fists and bowed: “Yes, grandfather.”

“Leave.” George said.

Sarah left the room.

George looked at Mark after she left: “I heard they came to negotiate? Did they really want us to pay 1 million gold coins and cede a passage? They want to destroy us with our own money! It is a joke! This old fox has become more cunning after leaving our consortium.”

Mark slowly said: “Father it was just a discussion. Maybe we should send them the money. They won’t be a threat to us with just that. But if we can make a treaty then maybe they will believe in our ‘sincerity’. It may be helpful towards the assassination. After the little devil dies it will be easy to deal with the old fox!”

George nodded: “True, but its going to be a little bit hard to manage that.”

“Yes.”

…

Dudian called Neuss after Old Fulin and other left. He told him to refuse anyone who comes for a visit.

It was as he had expected. After the afternoon one consortia after another send messengers to visit him. Some nobles families and knight families came with gifts to congratulate him too.

Dudian looked through the window from the second floor and

saw the endless stream of visitors. He covered the window with curtain and continued to study.

The next day.

Dudian checked the morning newspapers. The news about Dudian becoming a master and donating a legendary military weapon was publicized. Moreover the news of the new concept almost covered the layout of the newspapers. Even the military newspaper reported about him donating the ‘steam rifle’ to the military for free of charge.

However the military newspaper didn’t clarify anything about the previous barbarian confessions. Apparently it would appear to be too fake at the moment.

Dudian was very satisfied.

The Temple’s newspaper had exaggerated everything in comparison to the other newspapers. Almost all the news were about Dudian. Him becoming a master, donating weapons, steam energy analysis etc... There were interviews with other masters talking about advantages and disadvantages of the kinetic energy. Moreover the information about the use of steam rifles in the war was mentioned too.

Dudian smiled. He estimated that the Temple had ‘exploded’ at the moment. Most people who were at bottlenecks would try to seek new breakthroughs throw this new concept.

Dudian looked at the newspapers under the wings of other consortia. The information about him was reported in newspapers of all six consortia. Even the Mellon consortium reported about him. They didn't try to slander him anymore and they reported as if nothing has happened between them.

Dudian gently smiled: "It seems Old Fulin's is too good at dealing with things but unfortunately its too late." However the next moment he frowned. He felt a trace of danger as if something was wrong.

Chapter 379

The same morning. Scott consortium HQ.

Everyone was fiercely arguing in the conference hall.

Chai Rostov frowned. He raised his hand and smashed on the table: “Please, be quiet!” The heated discussion quietened in a matter of seconds.

Everyone looked at him.

Chai said in a cold tone: “IT has passed and there is no point in accusing each other. If I’m not mistaken then Rosie had come back then and told us to acquire master Dean’s new invention at the price of a legendary level item. No one who is sitting right here gave consent! What’s the point of regretting it now?”

Everyone had a complex expression on their faces as they heard his words.

Rosie who was sitting next to Chai sighed. Back then when she had heard the words from the teenager’s mouth she had mentioned it in the council symbolically and didn’t insist on acquiring the invention. Perhaps if she was a bit more fierce back then right now Scott consortium’s, Chai’s and her personal assets would have sky rocketed. The opportunity was placed in front of her but she didn’t....

“Hey! We could have bought a new concept(system) for a price of a legendary item if we had a bit of courage. We didn’t dare to exchange a grain of sand for a mountain of gold…” An old aristocrat wryly smiled as he shook his head.

Another person added: “At the beginning we also laughed at master Dean and said that he was arrogant. It seems that we were too prideful and arrogant.”

Chai shook his head as he looked at everyone. He sighed but he never thought about things he had lost. He said: “This matter is irreversible. The current task is to have good relationship with master Dean. Additionally the military has sent news to all the consortia yesterday. There is an unprecedented large orders by the military for acquisition of steel materials! Our Scott consortium’s main industry is mining and our natural resources are ten times more than all the other consortia together.”

“IF we want to make money then we have to start with the opportunity in front of us. We have to find the reserve price of the other consortia as soon as possible. Then we will set our price a bit expensive than teirs and grab all the orders.”

Everyone heard the cold words coming out of Chai’s mouth. However few people sighed in regret as they heard Chair’s words.

…

The magistrate.

The judges and apprentices were moving around the office. They would hand a number of documents and materials to the others. All of them were wearing the uniform's of the magistrate. It was white snow in color with golden lustrous pattern embroidered on them. The cuffs were dark red.

"Wow! The youngest master in the history of the Temple!"

"Geez! Check it out. Its written that he is only sixteen years old and has produced two legendary products. Double! There aren't many architects in the Temple who have produced a legendary product let alone two of them. It seems the only two are master Skagen and master Marie!"

"So he is the third master with the two legendary inventions. Before it was written that he is a traitor and colluded with the barbarians. I felt very strange about that. Why would a dignified senior architect work with barbarians? He has even donated a legendary item. I just can't believe it!"

"We are members of the magistrate! Without any evidence any representation is false and can't be used as an evidence much less as a reference. "

"What do you mean? Do you still suspect that he had colluded with the barbarians?"

"I didn't say so. I don't agree with him doing something like that. However I think evidence is the truth! I only believe in evidence!"

“Well, stop being a fool then.”

3 or 5 apprentice judges were chatting in the office as they checked the newspaper.

A slender figure sat by her desk in the corner. She quietly looked at the newspaper in her hands. There was a small on her face. She quietly whispered: “I knew that you won’t do such a thing! You are not such a person! You are yearning for peace while everyone is trying to blame you…”

There was a trace of sadness in her face: “I was wrong about you …”

She slowly turned over the page of the newspaper. Suddenly her eyes caught onto a piece of news. Her face turned pale: “… personally to the battlefield…”

…

Rain was pouring down.

On the golden wall.

General Auburn looked at the dark clouds covering the sky. He was tired and his face was pale. It had been several days that he hadn’t rested and commanded the battlefield. The clouds enveloping the sky over his head seemed like the death hovering over their heads. His heart would tighten up any time when a

raindrop fell because it was the signal for another battle.

"Tell all the soldiers to muster all their strength! We have to hold the wall!" General Auburn's fingers clung to the edge of the wall: "If we fail the people will die! We don't have a way back! Only forward! Only war!"

"Yes!" Adjutant Junlang left.

The rain gradually intensified. The barbarians army was stationed about a dozen miles away from the golden wall in the plains. They were like tides of sea that marched towards the golden wall and seemed to be about to sweep it away.

General Auburn took a deep breath as cold hair flowed into his lungs. His blood was boiling as he pulled out his sword and shouted: "Arrows!"

Whoosh!

The arrows covered the air like a black curtain as they sped out. They fall onto the barbarians army that was rushing towards the golden wall. The arrows penetrated their bodies and resulted in numerous casualties.

However there was barbarians who held onto shields that successfully block the arrows. They kept marching towards the golden wall.

Below the wall stood more than hundred figures. All of them were wearing uniforms that were very different from the armor of soldiers. They were hunters. Their weapons was different from the usual military weapons. Some held onto whips, some to swords, some to spears and there were a few which used hammers.

There was blood all over Sergei's face. His hair was scattered all over his head. He held onto his long spear as he eyes stared at the barbarians which rushed towards the wall.

Gwyneth held onto the swords in silence.

"Are you ready?" Sergei looked back at her.

Gwyneth slowly nodded: "Yes."

Roar!

Roar!

Boulders were thrown from the golden wall towards the oncoming barbarians. Some of them were stumped to death while the rest was lucky to escape alive. The successfully ran towards the golden wall.

Kill!

Hundreds of hunters roared in unison as they pulled out their

weapons and rushed at barbarians.

...

In the castle.

Dudian was leaning against the bed while a thick quilt covered his body. He held onto the card reader and learn information from the screen. Once in a while he would listen to rhythm of the rain. He was feeling a bit cold so he asked the maid to give him another quilt.

“Why do I feel so cold?” Dudian frowned. He didn’t have any answers to his question so he continued to immerse in the huge knowledge from the chip.

Knock~~

The door was knocked.

Dudian looked up and saw the heat emitted by a human body through the wooden door: “What has happened?”

Neuss saw that Dudian didn’t let him enter so he spoke from the outside: “Master the members of the military have come to ask for you. They said that you should prepare to go out to the battlefield. They are ready!”

Chapter 380

“So fast?” Dudian slightly frowned. He put away the chip and card reader at the back of the small dark cabinet. Dudian put on a coat and opened the door. Dudian saw Neuss waiting by the door: “I’m feeling sick today. Help me get there.”

“Are you uncomfortable?” Neuss was shocked as he said in a hurry: “Master, if you feel unwell I’ll immediately call the doctor…”

Dudian winked at him and raised his arm.

Neuss suddenly came to understand what Dudian meant and caught his arm to help him. However there were doubts in his heart.

Dudian felt a strange smell as he went down the stairs. He saw an officer sitting in the living room and waiting for him. He had three silver medals on his shoulder and seemed to be around forty years old.

The man heard the movements on the stairs and looked up to see Dudian who was helped by Neuss. He rose form his chair: “Greetings master Dean.”

Dudian gentle coughed: “Hello. Are you responsible for my protection?”

“I’m the captain of the escort team. My task it to protect you safety and I hope that you will cooperate with us and don’t make any dangerous moves.” The man replied.

Dudian sat down on chair next to him and motion him to sit: “How many people in the team?”

Reid replied: “We have 20 people in the team. Master Dean please rest assured that all those are the elite of the elite and top talents in their areas. They would be able to block hundreds of people and can protect your life.”

Dudian nodded: “Did they come too?”

Reid shook his head: “They are waiting for us. I’m here to pick you up.”

Dudian lightly coughed: “My body feels a bit uncomfortable since yesterday. I think its because of the continuous rains. Perhaps I have caught a cold. Is it possible that we go to the battlefield after my body feels a bit better?”

Reid nodded. He has long been aware that Dudian’s body seemed to be in poor health. He said: “Of course! Master Dean should stay at home and rest. Do you need doctor? I can call one from the military.”

“No need.” Dudian replied: “I should be able to recover soon. There is war going on and the doctors are very valuable to the

military. Let them take care of the wounded soldiers in the front line. They are the ones who needs to be taken care of."

There was a trace of respect in Reid's eyes: "Master Dean is same as in the rumors. You are kind! Don't worry and notify us whenever you are ready to leave. But I personally think that Master Dean shouldn't be involved in war in the battlefield. It's too dangerous. Although we can protect you but a little slip won't just result as a loss to the Temple but to all of us!"

Dudian lightly coughed: "You are too kind!"

"It's nothing." Reid shook his head.

Dudian commanded a servant to send off Reid after a moment. Afterwards he went to upstairs and told to Neuss: "Make sure that informants stations at the front line transmit the informtion frequently. We must be the first ones to grasp the news in case the golden wall falls."

"Yes."

Another day passed.

The headlines of the morning newspapers were all about situation in the golden wall. The golden wall was dilapidated and crumbling. The barbarians were able to break through from 6 locations but were surrounded by the soldiers. However the situation was not optimistic.

There were news about Dudian's new concept. Additionally there were information that introduced steam rifles and their production process.

Legendary level weapon.

This introduction caused high expectation from countless civilians and nobles. Especially in this tense war there was a need for such a weapon that could shift the tide.

In addition, there were news about establishment of the second line of defense by the Red River. It was reported that few generals died while preparing the defense line.

Dudian went back to the bed after reading the morning news. He was reading a book related to the history of the giant wall of the Silvia. He could sense the sounds of conversation spoken by the servants. From time to time he would hear shouts coming off from the entrance of the castle. He leaned from the bedside window to look at the gate where a large group of people stood by. Most of them were civilians while there were few nobles.

They were cheering and encouraging him in comparison to the previous curses.

Since the publication of the news the people who had come to curse at him had left and disappeared. But instead a large number of people had come over to cheer him on. The servants were surprised and felt happy because of such a change.

Dudian wasn't surprised but felt disturbed. His reading was affected by their shouts.

Dudian got a letter from Neuss at ten o'clock in the morning.

It was information that was sent from the front line. Dudian check it as his eyes narrowed. He said to Neuss: "Notify military that I want to join the battle."

Neuss's face slightly changed. Previously Dudian had told him that he would set off the moment golden wall collapses. Obviously the military couldn't hold onto the golden wall because of attacks by the barbarians in the rainy weather!

"Yes!" Neuss turned and left.

Dudian skimmed through the secret report. He looked up as his brows slightly wrinkled. Dudian whispered: "Both of you... Don't let me down..." He took out a match from the drawer of the desk by his bed. He lit and burned the secret report and made sure that ashes were left. He took of the quilt and went out of the bed. He put on the silver armor that he had prepared in advance. There was a sword on his waist and his bow and arrows were in his shoulders. He checked himself once more as he stood in front of the mirror.

He had handsome facial features. His posture was straight and he looked full of vigor just like a good knight.

Dudian was quite satisfied with his appearance as he held onto the helmet and opened the door. The endless sounds of clanking metal echoed as he moved down the stairs.

Servants were surprised to see him wearing such a armor. Some of the young girl maids blushed but didn't dare to look at his eyes.

"Master Dean. Are you setting off??"Jake almost stumbled as he went towards Dudian.

Dudian nodded slightly and patted his shoulder: "Old patriarch will be in your care."

"Yes, yes." Jake replied. Dudian was full of majesty in his eyes after he had become a master.

Dudian nodded as he called the servant to bring his raincoat. He put it over his armor like a cloak.

"Master, your carriage is ready." A maid reported.

Dudian said: "I'm going to war! I don't need a carriage but a fierce horse!"

"Yes, young master." The maid replied and left in hurry.

Chapter 381

“Master, the letter was cent. I think in about quarter an hour they will be here to escort you.” Neuss came back.

Dudian nodded: “What about the civilians that you have hired?”

“They are in the designed locations in front waiting for you.” Neuss replied.

Dudian nodded as he looked out at rain. This rainy season seems to be the longest that he had seen.

Reid came with an armed team towards the castle. The crowd let them pass. Although they loved Dudian because of his voluntary donation and personal involvement in war but in face of the military they didn’t dare to be a bit of disrespectful.

Reid saw Dudian waiting in front of the hall. He dismounted and approached him: “Greetings Master Dean.”

Dudian nodded: “Let’s go.”

Reid’s face was a bit ugly: “Master Dean you are not aware but we just got the message that…the golden wall was occupied by the barbarians. General Auburn was able to retreat back to the second line of the defense by the Red River and decided to continue the fight over there! ”

Dudian had a shocked expression on his face: “The golden wall has fallen?”

“Yes.” Reid bowed.

There was a complex expression on Dudian’s face. It seemed that he was determined to make a move: “If that’s the case then I must go forward! Now there is a need for manpower because of the military’s continues battles under the rain. I think many soldiers have fell ill and there is a lack of troops. Knights like me are needed in the battlefield rather than ordinary people. Don’t underestimate my strength as I’m powerful at least on par with dozens of civilians!”

There was a sense of shame on Reid’s face. He clenched his teeth: “Master Dean I’m not looking down on your strength but the battlefield is too dangerous. Please, stay at home and rest!” ”

Dudian looked at him: “I must set out! Is your commitment so easy to change?”

Reid’s face slightly turned red: “Master Dean you have misunderstood me. I am just advising you not blocking your way. I’m trying to persuade… ”

“No need for persuasion! In times of crisis what else I can do but go to front line? ” Dudian waved his hand and went towards the horse prepared by the servants: “Alright!”

Reid didn’t think that Dudian would be so decisive. He sighed and looked at Dudian: “Master Dean at least use one of our horses. The horse used by you isn’t meant for the battlefield. It will get scared and disturbed if it faces a barbarians or a mutated beast.”

Dudian jumped of his horse and approached Reid.

Reid was relieved to see Dudian following their recommendation. He showed an army trained horse to Dudian: “Master, please be a bit careful as the horse is fierce.”

Dudian smiled and grabbed the rope.

The horse was dark. It’s body was covered with steel armor. It was about three meters high and was the same species of horses used by the hunters.

The horse was led by Dudian. It neighed and tried to pull back its rope to leave.

Reid was about to help him suppress the horse when Dudian pulled rope and jumped over to sit on dark horse.

Neigh~~

The horse almost stood up on its back limbs. It seems the horse was anxious about Dudian.

Dudian smiled and put his hand behind its neck. He gentle pressed.

Bang!

The horse sank down and its front legs went soft. It almost knelt down. It cried out but no longer rebelled.

Reid was surprised by the strength shown by Dudian. He turned to mount on his own horse and looked at Dudian: “Master, shall we go?”

“Yeah.” Dudian said and pulled the horse’s rope. They began to move down the river.

The crowd gathered by the river began to shout loud cheers and applauded them as they saw Dudian’s figure.

Dudian smiled as they slowly went by the river bank. They increased their speed to pass the crowd.

Reid and Dudian ride side by side while another twenty soldiers rode behind them.

Dudian took the time to check the elite soldiers that were chosen to defend him. Their had excellent weapons and good armors.

“Swordsmen, archers, knights ... ” Dudian’s eyes swept over

them. However his eyes paused for a little on one of them. But soon he moved to check the others. The previous swordsman's body emitted heat which was higher than the others. The man's heart beat was calm and the because of the frequency of the heart beat he could identify that there was a strong blood flow through his body. Moreover the blood contained strong energy.

Additionally, the muscles were much denser in comparison to the others. His neck, waist, face and other muscles were extraordinary.

Dudian had only seen such a body structure in Sergei, Gwyneth as well as Reid who was wearing a uniform of an ordinary swordsman. It meant that both Reid and the other man weren't inferior to a senior hunter!

"Are they here for protection?" Dudian frowned as there were doubts in his mind. Although there were many possibilities, including the military sending a man to secretly assassinate himself but these ideas were overturned by himself. After all, if he was assassinated the military couldn't bear the responsibility.

He couldn't come to any conclusion but Dudian's didn't directly ask Reid about his suspicions. However he decided to put a certain distance and secretly pay attention to this person.

They passed through the streets. There were about fifty or sixty figures dressed in raincoats and holding umbrellas.

These people began to cheer Dudian's name as they passed by them. (t/n: It's the people hired by Neuss)

Reid frowned as he was on alert. There could be people form the dark church hidden inside such groups who would love to attack Dudian.

The team moved in a straight line. The loud cheers of Dudian's name attracted the attention of the residents. People opened the windows and doors of their houses to look up. Some of them passionately cheered.

Dudian smiled as he rode the horse. It was a show and he had to play his role perfectly to have the biggest effect. The heroes were the ones whose names were known to only their friends and relatives after their death in battlefield. This was not his aim!

"Master is really loved by everyone." Reid listened to constant cheering and said to Dudian in a tone full of admiration.

Dudian smiled: "You will be treated kindly if you treat the others with kindness. It's the truth, isn't it?"

"Yes, master." Reid agreed.

Dudian and the escorting team came out of the bustling area of the commercial district and went into the suburbs. The Reid's face turned serious as he ordered the team to surround Dudian. They were in a diamond formation.

Dudian noticed the previous swordsman stand next to him after

the form was changed.

From time to time he checked the swordsman on his left.

The team came to the plains near the Red River. Dudian suddenly stopped and the team also responded quickly and stopped. All of them were looked at Dudian.

“Do you want to take me to the second line of defense by the Red River? As far as I know there is only a preliminary barrier there. If the barbarians choose to attack commercial district they may take a detour from the snowy north or swamps of the south. Wouldn’t it be too late to block their attacks?”

Reid was startled: “Master, those two places have soldiers stationed. If barbarians are seen then the additional troops will be send. The safest place is the Red River and the barbarians won’t attack this place at the moment.”

“The safest?” Dudian deliberately showed angry expression on his face: “Are you just looking down on me? I’m here not to be protected by you but to kill the enemy! Are you cowards? Are you so afraid of the death?”

Reid’s face turned ugly. He clenched the ropes as he angrily looked at Dudian. But he didn’t dare to refute.

“Master, all of us are warriors which have been through countless battlefields and gained numerous meritorious deeds! I

hope you will stop insulting us!" Reid continued: "It's a command from the top to take you to Red River. I can understand your mood. All of us are anxious to personally kill the enemies but orders are orders in the military. I hope you will understand us!"

Dudian frowned as he felt to be tricked. Although military agreed him entering the battlefield but were worried that an accident will happen to him. Military doesn't want to bear the responsibility so they have used this team for his protection. However in reality they had imprisoned him.

But he wasn't just for show on the battlefield. If he couldn't get any deeds then he would be counterattack by the Mellon consortium.

Chapter 382

Dudian looked around. His eyes fell on Reid's body and he slowly said: "Colonel you have orders from the top brass and I won't insist for you to go to battlefield. I understand that its your duty to abide the orders but its not my responsibility to do so. Please don't forget that you have no right to limit my freedom. You may see me as a weak architect but I'm a knight!"

"Although formally I'm not a knight yet but I have passed the written test and inherited the spirit of the knighthood! Why do you think I donated a legendary level weapon to the military? What do you think the purpose was? It was to save costs and make sure that the money would be used to the other things. I want to see the blood flown from the soldiers decrease! I want to see less dead people!"

"One more soldier dead means another family broken!"

"I believe that all of you are aware that as a knight I should follow the spirit of the knighthood! I must fight for glory, for protection of the weak, for the justice, for the well-being of everyone!"

"This is what I think a knight should do! These are my criteria!"

Dudian's eyes lit up as he spoke in a righteous tone: "Now, do you want a knight to cowardly hide while a brutal attack is happening? Do you want me to watch fellow soldiers die why I watch from behind the line of defense in a secure place?"

Dudian took a deep breath and spoke in a forceful tone: “I respect that you follow and observe the military orders! But I am a knight! Even though I haven’t been knighted yet but I carry the identity! I might as well let you kill me now instead of looking at my brothers die in the defense line! Such a life is a blasphemy and too humiliating!”

Reid and others faces slightly changed. They were moved as they heard Dudian’s words. Their blood was boiling as their eyes became red. The elite soldiers clenched onto their weapons as they bit their lips.

Reid looked at sad expression on Dudian’s face. His heart was shaken and he felt his ears hot. A flame burst out of his chest. Reid took a deep breath and bowed: “Mr Dean…I’m sorry…”

Dudian’s heart sank and his face became gloomy when he heard the word ‘sorry’. He didn’t think that they would be indifferent after his affectionate speech. He felt a bit anger as he looked at them: “I admire the irrevocable resolution that you have…I admire it… However the military can order you but don’t have the right to command me around!”

Reid said: “Master, please don’t make things difficult for us.”

Dudian indifferently replied: “Its not me but you who is make the things difficult. We have been losing time in here while we should be killing barbarians in the battlefield. Each dead barbarian is equivalent to saving one soldier and a family! I have no idea what

you think but I can't stand sitting here idle! I will be having nightmares in the future for the cries of the families who had lost their sons in the war... "

Reid's face turned ugly as he clenched his fists. But the military order couldn't be breached. Those orders had long been engraved into his bone marrows. He had become a colonel because of following the rules of the military.

Dudian pulled out a map from the backpack. He spread it on the back of the horse. He looked at circles which he had marked in advance. He looked at Reid: "Colonel you may go to Red River's defense line but I want to go to Scarlett Valley!"

"Scarlett Valley?" Reid was perplexed.

"The barbarians are bound to rush in a straight line after breaking through the golden wall. They will arrive at Red River but its very difficult to pass it. So they will change directions to other places. The Scarlett Valley is in front of the swamps in the south. The scouts send by the barbarians will have to pass through the Scarlett Valley." Dudian slowly said:" Scarlett Canyon is very steep and its very hard to climb. But its width is about six or seven meters and can accommodate about a squad of troops. I will stay there to fight with them."

Reid was stunned. He looked at another young archer: "Jessie give me the map."

The young archer removed his backpack, pulled out map and

handed it out to Reid.

Reid looked at the map and quickly found the place. He checked the position of the Scarlett Valley. There was a trace of surprise in his face as he looked at Dudian: “Master, how did you find this place? It has great geographical advantage!”

Dudian had a puzzled expression on his face. But he snorted in his heart. In the last few days he didn’t even remember the number of times he had checked the map. He had prepared for long enough for many situations.

Reid saw the puzzled expression on Dudian’s face: “Master this Scarlett Valley has a lake on one side while a forest on the other. There are many variations of lizards, snakes and other jungle beasts in the forest while there are aquatic monsters in the lake. Even elite troops will face heavy casualties if they want to safely pass through the forest. The safest way seems to be the Scarlett Canyon. But it doesn’t mean hat the Scarlett Valley is safe. There are snakes, rock beasts and other stone monsters. If we can ambush and throw rocks at them from above the canyon we can annihilate them easily!”

“There is no way to protect themselves there but most would choose the Scarlett Canyon for its quickness.”

Dudian replied: “It seems that I have chosen a good path. I’ll go now.” He pulled the ropes of horse as he began to move.

Reid said in a hurry: “Master please slow down. Our mission was

to escort you to the Red River. But since you insist of going to Scarlett Valley… Is it alright if we follow you?”

“Yes.” Dudian’s lips slightly curved up. In fact, he knew that Reid and others wouldn’t abandon him in any situation. The reason why he choose to go to Scarlett Valley was that at best there would be small-scale operations over there. If he went alone and killed barbarians then he wouldn’t have anyone to testify for him.

Moreover it was impossible to have a large scare war in this terrain. His attitude was hard since the beginning to sway Reid and others to follow him.

“Captain, aren’t we …” A swordsman looked at Reid to try to change his mind.

Dudian frowned. He turned around and looked at the man as he loudly said: “Gentlemen! Are you willing to put aside the military orders and kill the enemy with me? If you are then raise your hands! Don’t forget I said that despite the military orders!”

Everyone raised their hands.

“Let’s go then!” Dudian lightly said.

Reid smiled. Dudian was definitely the most wonderful master he had seen… Moreover he was the most bravest master! He licked his lips and looked at the crowd: “There won’t be any large-scale combat even if we encounter barbarians within the canyon. Do

your best to protect the master! I'll be the one accountable for everything!"

The others looked at each other. One of the who was holding on a spear spoke in a harsh tone: "Captain I'm willing to bear the guilt with you in case of the investigation!"

"I am also willing!"

"Me too!"

"Me too!"

Everyone loudly shouted.

Reid's heart warmed as he saw the serious express on the faces of his people: "IN that case lets go and kill some barbarians!"

"Alright!"

"Kill!"

Chapter 383

The sky had darkened by the time Dudian, Reid and others came to the Scarlett Valley. The dark clouds hovering in the sky had faded a lot in comparison to the previous few days.

Dudian looked at the steep canyon as he stood at the mouth of the gorge. It seemed like the canyon was a tall mountain that was cut into two by a sharp weapon. There was a cracked narrow gap that could be used to pass through. Some places were big enough for four-five people to pass by together while some places were so rugged small that two people couldn't pass by. The canyon was very rugged and steep. It would be very difficult to climb over.

"The barbarians should not be here by this time. Nevertheless we should still be careful and guard against an enemy from the top." Reid reminded the others.

"Yes." The team replied.

Dudian and Reid rode side by side while four people were in front of them. They were responsible for opening the road.

The place was silent. After few minutes the group came to stop at the other side of the canyon. There was a forest and faint sounds of gurgling water echoed from inside. According to the map the swamp was behind the forest. It was a habitat for fierce monsters.

"Master, it's late, we should camp and rest." Reid said.

Dudian nodded as he looked through the edge of canyon to inside. Although the weather was dark but it didn't hinder his vision. He reached out and touched the uneven rock wall. It seems rough but he felt that it was fluffy sandstone after touching it. It would be very easily to fall down in case someone grabbed one of these while climbing up. Therefore climbing up was going to be very difficult and enemies would come through the canyon's gap.

The military didn't put much of an attention to this area because both sides of the canyon were protected by natural forest and swamp. It would be very hard for an army to pass through from either side.

However the barbarians weren't aware of the terrain and geography of this place. So it was likely that scouts would come over for exploration!

Additionally in case the barbarians had worked together with forces within the wall and held onto the map... They would still come over the inquire about the situation. Not having a guard in here was enough for them to send scouts.

"Master, do you want to drink?" Reid handed out a water bag to Dudian.

Dudian slightly shook his head as he took out a metal tube from his backpack. It was the waterproof insulation cup that he had smelted: "I've brought water."

“Master have really thought about details.” Reid took back his water bag: “We has rushed out all afternoon. Are you hungry? ”

Dudian looked at the camp. The twenty people were sitting around several bonfires. All of the were close to the rocky wall and the fire was blocks and couldn’t be seen from the other side of the canyon. They barbecued animals that he had never seen.

Dudian nodded as he came to sit by Reid.

“Master, please.” A blonde youth smiled and offered a smoke meat in a polite manner: “My name is Alan from the Mali family. Our family is known for its fruits. Master, if you would like to please it this one. If you want this later on please look for me and I can get them for you anytime and anywhere.”

Dudian smiled: “Thanks but I have brought dry food with me. If you have opportunity in the future please send a few packets for me.” Then Dudian took out dry food from his backpack. All of them were small biscuits. He had especially made those. These biscuits were much more better than the dry food carried by the hunters. Moreover they were smaller in size.

“It seems master have been preparing for a long war!” There was a trace of admiration on Reid’s face.

Alan looked at the biscuits in Dudian’s hands. He asked because of curiosity: “Master, is that bread? It looks hard. Where did you buy them?”

“I made it myself.” Dudian didn’t continue to talk as he chewed the biscuit. The taste was unpleasant but after finishing one the hungry feeling in his stomach eased a lot.

He ate three and tied the bag.

He could see the every single burst of flame as he looked at the fire.

“The heat exuded by the fire covers up almost all of it. If I could freely control my eyes…” Dudian rubbed his eyes and looked once more. He couldn’t help but sigh.

Alan retreated back when he saw Dudian wasn’t interested in his food.

Reid ate barbecue while Jessie took out the map and checked once more. He looked at Dudian: “Master if they come in straight line after breaking through the golden wall it would take them about four hours to reach Red River. However they will be delayed as they can’t directly push through after the collapse of the golden wall. They have to rest too. So at best they will send scouts for exploration.”

“I think they won’t have big teams but I have heard about ‘madmen’ that these barbarians have. They can burst out amazing strength and we have to be careful of those red barbarians.”

Dudian nodded slightly as he looked at the fire.

“Both of you make sure to protect the master in case of a battle. The safety of the master will be your responsibility. The rest would be enough to kill the enemy! ”

“Yes.” Jessie nodded.

Alan laughed: “Captain is it possible that the barbarians will go to second line of defense instead of coming here? ”

“It’s always good have be in guard. ”

Night time...

About half an hour later a figure flew out from the canyon. Reid and others were surprised as they recognized the person’s appearance. They stood up.

“Captain, a barbarian came!”

Reid immediately said: “Extinguish the fire! Ready to meet the enemy. Three squads to attack! Both of you stay here to protect the master!”

All twenty of them quickly acted in silence. It took seconds to extinguish the burning bonfire. They had already prepared sand in advance.

They grouped into three squads of six men and surrounded Dudian in a circle. Fourteen people were standing by both sides of the canyon as they held onto their breath and silently observed the canyon.

Chapter 384

Ta Ta Ta!

The echoes of footsteps sounded from the dark gorge. After a moment several barbarians mounted on top of strange beasts appeared in their lines of sights. These people were brawny and were about two meters tall. All of them were muscular and their bodies were wrapped in armor.

“Kill!”

A cold light flashed through Reid’s eyes. He held onto his large sword as he whirled it and attacked.

The leading barbarians almost jumped out in fright as he saw Reid and others. He wanted to stop the mount but the horse was riding at high speed. It halted the movement in hurry and the horse’s soft abdomen was exposed as Reid’s sword reached it and cut it off. The blood sputtered as the horse rolled back down.

Whoosh!

Several arrows rapidly shot back and pierced through the chest of the barbarian. He was crucified to the ground.

The swordsmen and knights were far behind and rapidly rushed at the other barbarians. They acted quick and had tacit understanding of each other. The other barbarians were killed as

result of a swift attack.

“Keep one alive!” Reid pulled out his sword from the belly of the horse and shouted.

About seven or eight barbarians were killed in a matter of few minutes. Only one was kept alive but there was an arrow on his chest. It was a non-fatal attack.

The first fight was over. They moved the corpses of barbarians and mounts. Afterwards they thoroughly cleaned the area so that the latter barbarians wouldn’t be aware of the situation. Reid brought the barbarian and stood before Dudian: “Master we kept one alive to interrogate him later on. There is a division in the military that studies the barbarian language.”

Dudian slightly shook his head as he looked at the barbarian: “This is the start. They should be the pioneer spies. The other groups will be sent after these ones don’t go back. We have to kill all of them so that they think that there is a large group protecting this part of the canyon. They would not rely on this path in that case. They will focus on the swamp to pass to commercial district. We can play a good role in misappropriating their understanding of the commercial district. ”

Reid was slightly startled. He couldn’t help but look at Dudian’s eyes. Previously he thought that Dudian was able to find canyon through just mere luck but right now he was aware that Dudian had a quite good understanding of the situation.

“Master is an extraordinary genius.” Reid sighed as his eyes fell onto the struggling barbarian. His expression was cold as he kicked on barbarian’s back: “Make sure that he is unable to use his hands and feet. ”

“Alright.”

Jessie put a crumpled cloth into the barbarian’s mouth. He pulled out a dagger and cut off barbarian’s elbows and ankles. He made sure to cut the ligaments so that barbarian was unable to move but didn’t die.

There was severe pain expressed on barbarian’s face as he angrily looked at Dudian and others.

Dudian squatted down and stretched his hand to touch the barbarian’s armor.

“Master?” Reid looked at Dudian.

Dudian got up as he recovered his thoughts: “There is bloody smell left in here. If another team of barbarians come over they may not be so unprepared. We should set up some traps.”

Reid was slightly startled as he nodded: “True.” He turned over and ordered the others.

About an hour later another group of barbarians came over. These ones seemed to sense the smell of blood so were much more

cautious. However they were caught in traps and couldn't insist for too long. All of them were killed by Reid's people. However one of the barbarian's riding a mount couldn't be shot and was able to successfully ran out of the canyon. It made everyone feel a little uneasy.

Time passed.

Several groups of barbarians continued to appear and all of them were killed by Reid and others as they relied on traps. However the barbarians were extremely brutal and were much stronger than ordinary soldiers. One of the swordsmen accidentally was bitten by the head by the monster mount of the barbarians. He was killed on spot.

After the battle everyone looked back at the canyon in silence.

The crowd continued to fight another few waves of the barbarians but the joy they felt because of the battle was gone. All of them understood that it was likely to be the start and their numbers were too little. If the barbarians kept coming out in high frequency and big numbers then it won't take long for them to get exhausted and killed.

late at night.

Whoosh!

A team of barbarians riding black giant wolfs passed through the

Scarlett Valley.

There was a slim figure riding on a nearly three meter tall leopard like mount. She was heavily armed. Moreover there was a steel cast armor on the leopard like mount. It's body had hard scales which had strong defensive abilities too.

Whoosh!

The monster stopped at a high slope in front of the canyon. The slim figure looked forward. After a moment she stretched her hands towards the wall of the canyon. Later on she brought her hand back and put it by her nose and gently sniffed. She turned back and spoke in a strange language in a whispering tone.

The wolf riding team members were the first to the enter the canyon.

The slim woman was silent as she stood by the entrance.

At the other end of the canyon.

The elite archer came back with the news. Reid and others quickly got up to meet their new preys. They clenched the weapons in their hands as they looked at the traps set for their prey.

Whoosh!

The sound of parts of the armor friction echoed from the canyon. However it was extremely weak because of the cold winds whistles.

Reid's physique was not weak. Apparently he also heard the voice. His face slightly changed as he raised his hand and made few gestures. They were going to ambush.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

At the same time three giant wolves came out from the exit. Dudian and others saw the beasts and the barbarians riding them.

Dudian was surprised as he saw the heat emitted from the bodies of the new barbarians were much more than the previous ones. It was like a small flame was emitted from each of those bodies.

Reid loudly roared and was the first to rush out.

"Kill!!"

The thirteen warriors roared as they attacked from the both sides.

Whoosh!

The archers hidden by the walls of the canyon shot out arrows. Some of the arrows were deflected by the armors while the others pierced onto the bodies of the barbarians.

Thump! Thump!

The barbarians were caught off guard. Two out of three fell down from the wolves they were riding. One of them was shot through the throat and died on spot. The other was lucky as he fell down because the arrow had hit the claw of the giant wolf. He had fallen because of the instability.

Reid, a knight and a swordsman were rushing out.

However before they were able to close on the barbarians a sharp buzz echoed. Arrows began to fall from the canyon. They flew past the heads of the giant wolves and enveloped Reid and others.

“It’s bad!” Reid’s face changed as he wielded his sword to block the arrows.

However the others behind him weren’t so lucky. Few of them were able to escape but others were hit in the chest, arms or eyes. The swordsman used a shield and blocked the arrows from hitting his injured companion as he covered him retreat.

Whoosh!

The archers who hid by the walls of the canyon were shocked. They didn’t expect the barbarians to have archers. They pulled the bowstrings and shot arrows at the barbarian riding the giant wall. However they couldn’t hit the enemy. At least they were able to

offset the enemy's fierce fire and it was enough to cover the retreat of Reid and others.

One of the giant wolves leaned forward. There was a weapon that was stuck onto its head which was similar to a wire cutter. In the war this weapon was like a devil which could exterminate ten times more enemies that the ordinary soldiers from the military.

The barbarian fell down. Suddenly a team of barbarians were exposed in Dudian and his team's line of sight.

All of them were riding on a single giant wolf and were heavily armed. It seems that they have long been expecting the attack of Reid and others.

Reid's face changed because of anger. He roared and waved his big sword. He beheaded the barbarian that fell from the giant wolf. He waved his sword afterwards to resist the arrows while he waited for the other barbarians to come over.

Bang! Bang!

The barbarians mounted on the giant wolves rushed towards the wire. They repeated the same mistakes. The forelimbs of the wolves were cut off and their bodies rolled down.

The giant wolf pierced by the wire roared in a strange manner. The other giant wolf rushing from the back suddenly jumped and avoided the trap.

Reid roared as he waved his sword. The others also rushed together to meet the cavalry on giant wolves.

Dudian’s face changed as he saw the scene while he stood in the gorge’s mouth. The canyon was narrow but the barbarians riding the giant wolves were close to intermediate hunters in strength. They could be killed if singled out. But at the moment it seemed the Reid and other wouldn’t be able to cope as they were using the giant wolves to assault too. At least the enemy was dominant in terms of numbers!

Chapter 385

“Quick! You guys join them!” Dudian said in a hurry: “We gotta hold onto the canyon. There is no need to protect me any longer.”

The six others surrounding Dudian stared at Reid and others in anxiety. They heard Dudian’s words but no one took action. One of them said in hesitation: “Master we have to protect your safety. If the captain and others can’t stop them then we will escort you away from here!”

Dudian was angry as he pulled the youth and shouted: “Are you crazy? You want me to leave? What kind of soldier are you? Are you thinking about leaving when your companions are covered in blood? Master? I am a knight now! Roll away!

He pushed the youth which fell to the ground out of the encirclement.

Youth was stunned as he looked at Dudian. A Knight? Is there a knight with such a rude behaviour?

The other five were hesitant as they saw raged Dudian.

“Go!” Dudian shouted again.

The faces of all five of them changed. One of them clenched his teeth, pulled out his weapon and rushed at the canyon. Apparently he didn’t care much as of this moment.

The other few hesitated for a while but finally held onto their weapons and rushed up. There were only two people left with Dudian.

Dudian looked at the previous swordsman by his side. His eyes lit up as he shouted in an angry tone: “Why are you still here?”

The swordsman kept his silence as he indifferently looked at the battlefield.

The other person next to Dudian was Alan. He wryly smiled: “Mr Dean… We must stay here to protect you. If there is any danger… We can’t afford the responsibility let alone if you are injured…”

Dudian’s face sank as he saw both of them insist on staying. He no longer said anything. Dudian pulled out his bow and arrows. He looked at both of them: “Both of you stay away from me! I don’t want you to hinder me.”

“Alright.” Alan wryly smiled.

The youth who was pushed by Dudian looked at Alan and swordsman. He took a deep breath as he ran in the direction of the canyon.

Whoosh!

An arrows whistled past the youth's side as he ran. The next moment the arrow penetrated the eye of the giant wolf. Everything happened in an instant. The next moment the barbarian riding the giant wolf fell down as he screamed. Reid and others rushed out to stab the barbarian to death.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

Dudian shot in fast intervals.

The arrows were like falling stars. The bow had reached its limit. But Dudian was using 70 percent of his power.

Puff! Puff! Puff!

Every arrow killed a barbarian riding a giant wolf. It seemed that they were not arrows but a call – the call of the death!

The archers hiding by the walls of the canyon were surprised at the sight. They looked back to see that Dudian was the one shooting the arrows. They were shocked. Their impression of him was a talented architect but it seems the teenager was an exceptional archer. Now they knew that Dudian didn't carry bow and arrows for decoration.

Shame burst in their hearts as they saw him quickly shoot arrows. Dudian's eyes narrowed as he concentrated on shooting arrows to cover Reid and others.

Puff!

The sound of arrow shooting appeared one moment and the next it would pierce the throat of a barbarian riding a giant wolf. One knight had raised his spear to stab the barbarian but he stopped as the barbarian fell down the giant wall because of an arrow shot.

Reid was relieved as he used his sword to split the head of the giant wolf's head!

"Kill!" Reid's morale was high after he beheaded the giant wolf. The battle got more crazier as the roars echoed all around.

The limit of the small canyon path was three giant wolves. It made so that Reid and others to concentrate and face only on 3 barbarians who ride on giant wolves. Moreover the arrows flied from the back which supported them.

However after Dudian joined the fight the balance of power began to sway towards Reid and others. The pressure was greatly reduced on them. Basically if the barbarian riding the giant wolf was not hurt then he would be dead because of the Dudian's arrows.

The most clear ones about the situation of the battle were Alan and the swordsman by Dudian's side. They clearly saw that Dudian was able to quickly pull and shot the arrows. Moreover he was much more productive than the five archers from their team. By the time each of those 5 archers shoot 3 arrows Dudian would have made 5 shots! This was an amazing performance!

Moreover there was a great difference between the 5 archers and Dudian. Dudian's every shot hit the vital parts of the barbarians or the giant wolves! However the other 5 archers in contrast would hit the armor of the barbarians most of the time. The arrows would bounce off and the effect would be minimal. There would be one or two shots that would hit the face of the barbarians or a vital organ of the wolf!

Alan and swordsman knew that the 5 archers weren't weak. On the contrary the teenager was a terrifying archer! He could be called a godly archer as he hit hundred out of hundred times! The giant wolves were changing positions each time so making such precise attacts was very demanding and the ability of the archer had to be the top!

Especially for Dudian who shoot in quick bursts! There was no time to predict the movement of the enemy! So it was almost unheard of archers who were as good as Dudian!

They naturally weren't aware that it was a basic skill for any senior archer(hunter). Although Dudian's practice time was shot but coupled with his constitution which was comparable to a top senior hunter and his vision, a target 100 meters away from him meant an easy kill! Moreover the space to avoid his arrows was limited in the canyon. In Dudian's perspective the thing what he was doing wasn't an exception feat!

Whoosh!

Dudian narrowed his eyes as he looked at the barbarian on top of the giant wall that was rushing at Reid and others.

He was about to loosen his fingers from the string of the bow when he felt a chill from the side. His heart turned cold as he moved sideways in a flash. He felt pain coming off his arm but he didn't have time to check it. He took out his dagger as he coldly looked at the swordsman.

Although he was shooting arrows but he was totally different from other archers. Dudian wasn't absorbed in shooting arrows but part of his attention was focused on the swordsman. There was a possibility that he was sent by the military to secret protect or to assassinate him! There were two options. He couldn't explain why a man with combat power similar to senior hunter would hid in a team as an ordinary swordsman.

He kept observing the swordsman through the journey. The man intentionally or unintentionally approached Dudian at all times. Even the time when Reid was arranging for people to defend himself the man was standing in a place where he was automatically picked!

Chapter 386

There was trace of shock in the eyes of the swordsman. He didn't expect Dudian who was concentrated on archery to escape his fatal blow. Even the swordsman wouldn't be able to do such a rapid action. As a result of quick movement there was only a scratch on Dudian's arm.

Alan was shocked as he froze on the spot.

Dudian clenched the dagger with his right hand as he stared at the swordsman. Many thoughts flashed past his mind but he didn't expect that the greatest danger he would face in the battlefield would not be from enemy but from the back! He knew that if he didn't have the magic marks of the splitter and the earth-shaking changes because of it then by now he would be hit in his heart!

Whoosh!

The swordsman was shocked for a moment but quickly reacted. He used the sword to attack again!

Dudian didn't step back but closed towards the swordsman. He made a swift movement as he blocked the swordsman's sword with his dagger and arrived by the enemy's chest. He burst out with strength but he couldn't force the swordsman to drop the sword. Instead Dudian punched at the latter's face. The swordsman was caught off guard as his face was hit.

Dudian growled as he caught up with the swordsman.

The swordsman was completely shocked as the information that he got on Dudian was inconsistent with the reality. The latter supposed to be an intermediate hunter but in reality his constitution was better than a senior hunter's. His body couldn't keep up with Dudian's! There was only one idea flashing in swordsman's mind! Dudian had hidden his real strength! A 16 year old teenager with a senior hunter's combat power was simply unthinkable!

The swordsman clenched his teeth to hold back the pain from his face and waved his sword again to kill. The sword danced and enveloped Dudian's body.

He was displaying superb sword arts!

Dudian's pupils narrowed as it seemed his eyes gently adjusted. The phantom of the fast sword gradually became traceable. The scene appeared like static pictures to him.

He didn't blink his eyes as he check the sword's trajectory. Suddenly Dudian's eyes lit up as he saw the gap and made his move.

Ding!

The dagger blocked the sword and Dudian used his injured left hand to severely punch the swordsman's chest.

The armor on the swordsman's chest stuck in. Dudian's eyes were able to see the effect of the punch on swordsman's heart. It contracted severely and violently trembled. The flesh around the heart gently shook up resulting in poor blood flow.

Puff!

Blood oozed out of swordsman's mouth as he made a few steps back.

Dudian quickly caught up with him and waved the dagger. It cut the wrist of the swordsman which was holding to sword and the blood began to spew.

Swordsman turned and ran instead of fighting back.

Dudian's eyes turn cold as he threw out the dagger. Puff! It shot at the man's back.

The swordsman almost fell down but still managed to run after staggering.

Dudian took his bow and pulled out an arrow. He aimed and shot!

Whoosh!

The arrow pierced the armor of the swordsman and the man's body was nailed to the ground.

It took about 10 seconds for everything to happen. Dudian put away the bow and rushed past. He verified that the swordsman was dead. However he wasn't killed by his arrow but a black poisonous blood was oozing out of his mouth.

poison?

Dudian was shocked as he saw the black blood. He checked his left hand in haste. He looked in surprise as he left arm had swollen and bulged. He braced it. Dudian wasn't able to feel the strangeness in his left arm because of the nerve damage.

"The sword was poisoned!" Dudian cursed in anger. He quickly let go of his left hand. He tore a cloth from his sleeve and tightly tied to his shoulder to prevent the poisonous blood to flow along the blood vessels and reach his heart.

"Master!" Alan reacted and ran towards Dudian. He looked at Dudian's left hand and said in a hurry: "Master, you have been poisoned! I'll bandage your arm!"

Dudian took a deep breath: "Quickly! Disinfect!"

"Alright." Alan turned around and took out the first aid kit. He began to crush a lot of things.

Dudian stared at his left hand. After the juranzhi's magic marks were gone his resistance to the toxins was greatly reduced. He

realized that in the future he had to find some kind of first aid antidote to poisons.

“Come on!” Dudian turned to look at Alan. He was holding a dagger and there was a murderous and grim expression on his face. An extremely dark liquid flowed down the dagger. It didn’t seem like alcohol for disinfection!

Dudian’s pupils shrank as he somersaulted. He escaped Alan’s stab. He saw that Alan was waving the dagger trying to attack his chest.

“There is another one!?” Dudian’s eyes went wide open in anger. He escaped Alan’s attack and hit the youth’s abdomen. His right hand grabbed from Alan’s throat and twisted it!

Kacha~~ Alan didn’t even have time to scream. His body fell to the ground without a sound.

Dudian breathed as he sat on the ground. He took out the first aid kit to bandage his arm. However his attention was grabbed by the roars of the barbarians from the canyon. He looked back to see that Reid and others were retreating back because of attacks of the barbarians on giant wolves.

Dudian clenched his fist. He grabbed the first aid kit and came to towards a youth standing by a wall close to the mouth of the gorge. He shouted: “Come over! Bandage my wound!”

The youth was surprised to see Dudian's sudden appearance. He was scared as he saw Dudian's injured left arm. He said in hurry: "Master…Are you hurt?"

"Bandage it!" Time was pressing and the sounds echoing from the battlefield become more chaotic. Dudian could no longer be patient.

The youth was scared and hesitated for a second. He put away the bow and arrows and quickly took out the first aid kit to bandage Dudian's arm.

Dudian pulled bow and arrows and aimed at the barbarians.

Whoosh!

An arrow past by Reid and hit the barbarian on a giant wolf.

Dudian shot another arrow and it was a successful hit.

Two barbarians were consecutively killed. The pressure on Reid and others was reduced. However because of the urgency of the battle no one dared to look back or their head would be cut off in the next moment.

The young archer was stunned as he saw the Dudian's ability.

Dudian slightly breathed after three arrows. He looked at the

young archer and shouted: “What the hell are you stunned at?”

Archer quickly reacted after Dudian’s shout. He wiped the dagger with the disinfectant and took out anesthetic powder and antidote: “Master, please try to endure as there will be pain.”

“Don’t worry about me! Quickly disinfect the wound! I don’t care about anesthetic powder…. Just be quick!” Dudian turned his head as he roared. He precise began to shoot at barbarian’s on giant wolves that were rushing to the front.

Chapter 387

“We are not to use anesthetic powder?” The archer hesitated as he heard Dudian’s words. He saw that Dudian’s arm was infected with a bad toxin. He had to clean it up as the situation was extremely urgent immediately. If he used anesthetic powder, then he had to wait for five to ten seconds. However, that short time could affect Dudian’s life.

“Master stop! I have to bandage your arm, and you must hold back!”

Dudian aimed and shot the arrows. Another arrow hit the throat of the barbarian riding the giant wolf. He turned his head and looked at the young archer. He grabbed the dagger and pierced the wound on his left arm. The black poisonous blood spewed out. However, he kept his arm lower so that the blood didn’t splatter on the young archer’s face.

Dudian threw down the dagger and continued to hold the bow with his right hand while he pulled the arrows with his left hand. He rapidly said: “Let it flow out..then bandage it.”

The youth was startled but quickly reacted. He took the disinfection gauze and wrapped around Dudian’s arm. The poisonous blood was forced out.

Dudian removed the arrows and inserted them in the soil in front of his feet. Because of the bandage, it was inconvenient to pull them out from the back. He stared at Reid and others while he

quickly shot the arrows.

The young archer was facing hardships while bandaging Dudian's arm as it was constantly shaking. He had to follow the movement of Dudian's arm. Fortunately, Dudian's arm moved in the same range. Soon he was able to follow the rhythm and clean up the wound. He forced out the poisonous blood and sprinkled the antidote powder on the wound. Afterward, he bandaged the wound.

Dudian's aim was somewhat disturbed in the process. However, he didn't continue to aim at the throat or eyes of the enemy, but instead locked on the front limbs of the giant wolf. The arrows were able to easily pierce through the place where the protective gear didn't cover. The wolves were frightened because of the injuries and the barbarians riding on them were affected too. Some of them fell while the others couldn't accurately use their weapons.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

After an arrow, a giant wolf would scream in pain.

The morale of Reid and others rose as they fought the barbarians.

After the assistance of the giant wolves was lost the destructive power of the barbarians were reduced. Reid and others rushed out too quickly behead them. However, in this chaotic battlefield, it took two knights and one swordsman to kill a barbarian. The scene was brutal and bloody.

In the blink of an eye, most of the barbarians were killed in the canyon.

At the same time, Dudian noted that there was a very strong red heat behind the group of giant wolves. His heart turned cold, but after a moment of thought, he continued to shoot these barbarians on giant wolves.

The barbarian archers had weak armor. Dudian quickly killed several of them. At the same time, he was able to kill a few giant wolves.

Dudian turned around and looked at the youth bandaging his arm. He saw that his left arm had swollen a lot. He sighed in relief. It seems that because his physique was better than the most senior hunters, he was able to endure for more time. Although he wasn't immune to the toxins, but at least he had a better chance to survive than most senior hunters. If it was another ordinary person, then he thought that they would just fall to the ground and die.

Fortunately, it took less than half a minute to solve out the problem. Otherwise, he knew that poisonous blood would slowly circulate through his whole body and affect his brain and heart.

"It's a potent poison." The youth was sweating. He felt the pungent smell exuding from the poisonous blood that had oozed down. If he had disinfected a bit late then, Dudian would be unable to survive.

Dudian rushed to the front of the battlefield after he bandaged Dudian's arm.

The young archer's face changed as he said in haste: "Master, you can't ..."

Dudian came to a stop four or five meters behind Reid and others. At the moment his left arm had swollen a lot. The white gauze was stained in black blood.

Whoosh! Whoosh!

The barbarians on the giant wolves rapidly fell because of attacks of Dudian, Reid, and others.

Reid and others reached the front of the barbarian archers on the giant wolves. They weren't on par in melee combat against the Reid and others. The barbarians saw that they were at a disadvantage, so they began to retreat one after another.

The Reid and others quickly advance. However, a majestic shadow jumped from behind the fallen giant wolf. It looked like a giant leopard. In one leap it reached about four meters in height and was able to pass over the giant wolf. It landed directly in front of the Reid.

Reid was shocked as he swiftly lifted his sword.

Roar!

The leopard-like monster bit up in a quick action. The Reid's sword was blocked. The next moment it grabbed onto Reid's sword.

Reid tried to struggle and pull back the sword. However the next moment he felt the tearing pain. He looked up to see a shadow coming at him.

Reid's pupils shrank as he tried to move his body. The only thing he heard was a loud 'Kacha' sound. The hideous monster had bitten his arm and torn it off!

The blood sputtered out as it hit his face. A cold sweat flowed down his body. He felt the kiss of death!

"Captain!"

A swordsman next to him roared and raised his shield as he rushed to stop in front of Reid.

Bang

The hideous monster's front paw stepped onto the shield. The heavy force crashed down the shield, and the swordsman was trampled down. Blood spilled out from under the shield.

However, in this critical moment, Reid was able to pull back from

the front of the leopard-like monster.

Reid was maddened as he saw the sight. He used his left arm to pick the spear of a dead knight and rushed towards the hideous monster.

A slim figured woman was sitting on the back of the monster. She was wearing armor made out of animal hair and a lion helmet. She snorted as she saw the crazy Reid rush for them. She waved the machete in her hand.

Whoosh!

The woman’s pupils shrank as she bent over in a hurry.

Whoosh!

Another arrow reached her body the moment she bent over. It pierced the armor made of the animal hair, but it was only able to make a dent.

The woman raised her head. Her face has turned pale as she tightly stared at the front of the canyon. Reid and others rushed back while the slim figure stood on the leopard-like monster. She saw a small figure standing by the mouth of the gorge. He was holding onto a bow as there was an indifferent expression on his face. The figure was completely different than the other soldiers. He was as cold as ice. She was able to clearly feel that the teenager was a terrifying existence at the mouth of the canyon. There was

only him existing in her vision that could threaten her.

Chapter 388

Dudian's brows wrinkled as he looked at the scene. He didn't want to use his full strength to pull the string of the bow. Actually if he made a full pull then even a senior hunter would have difficulties to avoid his shots but he was concerned about his left arm. He didn't want to have unexpected effects on the health of his left arm.

Dudian saw Reid rush out again and once more aimed the bow.

Ivette observed the teenager aim at herself. Anger was stirred up in her heart as she unbuckled the rope from the side of the leopard like mount and took her own shield.

She always held onto belief that a shield was a warrior's shame. However right at this moment she didn't have much of a choice.

Dudian's eyebrows were lifted as he saw the enemy take out shield. In a suddeny move his arm dropped down as he aimed at the mount under the woman.

"Kill!"

At the same time Reid who was holding onto a spear and two other swordsman roared as they rushed at the monster.

Ivette's face changed as she bent over to protect the monster's body from the arrows with a shield while she waved the machete

to attack the swordsman.

Puff! Puff! Both swordsmen were cut off by a machete. Moreover the machete was so good that it was able to pierce through their armor and cut off their heads. Both swordsmen were instantly killed. In addition the Reid's spear attack was cut off too.

Reid's face was almost deformed because of anger as he saw both the swordsmen die on spot. He clenched his teeth but soon regained the way of reason. He turned and ran as he remembered his mission. They were never meant to protect the canyon but to make sure that Dudian's life was not in danger. He had to pay more attention to Dudian's life rather than letting the south of commercial district fall. He couldn't let Dudian die in the battlefield.

Furthermore even if the southern part of the commercial district fell it was possible to mobilize troops from the other parts to make a defense. There was always a chance to regain the lost.

An arrow whistled past his head when Reid turned to ran. Reid saw the thin figure standing at the mouth of canyon and pulling the string of the bow.

He was stunned.

The next second a painful howling sound echoed from behind Reid.

Reid looked back to see the ferocious monster was hit by an arrow at the jaw. It shook its head in pain as the arrow had hit the gap between its teeth and the lips.

Reid was shocked but didn't lose another moment as he turned and ran in hurry. He saw Dudian standing at the mouth of canyon and shooting arrows. The arrows shot past his side. Moreover there was a painful scream echoing after each time an arrow shot past by him.

Ivette was angered as she heard the howls of the beast. The people from the wall were too despicable. In addition she wasn't able to block the arrows using her shield. The destructive power of the arrows were too strong and even the protective forearms of the beasts were useless.

Puff! Puff!

She used the machete to kill the people from the wall. But her eyes were focused at the young boy shooting the arrows. She jumped form the back of the mount.

Ivette was able to leap over and reach Reid. She kicked her feet onto Reid's shoulder to increase her momentum. Bang! Reid's body leaned down but Ivette somersaulted at the last moment.

Ivette rushed forward towards Dudian after landing on the ground. She used her shield to protect herself from Dudian's arrow shots.

The four archers from the military began to shoot arrows at her but there was a distance of ten meters and she was able to block the arrows using the shield. In a matter of seconds she reached the archers hiding behind the dented walls of the canyon. Ivette used her machete to quickly beheaded the archers.

Dudian's eyes were gloomy as he looked at the rapidly approaching female barbarian. He put away the bow and arrows and pulled out the sword from his waist. His eyes narrowed as he focused on her body.

Ivette roared as she pushed forward the shield towards Dudian while she hid the machete behind the shield.

Dudian's heart was calm. He saw the shield and the machete behind it. The moment Ivette attacked with the machete his eyes focused and he was able to see the trajectory of the machete like a quick scroll of static pictures. It was enough for him to process the information and decide on the best course of action.

His head bent backwards slightly to escape the attack of the machete while the sword in his hand stabbed out to swing the machete. At the same time he left arm reached out as he caught the edge of the shield.

"Let go!" Dudian roared loudly.

Ivette was shocked by the roar. Moreover the shield was suddenly pulled towards Dudian. Instinctively she tried to pull it back but felt the terrifying strength of the enemy. She knew that

almost her whole person was going to be pulled away so her fingers let loose of the shield. Dudian threw away the shield like a frisbee. It disappeared in the darkness.

Ivette waved the machete towards Dudian's neck.

Dudian saw the machete's trajectory so he lifted the sword to block it. The sword was able to block it but machete's moment was not reduced.

Dudian's pupils shrank as he quickly bend down and pushed his whole body as he put all his strength onto soles of his feet. His head his the abdomen of the enemy.

Ivette was surprised to see Dudian use such a rogue move. She quickly used the machete to cut Dudian's back. She believed that he wouldn't be able to avoid the machete.

Bang!

Dudian's head crashed into the lower abdomen of Ivette throwing her body off the balance into the ground. However the machete in her hand also stabbed at the back of Dudian. It was able to pierce his armor but couldn't penetrate deep enough to cut his body. But there were long bloodstains.

Dudian didn't feel the pain from the injury on his left arm. However at the moment he felt a burning pain from his back. A strong intent to kill was stirred up in his heart because of it. He

rushed towards the barbarian girl before she was able to get up. He hold onto her arm and fiercely twisted her wrist.

Kacka~ Ivette's shoulder were dislocated and she screamed in pain.

Dudian quickly reached out and clenched onto her throat. After he got the magic marks of the splitter his nails were much sharper than before. However he didn't have the ability to cut off the metal anymore. But at least right now the nails had a sharpness and were effective against soft materials. Because of strong clench his nails pierced into Ivette's skin on her neck.

"No!" Ivette screamed in pain.

Dudian wanted to kill her on spot but he stopped when he heard her sudden cry.

English?

Ivette noticed Dudian's distraction so her hand grabbed onto a stone from the ground to hit him.

Dudian reacted as he grabbed her other hand to release the stone and then slapped her face: "Do you want to die?"

Ivette was stunned even though she was in pain.

Dudian knew that the people within the walls couldn't understand the language of the barbarians. However at the moment he noted the footsteps of Reid and others reaching them so he stopped conversing in English. He didn't let loose of her neck while he grabbed her other arm and pulled it in a sudden forceful twist. Kacha~ Her other arm was dislocated from shoulder.

Chapter 389

“Master!”

“Master, are you all right?”

Reid and others tried to support Dudian but observed Dudian’s extraordinary strength. They were aware of the power shown by the female barbarian so there was anxiousness in their heart. But the anxious feeling changed to shock as the female barbarian who easily beheaded a swordsman was outmaneuvered and out-powered by Dudian.

Dudian pulled the female barbarian towards himself and hit the woman with his knee in her stomach. She almost choked by the time Reid and others tried to reach him: “I am fine! Kill the other barbarians! Don’t let them run away!”

Reid and others hurried back to the canyon.

The archers from the military who were hiding behind the wolves also moved out to fight against few barbarian archers left. They were equipped with shields and daggers as their original task was for Dudian’s protection. The military seemed to be afraid of a raid so they had given extra equipment to them to prevent danger in such a case.

Bang! Bang!

Tinkling sounds echoed as the barbarian archers shot arrows from the giant wolves and the arrows hit the shields.

Reid clutched his arm and squatted in front of Dudian. He saw Dudian's left arm was wrapped in gauze. Reid said in a hurry: "Master, are you hurt?"

"Nothing." Dudian replied in fast manner: "Check her."

Reid was aware that the female barbarian had an extraordinary constitution and was the head of the attacking group. He quickly held down the female barbarian and another archer next to them tied her up.

Ivette was angry as she violently struggled. But she could only muster up strength from her legs and back as her arms were dislocated. She struggled to roll on the ground but her neck was tightly held by Reid. The young archer quickly tied her up.

Dudian quickly got up and removed the bow and arrows from his back. He began to shoot at barbarian archers on the giant wolves.

Puff! Puff!

Some of the barbarian archers died on spot.

The barbarians went crazy perhaps because of their leader was captured. They completely forgot that the archer's best way of fighting was to pull away and create distance. Instead they roared

as they drove their wolves to melee combat. In short time Dudian shot four or five of them.

The barbarians didn’t stop but still rushed towards them.

A few minutes later all the barbarians were dead because of cooperation of Dudian and several other archers. It had to be noted that barbarians weren’t afraid of death as they faced it by rushing blindly out.

The corpses were lying all around the mouth of the canyon as the blood flowed like a river.

Dudian and others were relieved after the last barbarian archer was killed. Some of the leaned against the soft rocks and lightly breathed. The others rushed into the battlefield to check the bodies of the fallen companions. There were others who bandaged their own wounds. Afterwards they went to help Reid with his broken arm.

Dudian put away his bow and arrows. He moved to the mouth of the canyon. Because of the synesthetic smell he was able to hear the sound bursts. His heart was in discomfort because of the battlefield. Normally he wouldn’t feel anything if he saw such a bloody scene however at the moment he had complex sensory simulation which was hard to withstand. Being too sensitive to everything was a sensitive disadvantage.

He leaned against the wall of the canyon and sat down on ground. Dudian checked the gauze used to bandage his left arm.

Although it was bandaged good but after the fierce fight the black blood had infiltrated the gauze and it had to be replaced.

"Master." Reid went to Dudian's side. His face was ugly: "I just learned that your injury...was caused by the two from our team..."

Dudian looked at him then at his own wound: "Yes. If you have received such an order then it's the best time to attack as I don't have much of strength now."

Reid wryly smiled: "Master, why would I accept such an order? This thing will be reported to the higher ups and you will get a satisfactory explanation. Its a problem within the military and I'm very sorry for you being hurt because of it."

"It's alright." Dudian indifferent: "There are betrayers in any organization and military is not an exception."

Reid shook his head as there was a trace of anger in his eyes: "You had donated a legendary level weapon to the military! No matter how you think about it, those people are like animals as they have arranged an assassination to kill you!"

"Animals are less intelligent." Dudian indifferently replied. He cut off the rotten flesh and added the antidote powder. Afterwards he wrapped his left arm with the new gauze. He was relieved in his heart after doing everything.

Reid smiled: "Master, we have suffered heavy losses. I'm afraid it

would be very difficult to continue to hold onto the canyon pass as there are much of manpower left. We can go back. It would be too dangerous for you if we stay in here."

Dudian pondered for a moment: "You should send a messenger back while the rest of the people will stay with me in here."

"There are only eight people left. Moreover some are wounded. I'm afraid we will be totally annihilated if another team of barbarians attacks us. "

"We can hold with eight people. I can fight against those lion like monsters." Dudian replied.

Reid was slightly startled. If Dudian had said something like this before then he wouldn't believe. But thinking of the extraordinary strength demonstrated by Dudian he was convinced. However he was still worried: "Master, you..."

"From now on call me Mr Dean or knight." Dudian patted his shoulder: "Don't worry. I will retreat if there is no other way."

"I'm just afraid that there will be someone else who wants to assassinate you within the people that are left alive."

"It's alright. I'm prepared and on guard. Even against you!" Dudian laughed.

Reid sighed as he saw Dudian insist. He finally understood why

the military didn't want to allow the master into the battlefield. He had stubborn temper and he was afraid generals would be helpless against him.

Reid picked an injured young archer and sent him back as a messenger after a discussion with Dudian.

"Captain, should I take those two prisoners?" The young archer asked.

Reid shook his head: "We will take them back after the battle."

Dudian understood that Reid was worried that the young archer could be one of the betrayers. He could take the opportunity and kill both captives on the way back. It was a very shaky period of time right now. However once the assassination of Dudian was successful the greatest to be impacted by this would be the military! In other words, there were some people within the military who held high positions and were interested in such a thing to happen. Otherwise there was a great power which was able to penetrate and control the people who had access to high level of military personnel.

In addition this people were likely to be the ones who colluded with the barbarians.

The youth archer heard Reid answer so he didn't ask for anything but left.

“I didn’t expect someone to sent assassins to kill Master!”

The others were also angry after they were aware of the situation.

Dudian looked at the crowd: “We should take a small break. However we won’t clean up the corpses of the enemy but pile them up and use as a barrier to block the exit of the canyon. In addition, put the corpses of two people who wanted to assassinate me into different bags. It could be possible to find some clues from their corpses.”

Reid ordered the others to take action.

Chapter 390

Reid had led twenty fighters but after the fierce battle there were only eight left. Ten were killed in the battle and two were the failed assassins that wanted to kill Dudian.

Now after one was sent back as a messenger only seven people were left. Adding Dudian and Reid himself in total there were nine people.

“Master, have you practiced archery before?” Reid asked in curiosity while the others dealt with corpses in the mouth of the canyon.

Dudian checked the string of the bow and there were no signs of loosening: “I have practiced for a year. What about it?”

“Only for a year!?” Reid stared at him with wide eyes: “Your archery is so powerful after only a year of practice!? I’ve seen archers train in military for four or five years but they even can’t reach the level you are at.”

“Yeah!” Another archer who was close by to them said: “I’m afraid we would be killed by the barbarians if the master didn’t give us a helping hand. Especially the female barbarians. She was too fierce!”

Dudian indifferently said: “Practice time doesn’t affect much. A lot of things rely on talent!”

“That’s right.” Reid wryly smiled.

The young archer’s face was red in embarrassment. If anyone else said so he would find a few words to refute but after seeing the godly archery of Dudian he couldn’t help but think that he was fully qualified to be called a true knight!

Dudian turned and looked at the female barbarian who was tied and lying on the ground. His eyes lit up as he looked at Reid: “Do the barbarians understand our language?”

Reid was surprised: “Why are you asking Master?”

“Just a question.”

“Oh, I have heard that the Royal family of the barbarians speak in a some strange language and its exclusive to the Royal family only. The rest of the barbarians speak some simple language which is similar to an animal language.” Reid replied.

Dudian was startled. Is this female from the Royal family of the barbarians?

Ivetta saw that the teenager and the other man were talking about her. She was angry but more worried about her own welfare. She didn’t expect to meet tough resistance at such a place. At the moment her only hope was for her mount to pass the message back to the fort. In that case the chiefs could send some people to save

her.

Dudian saw the anger and hatred in female barbarian's eyes. He pondered for a moment and asked: "What about her mount?"

Reid was startled as he looked at the canyon. His face changed as he quickly got up and ran into the canyon. He returned after moments but his face was ugly: "The beast has run away."

Dudian was surprised. Ran away? As much as he understood from the recent conversations the relationship between the barbarians and their beasts was very close. Why would it escape? Could it be that the female barbarian somehow made the beast to go and ask for reinforcements?

He frowned and after a moment looked at Reid: "Make everyone hurry! IF the beast somehow takes the message then we will be facing a long battle!"

Reid was also aware of this point. He turned and ran into the mouth of the canyon. He relied on one arm along to help others to build a barrier out of the corpses.

Dudian adjusted the bowstring and backed up close to female barbarian. He squatted and looked at her vis-à-vis. At a closer look she seemed similar to the Europeans. It also proved that some people really survived the devastating disaster.

But if the survivors live within the golden, silver and bronze

walls then why there are barbarians?

So if there was an insider war within the wall and a group of people were expelled then its natural that the barbarians would split out as losers. However why would the people within the walls change their language?

Dudian frowned as he couldn't figure out the reasons. Perhaps the answers lied in the history books of the barbarians. He hoped that they somehow saved their history.

"Despicable person from the inside the wall!" Ivette saw Dudian lean over to her. She was angry as she spat on his face.

Dudian face was stained with her spittle but he still kept indifferently glancing at her. He raised his hand and wiped his face. He raised his hand and pinched her throat. She opened her mouth in pain when he spat in her mouth. He released his hand as she swallowed. He quietly watched her: "Do you want to keep spitting?

Ivette looked at Dudian. She couldn't believe that this despicable person from the wall spat in her mouth! Her face changed as she coughed and spat out the saliva from her mouth. She roared: "I want to kill you! Bastard! Falk!"

Reid and others who were working at a distance looked back and saw Dudian squatting in front of the female barbarian. The latter was not a danger to Dudian so they turned their heads and continued with their works.

“Falk?” Dudian heard her curse. He continued to speak in English in an indifferent tone: “Don’t anger me if you want to live! Although I won’t kill you but I guarantee that you will wish to be killed.”

Ivette almost doubted her ears. This despicable person could speak…the King’s language! How did he learn the King’s language?

She looked at Dudian in shock. The barbarian youth tied close to them was ignorant of the conversation between them. Although he didn’t understand what Dudian said but it was the familiar language which he had heard before.

“You, you … ” Ivette was shocked.

Dudian saw the stunned expression on her face. There was a trace of sadness in her eyes. He was able to speak English and he didn’t learn it from chip. After all he didn’t have time to learn a new language and moreover the old languages were useless at this point. Actually he was born abroad. To be accurate he was born in the United States of America.

Actually back then some people who had wealth and connections preferred their children to live abroad. Especially the foreign hospitals were much more accomplished in comparison to the local ones. His family was not an exception. Although they weren’t rich but his parents were scientists and researchers. He was born in United States back when his parents were there. He lived in US until the age of five and afterwards they moved back to China.

“I can keep your life as long as we agree on terms.” Dudian continued to speak in English.

Ivette gradually recovered. She couldn’t believe that there will be a person who lives within the wall and can speak the language of the Royal family. It was very difficult for the members of the Royal family to learn the language. Especially it was extremely difficult for her to learn it.

“Who are you?” Ivette couldn’t help but ask.

Dudian frowned: “It’s not important who am I! The question is do you want to live?”

“Of course.” Ivette didn’t hesitate to answer.

“That’s what I wanted to hear.” Dudian stared at her.

Ivette hesitated: “Why didn’t you kill me?”

Chapter 391

“You are more valuable alive.” Dudian slowly said: “As the first depost of the cooperation you should tell me the power which planned the attack from the wall!”

Ivette didn’t answer: “Since it’s a cooperation then why should I pay a deposit? There has to be a fair exchange!”

“Sorry, but there is no fairness here.”

“Can you tell me how you learned our language if I told you?” Ivette asked.

“Depends on my mood.” Dudian indifferently replied.

Ivette deeply looked at him then whispered: “Alright. I’ll tell you but I hope you can release me. I don’t want to know where you learned our language.”

Dudian frowned: “It seems you don’t understand. You have been imprisoned. Can’t you feel the atmosphere?”

Ivette’s face changed. Anger gushed out from her heart but she suppressed it. She took a deep breath and spoke in a cold tone: “As far as I know there was a trade with people from the wall. In the military there are some people who cooperate with us. As long as we control the outer wall area then we have promised to make him the military commander of the outer wall!”

“In addition to the people from the army there is self-proclaimed Holy Church who cooperates with us. They secretly sell us armor and weapons. Moreover there are two consortia who are supporting us with materials. Now you know! What can you do about it? Hahahahaha...” Her laughter attracted the attention of Reid and others.

Dudian snapped as he slapped her in face.

Ivette’s eyes went wide open as she looked at Dudian.

Reid and others shook their heads when they saw Dudian slap her in the face. They turned around and continue to busy up.

Dudian narrowed his eyes as he looked at the female barbarian: “I’ll make sure that you cry a lot if you are into laughing.”

She bit her teeth as she tried to endure the humiliation.

“I don’t know whether what you say is truth or lies. Can you tell me the names of these people?” Dudian said in a calm tone as if nothing had happened.

Ivette replied in a low tone: “How should I know the name? I’m just a nobody! I don’t have access to those secrets.”

“You may be a nobody but you are a nobody from royal family.”

Dudian indifferently continue: “It’s impossible that you aren’t special. I think we will have a confession session after torture!”

“You!” Ivette snapped in anger. She shouted: “What do you want? I know that you are all finished! What do you want from me?” She kept glaring at Dudian.

“Who knows what she is saying?” Dudian shouted as he looked at Reid and others.

Reid and others came back: “Master, that is the language of the Royal family of the barbarians. It is said that it is a mysterious language and very difficult to learn. Military always wanted to master this language but can’t learn it.”

“Yes.”

“Only the barbarians from the Royal family understand this language.”

Several others also joined Reid.

“It seems that she is very angry as I listen to her tone. Can she understand our language?” Dudian asked.

Reid shook his head: “She shouldn’t... Master be careful and make sure that she doesn’t have chance to bite you!”

The others left and Dudian looked at Ivette: “They just told me to be careful of you because you can bite me. Will you bite me?”

Ivette was angered as she heard his words. Although the teenager didn’t abuse her after capturing her but he had made her go mad quite a few times.

“One day, I will kill you!” Ivette said in an angry tone.

Dudian nodded: “Should I pull out your teeth as a precaution?”

Ivette shriveled because of anger and tension.

Dudian continued: “The names.”

Ivette saw that Dudian didn’t acted but was joking. For the barbarians extraction of tooth was a source of shame. She said: “I only know that there is a person called Kenneth. I don’t know anything about the rest. Even if you ask me for more there is no use.”

Dudian touched her head: “It’s nice. Although I can’t believe anything that you said but its clear that you are frightened. That’s fine as it is.”

Ivette looked up: “What do you mean?”

“The literal meaning.”

“Why were you asking if you didn’t believe me?” Ivette felt that she was provoked again. She suppressed her anger as she asked in a low tone.

“Nobody listens to the words of the enemy to deal with their own people. It’s just plainly stupid. If you told me the fake names and hid the traitor... Wouldn’t I become your helper?” Dudian continued: “As for the questioning... I was just teasing you...”

“Teasing ...Me?” Ivette felt as if lightning hit her.

Dudian mouth curled up as he stood up. He no longer cared about her as he looked at the canyon.

It didn’t take long before the corpses of the barbarians were used as a sandbags and piled together. The soldiers that were killed by them were dragged and buried by the gorge.

Vibrations echoed from the canyon after about an hour.

Dudian, Reid and others were vigilant. Soon a group of barbarians rushed from the canyon. These barbarians were able to smell the rich smell of blood mixed in the air. They saw the corpses of barbarians used as a barrier. There was no doubt for them that the member of the Royal family was killed!

The barbarians turned mad after sawing the scene. They were desperate to kill.

Dudian stood in the middle as he saw the team of the barbarians reach into his range of archery. He shot the first arrow and hit the throat of a barbarian.

The three archers hidden behind the dents of the walls of the canyon were shocked. They didn't think that Dudian's range of attack was so far. The barbarian team was approaching so the three archers began to aim and shoot. Puff! One of them hit the target.

Whoosh!

Another arrow whistled past and pierced through the throat of the barbarian.

Dudian's expression was cold as he rapidly pulled arrows, aimed and shot. The whole process was extremely coherent. It took less than a second of different between one arrow and the other. However each arrow would claim the life of a barbarian.

By the time the team of barbarians reached two hundred meters from the corpse barrier there were only seven or eight people left from the original group.

Chapter 392

More than 20 barbarians fell after a few minutes. Most of the barbarians and their mounts were killed by Dudian. The rest of them were blocked by Reid and others. It was a great victory!

Everyone looked at the middle of the canyon in fear and awe. The teenager wasn't only a master inventor but a genius warrior.

Dudian took the spare arrows from the other three archers at the end of the battle. All three of the agreed without asking for any explanation from Dudian.

"Take a rest but before doing that pick of the weapons of the barbarians. We may need to use them." Dudian said and returned to the side of two barbarian captives.

Reid took a bag of water and came forward: "Master, do you want some?"

Dudian glanced back at him: "It's best for you and others not get close to me if you want for me to live for long. Don't give me food too."

Reid couldn't help but sigh as he remembered the previous assassination attempt. He took back the bag of water: "Master... I'm sorry for that..."

Dudian took out his water tube: "There is nothing you could do.

Help the others to clean the corpses from the battlefield. I don't need anyone to accompany me here."

Reid wryly smiled as he went away.

Another group of barbarians appeared half an hour after the previous battle. They still relied on corpse barrier and Dudian's arrows to win the battle. There were no casualties.

The night passed.

Dudian and others were exhausted. They fought four battles. Each battle didn't take long but the strength of the crowd was exhausted.

The rain began to fall just before the dawn.

Reid and others cursed before praying to the God of Light to stop the rain.

Dudian put on a raincoat and sat in front of two captives. He watched the rain in silence.

Ivette and the other barbarians were tied and lying on the ground. Their armor was drowning under rain. Her hair was wet and touched her face. Once in a while mud would splash around her body as she tried to move.

Ivette could accept if it only rained. She wasn't like the people from the wall and they weren't afraid of rain. But the devil boy sitting close to them sung strange songs once in a while. Moreover when the mud splashed on her lips and nostrils the anger in her heart increased many-fold.

Dudian was gently humming a tune when he stopped and curiously looked at the female barbarian: "Do barbarians have birthdays?"

Ivette looked back at him: "Yes. Why do you ask?"

"Nothing. When is your birthday?" Dudian asked.

"None of your business! Why do you ask"

"Casual chat."

Ivette was about to cuss at him but the mud splashed on her eyes. She wanted to reach, rub and clean it. But she couldn't because of her arms and at beast she could wink and use her eyelids.

Dudian looked at her in silence for a moment. He reached out and used his finger to erase the mud from her eyes. He looked at the hazy rain as there was a trace of sadness in his eyes. He continue to gently hum a song that his sister liked back in the old days.

Three hundred years passed.

In the vast land he was the only one left.

He was no longer familiar with this place.

This man…Everyone was an enemy.

He gently hummed the song and gradually turned silent.

The anger in Ivette's heart was gradually replaced by surprise. She couldn't help but ask: "Is it the music of the wall that you hum?"

Dudian looked at her and slowly said: "Music has no boundaries and can be understood regardless of the species."

Ivette was stunned as she looked at the devil incarnate. Her heart warmed up as her understanding of the teenager changed. But soon she turned to look at him suspiciously. She bowed her head and no longer said anything. She thought that the teenager was deliberately acting so to tease her. She decided to ignore him.

The rain didn't stop.

Dudian grabbed the bow and ordered everyone to prepare for another battle. After the fierce battles through the night the crowd seemed to accept him as a de facto leader. No one would deny his orders.

The battle ended soon. The blood was washed by the light rain. Soon the rain stopped too.

They saw the previous archer had come back. The young archer was relieved to see Dudian and others alive. He jumped from his horse and looked at Dudian: “Master, the military have sent reinforcements.”

Reid and others smiled in relief.

Dudian looked at the crowd: “Let’s prepare to handover the captives. Both of the prisoners should be escorted back and interrogated for useful information. ”

They have fought for many continues battles and have killed more than hundreds of barbarians. Moreover they were able to capture a barbarian from the Royal family. These two merits were enough for him to become a knight.

“Yes.” All of them replied in unison.

Dudian came to stop in front of captive. He whispered to the female barbarian: ” After a moment you will be taken back to the military interrogation. There will be variety of tortures to make you confess. I have already told you. You have to cooperate with me if you want to survive. They will do their best for you to confess. You should only say ‘Mellon consortium’. If they ask for names then tell them ‘George Mel’, ‘Mark Mel’ and ‘Rudolph’... In addition don’t forget to tell ‘Sarah Mel’.”

Ivette deeply looked at Dudian: “They are your enemies, aren’t they? Do you want to attack them using my mouth? Aren’t you afraid that I will give your name?”

Dudian’s hand stretched over her cheek. Ivette closed her eyes instinctively but Dudian didn’t hit her but pinched her cheek. He gently said: “Why would I keep you alive if you can’t even do that? Moreover you don’t even know my name. Even if you knew your confession is useless as another barbarian have uttered my name and nobody believed him. You should obey me. Don’t forget no one likes the pets that don’t listen to them. Do you understand me?”

“Pet?” Ivette was angered as she heard the word.

Dudian smiled and touched her face: “Your eyes are beautiful.”

Ivette’s heart turned cold as she heard the gentle words. It felt like she was bitten by a snake. After a moment she said: “I promise to act so but you must ensure that I will be safe.”

Dudian smield: “You won’t die if you are obedient. But you will have to face a bit of hardships.” He stood up and went towards the young archer: “When the people from the army will come?”

“Soon.” The young archer answered: “They are almost here.”

Chapter 393

It didn't take long for a team of cavalry to reach the canyon. Afterward, 66 infantrymen and archers came along the narrow road and stopped about seven or eight meters away from Dudian. A general riding a brown horse rushed out from the team of cavalry and jumped down from the horse. He looked at Dudian and spoke in a tense tone: "Master, are you alright?"

Dudian shook his head: "There is nothing wrong."

The middle-aged general sighed in relief as he looked at Dudian's wounded left arm: "I've heard that two members of the escort team were bought and tried to assassinate you. Fortunately, you had responded on time and didn't let the bastards succeed! It was a negligence from us the military. I hope you will forgive us, master! Hand the rest of the things to us and go back to recuperate."

Dudian smiled as he looked at the general. He knew that the man wasn't simple. Using a few casual words he outmaneuvered the situation from assassination charges to only guilty of 'negligence'. The general knew how to play with words.

"General, these are the captives that I have personally caught! They are my gift to the army." Dudian looked at two barbarians as he said to the middle-aged general.

Middle-aged general looked at the barbarians: "Master it's been hard on you. Please leave these little things to us."

“This part of the canyon is a dangerous place and someone should be stationed here.” Dudian gently patted the general’s shoulder and earnestly said without caring about the age gap between the two.

There was a trace of shock on middle-aged general’s face. Was he being taught by a teenager?

However, he still kept nodding with a smile as he took into the account the identity of Dudian as master of the Temple.

Dudian turned around and picked up the female barbarian from the ground and threw her onto his horse. He jumped over the horse and looked at Reid: “You should leave a person here to count the number of enemies that have been slain. Report the exact numbers to the general!”

Reid was perplexed but he replied: “Yes.”

Reid was aware that Dudian said it deliberately. It was to make sure that the middle-aged general takes into account the dead barbarians as a meritorious service. Moreover, their team would be recognized not just for the safety of the master but for the protection of the area too.

The middle-aged general looked at the corpses of the barbarians. How could twenty people kill so many barbarians? He also understood that Dudian wanted the death of the barbarians to be counted as a meritorious service to the military.

Dudian left the area.

Reid and his team saluted the middle-aged general and used the horses to follow after Dudian. They took the other barbarian captives with them. One person from their team was left to count the number of the barbarians killed by them.

...

“Don’t forget to tell the names of Mellon and Scott consortium when you confess. Do you get me?” Dudian looked at the female barbarian that laid horizontally on the horse.

Ivette felt breathless because of the violent bumps as the result of horse’s movement. She cursed Dudian in her heart but couldn’t expose it.

“Did you hear me?” Dudian leaned forward.

“I will do what you say. But if you don’t save me then, I’ll snitch you out too.”

“How will you give out my name when you don’t even know it?” Dudian indifferently said and shook the ropes of the horse to rush forward.

Ivette almost spat out blood in anger as she heard Dudian’s words.

It about two hours they reached the military headquarters. Dudian pulled down the female barbarian and said to the general that had come to meet them: “This is the female barbarian that we caught in the Scarlett Canyon. According to Reid, she seems to belong to the Royal family. I hope you can interrogate and get important information from her.”

The general had three stars on his shoulders. He was more than 50 years old and was present when master Skagen presented the steam rifle in the military headquarters. He felt warmth towards the teenager that was in front of him.

The man’s eyes had a trace of shock as he listened to Dudian’s words. He looked at the female barbarian escorted by Dudian. He took a breath and slowly said: “Master Dean is really brave! I know that you are an outstanding master of the Temple and a glorious knight. But I am ashamed as a general to see you achieve such extraordinary results in your first battle. This matter will be handled out by the military with the greatest care. She will spill out everything she knows.” There was a trace of coldness in his eyes as he looked at the female barbarian.

Dudian continued: “General this person is useful to me. I hope that after you are finished with her you can leave her small life and gift her to me.”

“Give her to you?” The general looked at Dudian in surprise: “Master, what for?”

“I want to check the difference of the constitution between an ordinary barbarian and the one from the Royal family. I want to make a few tests. Maybe I can find a way to exterminate all the barbarians!” Dudian replied.

The general, Reid and others were confused. The general reacted after a moment: “Master, is that really possible?”

Dudian shook his head: “Of course, I can’t make a 100% guarantee. I believe no master can make such a claim. But there is a possibility and I hope that military will leave her life to me after the interrogation.”

The general was disappointed but then smiled: “Since master is so open with me, then they will be sent to you after the investigation. I hope that master’s research will be smooth and you will help us kill every barbarian. At that point, the master’s name will be known as a legendary hero in the history books. I think you will be named as the greatest knight by the Knight’s Hall.”

Dudian smiled but he sneered in his heart.

Dudian bid farewell to the general and wanted to leave. But Reid insisted on following him back to his castle. The war was not over and their task wasn’t terminated yet.

Dudian didn’t insist on leaving them behind. It was also convenient for him to be escorted back to his castle. Moreover, he would make friendly ties with the military men. He felt that he would be able to take advantage of this in the future.

Dudian once again replaced the gauze after coming back to the castle. Reid wanted to send the military's top level doctors to treat Dudian but he refused.

There were two reasons for Dudian's refusal. The first one was that he wasn't willing for the people from the military know about his physical condition and constitution. The second reason was that Mellon consortium or another unknown enemy could infiltrate and use the army's doctors to assassinate him. He couldn't detect the problem or protect himself if he wasn't aware what kind of treatment he was going through.

"Young Master." Neuss carried hot soup and placed it on top of the table. He looked at the black gauze that was replaced by Dudian. His face had a worried expression as he said: "Master, are you alright? Were the drugs able to clean up the poison?"

"Yes." Dudian was about to drink the soup but he suddenly thought of something. He pondered for a while and took a silver coin from the drawer and threw it into the bowl.

Neuss was at a loss.

Dudian gazed for a moment but he couldn't detect any smell. He was relieved and was about to drink the soup when he saw a touch of dark black color at the edge of the silver coin. His face changed as he looked at Neuss.

Neuss stared at Dudian as the hair on his body erected: "Master...

Are you…”

Dudian looked at him for a moment then retracted his eyes. He slowly said: “Immediately catch the person responsible for making the soup. Ask him the reason why he had poisoned the soup.”

“Poison?” Neuss was shocked. However, he suddenly understood the seriousness of the situation as he saw the gloomy expression on Dudian’s face. He turned and left in hurry.

“Mellon consortium doesn’t have such an ability or else they would have used this trick a long time ago. It seems there are other people who want to deal with me. Moreover, they are much powerful than the Mellon consortium. Is it that I’m a big enough tree to feel the movement of the wind?” Dudian pondered.

Chapter 394

Neuss came back after a while and said to Dudian: “Master he is dead. The chef who cooked the soup has committed suicide by using a poison.”

“Poison?” Dudian wasn’t too surprised as he saw one red heat come back to his room: “Investigate his identity and the people who he was in contact with. I want to know everything about his family and relatives!”

“Yes.” Neuss left the room.

Dudian looked at the hot soup on the desk. He didn’t think that he would provoke other forces before eradicating Mellon consortium. From his point of view, this new force was much stronger than the Mellon consortium. The only other force within 6 consortia with this much information and intelligence at their hands would be Scott consortium. But Scott consortium didn’t have any reason to deal with him. In that case, there were two forces that would be willing to see him dead. The Dark Church or the Military!

The biggest suspect was still the dark church.

Did he provoke the dark church by creating a new legendary invention?

“The former assassins sent to kill me didn’t belong to the same front. Because there was no mutual assistance between them. So

one party was Mellon but the other party is the Dark Church then!" A cold chill flashed past Dudian's eyes. The enemy was hiding behind the shadows. An assassination was an extremely hard thing to protect himself from. Even if he was several times stronger than his enemy he could be killed by a toxic drug and he wouldn't even know how he died. According to his understanding, there were many highly toxic drugs that didn't even have a smell so detecting them was a difficult task to accomplish.

He has assassinated Deacon Huey but he would never think that at one point he would become someone else's prey.

"I would like to see who shall be the king of the jungle after the hunt!" A trace of coldness flashed past in Dudian's eyes as his fingers gently tapped onto the desk.

The heavy rain continued to fall.

The soup got colder.

Dudian finished bandaging his left arm. He got up and went downstairs to the kitchen. He forced out all the cooks and personally selected fresh ingredients. He cooked a bowl of hot soup for himself as today's breakfast.

Dudian ate the soup and began to read the morning newspapers.

"General Auburn died on the golden wall ..."

“Which is the safest place in the commercial district after the fall of the golden wall?”

“The military will continue to defend the second defense line at the Red River. They will kill the barbarians in one attack!”

“Master Dean personally led twenty elite soldiers and guarded the Scarlett Canyon. He fought overnight and beheaded 281 barbarians. They were able to fight back and kill the enemy ten times greater than their strength! According to the several soldiers, they depended completely on master Dean’s archer…”

“According to the reports, Mr. Dean isn’t only the youngest master of the Temple or a master with two legendary inventions. In addition, he is a qualified knight! Knight’s Hall has qualified him as an official knight. The following is the interview with master Large from the Knight’s Hall… ”

“The youngest master in the history of the Temple had complete victory in his first ever battle! Master Dean has captured a barbarian from the Royal family. The military is currently interrogating…”

Dudian skimmed through the newspapers of the other consortia. The news related to him nearly occupied half of the layout. His capture of a royal barbarian was reported in all the newspapers. There was information about the front line too.”

“Master’s influence…” Dudian smiled as he put away the newspapers.

“Master, do you have to go to the battlefield?” Nicholas carefully asked Dudian.

Dudian drank the hot soup: “Of course. I’ll have to join once more to end the war with my new weapon! Before that, it would be a bit awkward if I finished off Mellon consortium!”

“Mellon consortium?” Nicholas was startled.

Dudian looked at Nicholas: “Any news from Old Fulin?”

“Oh, old Patriarch went back to the Ryan castle. The Mellon consortium has given them back the castle.” Nicholas added.

Dudian nodded: “Write a letter to him to inform Old Fulin that his family and servants will be taken back to the Ryan castle.”

“Got it.”

“We don’t need any other servants. Recruit new ones but be careful in selecting them. Moreover, make sure that the situation that happened this morning does not spread out.”

Nicholas knew about the matter of the poisoning. His face slightly changed: “Yes, master.”

Dudian glanced at him: “I know that this matter is not related to

you and I don't doubt you. But if you make a mistake just know that there is no more room for a pardon."

Nicholas's heart was relieved: ""Master, I'm not that stupid."

Dudian waved indicating him to leave.

Dudian called Kroen after Nicholas's departure: "Write to Old Fulin and tell him to go to the military. Tell him to take back Gwyneth and Sergei but to use my name. Don't forget to tell him to go referring my name, but to take them back with the identity of the consortium."

"I know, young master," Kroen replied.

Dudian rested for some time then called Reid. He looked at him: "Can you send a few people to help me with a few things?"

Reid was surprised: "Of course, Master. Please say what you want."

"Send a few people to go to the residential district and bring back a few people," Dudian said.

"Residential district?" Reid looked at him: "Is it about master's relatives? If so then please be at ease."

"Alright." Dudian nodded and wrote the identity of Jura, Gray,

and their son on a paper: “There are not many people. Just them.”

“Yes.” Reid nodded.

Dudian watched him leave. He sighed as he recalled old days. It was extremely difficult for him to enter the commercial district. The gate was like a giant wall that separated the rich and the poor. It was impossible to cross. But now any civilian could enter the commercial district with just a word from Dudian. They wouldn’t even check the identity of the person. It was one of the benefits of his identity as a master. It was the kind of a power which couldn’t be reached by brute force of a hunter!

Chapter 395

Mark read the letter in his hand. According to it the ‘shadow’ had failed to assassinate Dudian. It was simply incredible. He was very clear about the combat power of the ‘shadow’. Even the top senior hunters of the consortium couldn’t beat the ‘shadow’. The dark assassin Glenn wouldn’t be able to break through the defense of ‘shadow’.

‘Shadow’ wasn’t only good at defense but excellent at assassination skills. However he failed assassinating an intermediate hunter!

His face was gloomy as he held the letter and joined another luxurious wide office. There was a magnificent oil painting at the top of the office. A white-haired old man was standing below the painting. The old man’s posture was straight. He had a majestic temperament. He was George, the old patriarch of the Mel family.

“Father.” Mark bowed.

George slowly turned and looked at him. He saw the letter in Mark’s hand. George’s brows slightly wrinkled: “How did the assassination go?”

“Father, the assassination failed.” Mark replied.

George frowned as he slowly sat in his chair: “Shadow?”

“He died.”

“Dead?” George was relieved: “It’s good that he is not alive.”

Mark sighed: “The shadow won’t betray us even if he was alive. He followed our family for so many years and he is aware of the rules of the military.”

George shook his head: “The dead are always more reliable than living people. He couldn’t fail if he went after a senior hunter. It seems the military has sent very powerful masters to protect the kid. The shadow was mixed with the military for long time so I hope he won’t be trace back to us..”

Mark sighed: “I didn’t expect the kid to be so lucky. However its possible that the failed assassination attempt would come back to me in the future…”

“If the shadow failed then we have to use other methods. Perhaps its time to contact the Dark Church and let them act.” George said: “As long as we provide enough money they will do anything. I don’t believe that this little devil can withstand the hungry beasts from the dark church.”

Mark nodded slightly.

George looked at his son as he departed the room. He whispered: “The military… Since you mean to protect the kid so hard lets see how you will wash away your own guilt. The shadow was part of

military for long time…”

…

North of the commercial district. Military HQ.

All the generals were disturbed by the news that Dudian was tried to be assassinated by the members of the escort team. Most of them had cold sweat. They were relieved to know that Dudian was injured but wasn’t killed. If Dudian was killed by the member of the escort team and the news spread out then the reputation of the military would be destroyed.

They wouldn’t be able to fight back the public anger or the hatred of the Holy Church.

General Lorenzo jumped out of his chair as he heard the news. He was mad. However his muscles loosened after knowing that Dudian was safe and sound. He realized that the situation wasn’t as simple as he thought. However he was secretly glad that God had given them a chance to correct the situation.

“Send three hundred members of the purple feather troops to Master Dean castle to protect him all day round. They must obey Master Dean’s orders but must not leave his side!” Lorenzo immediately ordered. He pondered for a moment then said: “Inform all three Mouse brother to go with the purple feather troop members. Let them personally protect Master Dudian’s safety!”

“Yes.” A colonel promised and left.

A two star general said: “General the Mouse brothers are your personal bodyguards. Your security would be shallow if you send them to protect master Dean… ”

“I’ll be staying in the barracks. It would be difficult even for the dark church to kill me. ” Lorenzo continued: “If Mr Dean is dead in this moment of war then military wouldn’t be able to take the responsibility. Especially after we have issued that he is under the protection of the military. So if he dies and even if we win the war the military will be overturned. Don’t forget that the consortia aren’t sheep but wolves!”

The general’s face changed as he didn’t continue to ask anything.

“Investigate everything!” Lorenzo smashed his hand onto the table as he looked at the crowd: “I want to know the background of those two who wanted to assassinate master Dean in less than ten minutes. I need to know everything about their identity and the people who were associated with them! The forces behind the assassination are not just after Master Dean’s life. They want the relationship between military and the Holy Church to worsen! I think it’s the dark church but investigate deeply to see if there is someone else dressed in dirty clothes and disguised in the shadows!”

“General, the identity of both of them have been investigated!” A colonel said: “They were the members of the military. One of them was called Alan Port. He was a great soldier and had gathered a lot of awards. The other one was called Sunny North and was a

veteran. He was part of the ‘Magic Knives’ group but was arrested because of offending a noble. He was expelled from the ‘Magic Knives’ group and disappeared since then.”

The generals looked at each other as they heard this.

Lorenzo’s face turned gloomy: “Who arranged both of them into the escort team? ”

“It was arranged by General Corso. The general was in the front line and is currently coming back. ”

Lorenzo looked at the colonel: “Which family Sunny north had offended?”

“It is a family called ‘Padstow’. This family was part of the Mellon consortium but was one of the minor shareholders. Their authority in the consortium was not high.” The colonel continued: “However this Padstow family declared bankruptcy and moved from commercial district to residential district not long after Sunny North was expelled from the ‘Magic Knives.’”

Lorenzo’s eye lit up: “Send people to check the reason why they went bankrupt.”

“Yes.” Colonel responded.

“Damn, one is a veteran and the other one is a serving soldier!” Lorenzo clenched his fists as he looked at the crowd: “What should

we tell to Holy Church?”

All the generals turned silent as they bowed their heads.

Another colonel came into the hall and broke the silence: “The royal barbarian captured by the Master Dean confessed the attack route of the barbarians. Moreover she has said the names of the people colluding with the barbarians.”

“Oh?” Lorenzo’s eyes lit up: “Report those names.”

“Yes.” The colonel opened the notebook in his hand and began to talk: “George Mel, Mark Mel, Rudolp, Chai Rostov, Sarah Mel…”

The hall stirred up the moment they heard the first name. However soon the silence ruled in the hall as they listened up to the last name in the report.

Chapter 396

“Master, should I find a doctor to check your arm?” Kroen looked at the bandaged left arm of Dudian. He said in a worried tone.

Dudian slightly shook his head: “My physical constitution is totally different with the past. I can’t let the outsiders know about it. Unfortunately there isn’t a trusted doctor we can rely on. At this point the best is to lick our own wounds.”

“We can ask a doctor come over for diagnose and then…” Kroen continued: “We may make it sure that he disappears.”

Dudian turned around and looked at him: “The idea is good. But its not worth killing a person.”

Kroen was surprised. Dudian reluctantly agreed to Gwyneth’s plan to save the civilians living in a town outside the golden wall back then. Dudian had exposed his cold nature back then. So it was hard for Kroen to understand why Dudian didn’t want a doctor to be killed. Kroen felt that it was hard to understand and read through the teenager that grew up with him in the orphanage.

Dudian’s thoughts drifted away as he looked outside the window at rain. After a long time he asked: “How long has it been raining?”

Kroen bowed: “Master, today is the sixth day.”

“The sixth?” Dudian murmured: “The rains this year continued

for much longer than usual.”

“Yes.”

Dudian sighed as he was silent for a moment: “After all, its going to stop, isn’t it?”

“Yes, young master.”

…

The morning newspapers were delivered through the all three regions.

Rudolph was reading morning newspapers as he sat in his spacious office. This morning he had a hunch that something bad will happen.

His face got ugly as he read the newspapers from military, the Temple and other consortia. He threw the newspaper on the table. Rudolph pressed his hands onto his face to rub it. He felt an unprecedented tiredness. He took a deep breath and looked at the family’s butler: “Tell me… Was I wrong?”

The butler was startled. He asked in a careful tone: “Master, what do you mean?”

Rudolph looked at him but it seemed he was thinking about

something else: “Was I wrong by stopping Jennifer and that teenager get together?”

The butler knew about the news. He replied with the most appropriate words he could: “Master, the thing that you did... Father has responsibilities over their kids. Back at time he was just a small hunter. Moreover he belonged to the untouchable part of the population. He was a nameless person with no background. There was nothing he could held on but the feelings between him and the Miss.”

Rudolph slowly said: “True. But all my life I have been reading people but I didn’t carefully observe and understand my daughter like I did with others. If I had contacted the teenager back then I would have seen his extraordinary capabilities.”

The butler stayed silent without saying a word.

“I carefully examine and observe the market, trend, the prices, materials and other aspects before making a business decision.” Rudolph whispered: “I have been observing and understanding those guidelines of business all my life. But in this task I failed. If I had given some tests or put forward some requests to the teenager then perhaps I would be able to see his potential.”

The butler sighed as he added: “Master, it has nothing to do with you. At the time he was just a black haired untouchable! He couldn’t become an aristocrat how hard he tried. The only thing to blame is that the kid didn’t show his talents back then.”

Rudolph slightly shook his head: “The hair color and identity are external factors. It was just external packaging of a commodity. When we do business we dig out the value of something that others think is worthless. That’s how you earn huge profits. This time I was in the wrong. I just looked at rough cover of the teenager but couldn’t see that there was gold wrapped inside him!”

The butler tried to comfort him: “Masters its useless to talk about these things as its been a long time already. Our family will thrive even without him. Your long-cherished wish of entering the inner wall will be achieved!”

“You do not understand... You do not understand... Mellon consortium is finished... Do you know why I have been withdrawing funds from the consortium and selling our family shares? It’s because I know that Mellon consortium has offended a person who they shouldn’t mess up with! It’s just I didn’t expect that his growth will be so rapid... ”

“What?” The butler was stunned as he didn’t know how to react: “Master, why would Mellon consortium be finished? How could that happen? Even though he has become a master of the Temple but decided the fate of the Mellon consortium...That... ”

“I though that it was negligence from the prison when he made the jailbreak. But he has been able to raise and change the whole of commercial district in a short period of one year after his jailbreak. I go to various places and visit many chambers. The most often heard name is his...”

“A year ago he was just a prisoner! And now? He is the ideal lover

of all noble ladies. He is the most wanted son-in-law of every family's! He would be hero of the public at the end of the war! Do you think that its just a coincidence? No! Impossible! It's not something that an average person can accomplish. Most wouldn't even have courage to make a jailbreak, assassinate a deacon... He is a madmad... A crazy genius..."

The butler felt creepy as he heard Rudolph's explanation.

At the same time a maid quickly went into the room: "Master there is a general who wants to see you. He is waiting for you in the hall."

Rudolph was startled. He pondered about something and then sighed. He got up as his face became bitter. It seems that there were going to be problems and his hunch wasn't wrong: "Entertain him. I'll be right there."

"Yes." The maid retreated.

"Master, does military want to talk about the business of our consortium with you?" The butler curiously asked as he handed the coat.

"There is no need for a general to come forward for such a thing."

...

George and Mark were discussing things at the conference hall in their castle when the butler interrupted them. He said in a haste: “Master, young master! There is a general waiting for you in the hall.”

“A general?” Mark frowned: “You go ahead. We will be there soon.”

“Yes.”

Mark looked at his father and asked after the butler retreated: “Father, is it possible that assassination was revealed as the military sent a general? But it shouldn’t be. Even if they were able to get all the information from the ‘shadow’ they can’t link it back to us. I’ve already prepared for this.”

“We will check it now.” George got up as he pondered.

Both of them came downstairs to the hall.

“General Keith, which way the wind has blown today?” Mark laughed as he asked the middle-aged general who was standing in the hall. He raised his hands to greet him.

General Keith didn’t reach out his hand to grab Mark’s. He coldly looked at him then slowly looked at George who was still walking down the stairs: “Both of you please cooperate with me and come to military’s base. This is your arrest warrants!” He raised the papers in his hand.

Chapter 397

“Arrest warrants?” Mark’s eyes swept through the black letters on the papers.

The servants around the hall were shocked as they heard the general’s words. They couldn’t help but turn around to look over.

“General Keith?” George used the crutches to slowly come behind Mark’s body. Because of his old age his body was lost behind the sturdy body of Mark. However Mark quickly went sideways and all the attention was gathered on George.

“It seems I have to talk about rituals and history to the general.” George indifferently looked at general Keith: “Entering an aristocrat’s manor with weapons is a very rude thing. Although Mellon family is wise and forgiving but we can’t forgive and let it through! Although don’t forget ‘Garden Battle’ which happened 160 years ago. After that arresting any nobility whether they are in decline or not is inconceivable!”

George hit the crutches onto the floor as he uttered the last words. Although his expression was calm but his sharp words were showing his anger.

General Keith indifferently looked at both of them. At one point knights of light, deacons, generals of the military and even the members of the dark church had to bow in front of them. Keith said in a cold tone: “Sorry but I was ordered to act. The warrant states to arrest both of you on ‘rebellion’ charges. In addition, your

granddaughter Ms Sarah Mel will also go back with us. I hope you will follow the aristocratic etiquette and don't embarrass us!"

"Where do you get the courage to talk to us like that?" Mark said in an angry tone.

Keith looked back at him: "Mr Mark, are you going to resist?"

"You!" Mark was angered.

George raised his hand and held Mark's arm. He shook his head and deeply looked at Keith. George slowly said: "I hope military will be responsible for their reckless behavior. Let's go!" He patted Mark's back and used crutches to leave the lobby. If you looked at his back you would see a dragon-like majestic momentum.

Mark coldly looked at Keith and then said to the butler who was next to him: "We will go now. You must immediately notify the magistrate to investigate the matter. Don't give chance to the military to abuse their authority!"

The butler understood the meaning behind his words. He nodded in confirmation but his face was gloomy as he looked at Keith.

Keith glanced back at butler but he didn't care much about his existence.

Although they were arrested but the carriage used to transfer them was very high-end and luxury one. It seems like the soldiers

were escorting some distinguished figure rather than arresting them.

"Lisa, I'm leaving for now so you will be responsible for everything." Sarah looked back at Lisa as she was before the carriage. Although she was much mature than most at the same age as her but at this moment she couldn't help as her eyes become flushed. Sarah bit her lips as she sat into the carriage. She had vaguely guessed the reason why they had encountered such a thing. It should be related to the teenager! Although Mellon consortium had lots of enemies but the most susceptible was that teenager. It was her intuition telling her. Her heart was full of guilt and self-blame. If she could have killed the teenager outside the giant wall then they wouldn't be facing such things at this point.

"Miss, I know my responsibilities!" Lisa respectfully said as she stood behind her. She was like a handsome knight. People would mistake her for a young boy if not for her bulging chest. (the author is fixed on her chests)

Sarah's fingers clutched her skirt as she stepped into the carriage. The remorse and grievances in her heart gradually turned into hatred. She never thought that one day she would be involved in such an embarrassing situation. Although she was sitting in a very beautiful and luxurious carriage that was in no way inferior to her own one but she felt the hatred infiltrate deep into her marrows.

The butler went back to the hall after George, Mark and Sarah left. He looked at the attendant: "Pass the message to the master Melk (the knight of light Melk, Sarah's elder bro). Let him ask the bishop to come forward and bail out house masters."

“Yes.” The attendant replied and left.

“Call Mr Meyers and Mr Mutton. Tell them we have something to discuss.”

“Yes.”

“Inform general Williams and let him send someone to take care of house masters while they are held by the military. Nothing unannounced can happen to them!”

“Yes.”

The butler commanded the attendants and the orders were passed out. The entire castle was like a large machine that rapidly operated.

…

“Did you write it?” Dudian asked Kroen.

Kroen gently picked up the letter from the desk and gave it to Dudian: “Yes Master. Please check it.”

Dudian glanced and nodded: “Send it to patriarch Fulin.”

“Yes!” Kroen replied as he put the letter into the envelope and

went out.

Dudian got up from the bed. He felt like he was frozen deep into his bones. He knew that there was something wrong with his body. But he couldn't diagnose himself as the information in the super chip was related to the modern medical knowledge. Therefore it was futile and useless to him at this point. Unless he went to ask for help from top doctors he wouldn't be able to know the root of the problem. However all of those top doctors were related to big forces and could leak his physical condition. He had to wait to diagnose himself by someone trustworthy.

Dudian came to the hall. Jake, Sander and others were sent back to the Ryan castle so the hall was empty and quiet.

However Dudian was accustomed to the silence. He looked up at the distant sky. He slowly recovered his eyes as he looked at Nicholas: "The rain has stopped! Get some pastry and tea ready."

Nicholas was surprised but didn't say anything. He went to the kitchen.

Dudian sat on the sofa in the hall. He quietly read a book. It didn't take long for hoofs of the horses to echo from the outside of the castle.

Reid and remnants of the escorts quickly stopped the carriage. A man pulled out a medal and Reid allowed them to enter after checking it.

“Master, people from the Knight’s Hall have come to see you.” Nicholas quickly came to report.
Dudian didn’t lift his head: “Let them come.”

“Yes.”

After moments, Nicholas came into the hall as a young man followed after him. The young man saw Dudian sitting on the sofa. He came forward and greeted Dudian according the the ceremony of the knights: “Greetings master! I’m Bolt, a silver knight from the Knight’s Hall!”

“Sit down.” Dudian put away the book and smiled at Bolt. He glanced at Nicholas..

Nicholas ordered a servant to prepare pastry and tea. He was feeling curious as how Dudian predicted that someone would come for a visit.

Bolt sat in front of Dudian. He handed out an envelope and respectfully said: “Master, I’m here to give this to you. Please check it.”

Dudian nodded and opened the envelope. He skimmed through the content and looked at Bolt: “Please go back and tell that there is a barbarian invasion. The civilians in residential district and aristocrats and residents of the commercial district face the risk of death at this point. I will go to the battlefield soon and I don’t have time to accept the knighthood ceremony at the moment. Please forgive me for this. If I can survive then we will go through the

ceremony after the war."

There was a trace of respect in Bolt's eyes as he looked at Dudian: "I had heard that master had risked his own life and personally rushed to the battlefield. You didn't only guard the Scarlett Valley but fought for bitter sixteen hours and killed hundreds of barbarians! Moreover you were able to help people of the south from the mutilation! In addition you have also captured a barbarian from the Royal family. It's admirable! I was ashamed compared to you! As a silver knight I had to follow orders and stay in the commercial district. It's humiliating as knight not to be personally involved in the war!" Bolt sighed.

Dudian smiled: "Justice, obeying orders, following the law is also part of the spirit of the knighthood! You may be considered a knight and doesn't need to fight the enemy personally!"

Bolt nodded as he heard Dudian: "Master as you can't attend the ceremony then I'll go back to inform!"

"Goodbye."

Chapter 398

Nicholas sent away the knight and turned back to the hall. He looked at the letter in Dudian's hands which had the badge of the Knight's Hall engraved on it. He was envious and curious. He didn't know which knight position the Knight's Hall had granted Dudian. Could he become a silver knight from the beginning?

Dudian glanced at Nicholas and threw the envelope onto the table: "Take it to my study room."

"Yes!" Nicholas replied with a smile but his heart was cold. He held onto the envelope as went upstairs. Although he was curious but he didn't want to open the envelope on his own. This was not something a butler could do and he had lost all the opportunities for a pardon.

"They directly gave me the identity of a golden knight! I think alone by my accomplishments it would be difficult to get this glory. It should be related to my identity as a master of the Temple! Power is really a good thing..." Dudian's mouth curled up into a smile.

...

"We should pressure the other nobles?" Old Fulin's face slightly changed as he checked the letter: "It's time to take out the net. I hope its strong and large enough to catch those big fish! We won't have a second chance..."

Sander who was next to him was perplexed as he couldn't help but say: "Father, the young master... Master Dean wants us to deal with Mellon consortium!?"

"Yes." Old Fulin slowly opened the oil lamp and put the letter into it. The flame engulfed and burned the letter: "The identity of the master is enough to encourage people against the Mellon consortium. There has to be many families who have applied to withdraw from Mellon consortium by now. Their foundation is shaky at this point and it will eventually collapse."

Sander frowned: "Father, although the Mellon consortium seems to be finished but the dying tiger still can kill the wolf. It is not so easy to eat such a big piece of pie. He wants you to pressure the other aristocrats. In case of danger he can wade away while we won't have a chance!"

Old Fulin slowly shook his head: "He won't do that."

Sander heard his confident tone. However the emotions that were filled in his heart for a long time had turned him angry. He whispered: "Father, I can't understand the reason why you believe him without a question! He was a prisoner and a ferocious hunter. After so much time we have seen that he isn't as simple as we have imagined him to be. The amazing talent is just a coat covering him. Under that coat a cold ruthless heart is hidden!"

Old Fulin slowly turned around and looked at him but he didn't say anything.

Sander felt that he couldn't stop so he continued to pour out everything he felt as his father's gaze was focused on him: "Father, I know that he has an affection to our Ryan family but he is just using us! He coerced you to bail him out. Although he promised to bring us back to the heyday of the Ryan family but how can we believe just his words! He made the new textile machine which helped to improve the life of Ryan family. But all over again his purpose was to use us!"

"He had no background so he had to rely on nobles such as us for protection. Mellon consortium would be able to throw him into the prison by moving few strings. That's why he had to support us so that we can shelter him. "

"At the final analysis its just he has been using us. I thought that he was just a talented teenager but now it seems that he is simply a devil! He is more terrifying than we have imagined! Mellon consortium has gone through decades of suffering and attacks but were able to survive. It took only a short year for this devil to put the Mellon consortium into a desperate situation! Just a year!"

"Now he has become a master. He is almost in part with an aristocrat. There are countless nobles willing to become feather on his wings. We are just a declining nobility! He is so cold-blooded towards others! Why would he care about us? For him we are just loyal dogs!"

"You are mistaken." Old Fulin shook his head as he interrupted Sander's speech.

Sander slightly bit his lips as he looked at old Fulin. He didn't

fear his father but he had to follow the etiquette in front of the old patriarch.

Old Fulin slowly said: “I knew that our family was harboring a devil since the time he murdered deacon Huey. Naturally, I don’t believe in anything that he says and I don’t believe that he may be a loyal person. But I’m convinced of one thing which is pretty important!”

“What?” Sander was startled.

“The devil is described as cruel, greedy and violent but he is different. In addition to those he has pride!” Old Fulin continued: “He may not necessarily be part of our family. But because of his pride he will never treat us as pawns. It will trample his own self-esteem.”

Sander was startled as he listened in silence.

Old Fulin stared at him: “You don’t have to fear him. Although he is cold-blooded and ruthless but this is how you survive. That’s the only way to end the Mellon consortium and that’s the only way that will take him to the apex! Do you remember something called ‘pyramid’ from the book of ‘Golden Desert’? It’s the same thing. We live a life which seems similar to a pyramid. How can you step onto the top row and overlook the world if you don’t want to step over others?”

Sander bowed his head as he bit his lips.

“Follow his instructions and put pressure on different families! It would be inconvenient for him to come forward. It will be suspicious.” Old Fulin softly said.

“I know, father.” Sander sighed.

…

In the afternoon.

Dudian was eating lunch when Gwyneth and Sergei came back. There were holes and scratches all over their armors. They looked like beggars. Fortunately they had washed clean their armors and there were no blood stains. However it was easy to see how fierce the battle had been.

Moreover Sergei’s hair was trimmed and was shaved bald.

Gwyneth’s armor was tattered and there were few wounds on her neck. Her hair was much shorter too. However the wounds on her neck were too shocking.

“Young master.”

“Young master.”

Both of them greeted Dudian.

Dudian glanced at them: “What’s with the shabby look? Didn’t military give you a new armor?”

Sergei suddenly went crazy: “Master, the military is just a gang of stingy bastards! We helped them kill those enemies and at the end we did get nothing but fart! We even cleaned our own armors! They sent a military doctor but that man seemed very reluctant to do anything. I was being discriminated against! I really wanted to smash his head!”

Gwyneth who was silent most of the time said: “Yes.”

Dudian smiled: “From your tone I assume you didn’t get any serious injuries. Are you hungry? Join me for lunch! IF you were offended by anyone then find them and I’ll help you kill them. What do you say?”

Chapter 399

“Is it alright if we kill military men?” Sergei suspiciously look at Dudian as he picked up his eyebrows.

Dudian smiled: “They are humans too. Why couldn’t we kill them?”

Sergei stared back at him: “Forget it, my anger is gone. However can I kill them if I meet such people in the future?”

Dudian replied: “Anyone below general is alright. But make sure that I don’t have to clean up a lot after you.”

Gwyneth and Sergei were surprised at his words. Killing soldiers or officers of the military wouldn’t end with just light charges. However according to Dudian’s tone he would be able to get ride of such a case if it happened.

“Alright.” Sergei grinned: “In the future I won’t bear such worthless people.”

Dudian nodded: “Tell me about war.”

Both of them sat by the table while a servant brought them meal. Sergei ate and spoke: “The situation is not good. Moreover the military used hunters as a cannon fodder. They directly ‘threw’ us over the golden wall to fight with barbarians. If I didn’t cooperate with Gwyneth then I want come back alive. As much as I know all

the primary hunters sent by the other consortia are dead. There were only one or two intermediate hunters who were lucky to survive. There were about fifteen senior hunters including both of us. More than half of that are either dead or wounded."

Although Dudian had heard about recent news from newspapers but not in details. It seems military was successful in weakening the private forces of all six consortia.

All the noble families were eligible to have private 'military' forces according to the size of their territory. They could have corresponding number of guards which was identified as private army. The official aim was to protect the territory but in fact those forces were used for self-protection and in case of confrontation with the military. The number of private guards under the command of the aristocrats were in extremely alarming numbers so that the military, magistrate and even the Holy Church didn't dare to provoke them.

The hunters were undoubtedly the trump card of these private guards.

But in Dudian's perspective the hunters were only small part of the consortia's top private military force. After all, the wealth that had to be protected outside the giant wall wasn't substantial in comparison to the wealth inside the giant wall. So the number of private troops within the giant wall were much more in number and quality wise.

The hunter team has to be prepared before renting a passage through the giant wall. Moreover there were number of

restrictions related to the wealth to be made through the passage. So the best option was to form territorial guards and knights to protect the wealth inside the giant wall.

As a result the knights were the most loved private forces out of all. They were used as private guards and to stop any kind of embezzlement from the other nobles.

“Master, why did you call us back? What’s the matter?” Gwyneth asked as she picked up a small piece of steak to eat.

Dudian looked at her: “The first is to confirm your state. The second reason is that I’m going to set off and I need both of you on my side.”

Sergei glanced at Dudian’s left arm which was bandaged: “Did someone attack you?”

“Yes.”

Sergei nodded and didn’t ask questions anymore. He bowed his head to eat.

Pound~ Pound~

The sounds of horses came from the outside the castle.

Dudian’s eyes lit up as he looked up.

He saw red heats gallop towards the castle from the distance. He was able to figure out that it was actually a team of soldiers.

Reid who was in duty at the gates of the castle was surprised to see troops coming towards the castle. His eyes narrowed as he saw three figures leading the troops. He quickly stood up in a straight posture.

The The army came to the castle before the stop, led by a few road figure turned over and jumped horse.

“Greetings general Darren!” Reid saluted as he was extremely surprised. General Darren was the oldest of the three Mouse brothers. The two men next to him were generals Dale and Dustin who were the most trust people of the five-star general Lorenzo. Moreover they were his personal attendants meant to protect his safety. General Lorenzo had survived more than dozens of assassinations because of three Mouse brothers.

General Dale looked at Reid’s arm and smiled: “Is master at home? We are here to protect his safety.”

“Master is inside the castle. Please come over.” Reid respectfully replied.

Darren, Dale and Dustin followed after Reid into the castle.

Darren was very surprised as they entered the castle. It was a

very simply place with basic decorations. It was difficult to imagine a master of the Temple living in such an ordinary castle. The servants were wearing ordinary uniforms too. It seems as if they have joined castle of a declining aristocratic family.

"Master, the three are ..." Reid came to stop in front of Dudian and introduced generals one by one.

After the introduction, Darren directly said: "Master, we were ordered to protect your safety. I hope you wouldn't mind if we live here for a while."

Dudian's heart was full of surprises as he looked at the three. All of them emitted heat which was on par with senior hunters. They were in no way inferior to Sergei.

"I'll be troubling generals." Dudian politely replied. It seems the last assassination attempt had frightened the top level of the military.

Gwyneth and Sergei didn't move as they sat by the table. However both of them looked at the three generals as they could sense the dangerous aura emitted from them.

...

Prison within the territory of the Military HQ.

The defensive efforts put into the protection of the prison was

much more harsher than Thorn Flower Prison as hundreds of soldiers patrolled around the prison. Although Thorn Flower Prison was known as the best prison within the outer wall area but only civilians, some aristocrats, knights and similar people were jailed there. The prison of the military was used to imprison very few people. But they supervised the 'big' characters of business world, aristocracy, top level people from magistrate or even bishops from the Holy Church.

The forces behind the prisoners would not be able to invade into the prison in case of an attack. After all, the prison was within the territory of the military headquarters.

At the moment, two teams of troops escorted a carriage which came to stop in fron tof the prison. Two figures stepped down from the carriage. One of them was a middle-aged made with a mustache. He was carrying a folder with himself.

The other was about 50 years old and was wearing a suit. His skin was smooth and delicate. However his hair was white in color.

"Please." A colonel showed them way.

Both of them followed the colonel into the prison. The guard checked their documents and looked at their eyes: "The visit is limited to 10 minutes according to the general's order!"

The colonel's face sank: "Stop being long-winded! Open the door!"

The guard opened the door.

The guard told to them: “The Mels are in the fourth section.”

Both of them walked through the corridor of the prison. It was totally different place in comparison to an ordinary prison. There were no steel windows or iron doors. It looked like a basement of a castle.

The colonel came to stop in front of the fourth section. He presented their documents to the officer at duty. The officer checked their documents and opened the door into the section: “Ten minutes!”

The colonel looked at both of the visitors: “I won’t be going in. Only you two.”

“Thanks.” The middle-aged man nodded and went into the section. The place was very bright. There was soft red carpet all over the ground. There was a comfortable sofa while portrait of a famous actress was hang on the wall. Next to it there were bookshelves. By the bookshelves there was a bar for wines.

At the moment a person was sitting in the room. It was George Mel.

Chapter 400

“Old Patriarch!” The middle-aged man wearing suit came forward.

George who was sitting on the sofa slowly raised his head as he looked at the man. His eyes swept of the middle-aged man’s body and saw the other figure behind him. His gloomy face turned into a smile: “Bishop Parker! I didn’t think that you would personally come to visit me. I thank you for that. I’m ashamed to meet you in such a shabby place. Should we get something to drink?”

The old man lifted the hood covering his head. He slightly shook his head: “Old patriarch, its me that’s ashamed not being able to get you out of here. I’m really sorry…”

“Sorry?” George was startled as he listened to the man’s words. He felt a hunch that something bad had happened. He looked at the middle-aged man: “Blatter, whats happening?”

The middle-aged man’s face turned ugly: “Old patriarch I’m sorry but you will have to stay here for a few more days… Mr Mark and your granddaughter Miss Sarah have been bailed out thou.”

George was perplexed as he frowned: “What do you mean?”

Blatter responded: “Old Patriarch we are all friends in the top tier but this situation is a bit too special. We can’t bail you out because of no parole.”

“No parole?” George looked at him in anger: “Bastard! What do you mean?! Will I continue to stay here? Do you even understand who am I? Do you expect me to stay here? Are you gone crazy?”

Blatter bitterly replied: “Old patriarch I have investigated the details. Master Dean had captured a barbarian from the royal family and she has confessed your name while under the investigation of the military. The military has arrested you under charges of ‘rebellion’ and ‘collusion with enemies’. These are big sins. Moreover as the war continues the military orders the shots. Don’t expect to get bailed out!”

George shouted in anger: “I don’t care about the charges! This is between the military and you to solve! I only know that I want to go out now!”

“Old Patriarch.” Parker bishop stepped forward as he sighed: “We are really helpless at this point. I have used my connections in the Holy Church to act as a guarantee for you but many people have heard about the contradictions between Mel family and the new master who has invented two legendary inventions. So most of the people who originally wanted to help you has stepped back. Alone I’m powerless… ”

George’s lips twitched as he heard the bishop’s words. He grabbed the bottle of red wine on the table and fiercely smashed it to the ground: “That little devil! It must be him who had colluded with the barbarians! He was the one who had captured the barbarian from the royal family! DAMN IT!” He used the crutches to balance himself and sit back on the sofa. George’s eyes were

gloomy.

Blatter continued: “I will go to investigate this matter but I hope that old patriarch can be patient for a while. I know that the living conditions aren’t good in here so I’ll try everything to get you out as soon as possible!”

George looked at him: “You don’t understand… It’s not just about my reputation but the honor of Mel family and the whole Mellon consortium! You are telling me to live here for a few more days… It’s a prison damn it! This place a prison! Does it look like a place to live?”

“But … but …”

“A day!” George took a deep breath and continued in a cold tone: “I will give you only one day! If you can’t resolve this problem in one day then inform Mr Meyers and Mutton to negotiate with the military!”

Blatter and Bishop Parker’s face changed. Bishop Parker said: “Old patriarch you have to think twice about the situation. It’s not just you but the patriarch of Rostov family who were arrested too. You can’t engage in negotiations at this point or you will completely anger the military! The military should have some evidence in their hands or they wouldn’t arrest you just because of the words of a barbarian!”

George was slightly startled: “How did the Scott consortium react? Is Chai still in here?”

Blatter's face turned ugly: "I-I just heard that Mr Chai Rostov seems to be bailed out.. "

"What?!" George stared at him as he thought he had heard it wrong: "Both of us were arrested but he was bailed out?! Why is it that he can be bailed out but I have to continue to stay in here?"

Bishop Parker intervened: "Old Patriarch Scott consortium was in the same shoes as Mellon consortium. However they seem to have close connection with master Dean. The military let him out to give face to the master. The reason why you are still kept in here was mostly because of your relations with master Dean. Moreover Fulin from the Ryan family also testified that Mellon consortium had secretly tried to frame master Dean..."

George suddenly coughed up as he stared at both of them. He reached out his hand to cover his mouth but there was blood between his fingers.

"Old patriarch!"

Bishop Parker and Blatter rushed out.

George raised his other hand to stop them. He used the back of his hand to wipe the blood off his mouth. He whispered: "I have ruled over commercial district for decades! I would never imagine in my wildest dreams that I would be toyed around by a 16 year old boy at the age of 72... A master...A genius...Haha..."

He turned towards Bishop Parker: “I don’t care about anything! Get the soldiers ready and go to war with the military if they don’t want to negotiate! I don’t think that they will be that tough after the action is taken!”

Bishop Parker anxiously replied: “Old patriarch in that case the future of the consortium will be bleak!”

George stared back at him: “If I don’t get out now then there is no future for the consortium! There are bloodthirsty tigers out there! Do you think the other consortia are sheep?”

…

Dudian put on his hunter armor and looked at the mirror to check himself.

Gwyneth and Sergei followed after him.

“Master, are you going out?” Kroen asked in haste.

Dudian commanded: “Prepare the horses! I’m going to the military’s HQ!”

“Yes.”

After moments the horse was ready outside the castle.

Dudian went out and saw hundreds of figures hidden behind the bushes. They were the elite troops sent to protect him. If they were used perfectly in the battlefield then they would have played a great effect. However at this point they were acting as his bodyguards. It showed how afraid the military was because of his safety.

He looked up at the clear blue sky. The dark clouds had retreated and the sun shined down the earth.

Dudian smiled as he hoped onto the horse.

The sky was vast. However he saw a giant black shadow passing through the sky.

He had seen such a thing many times before but never have thought about it. He looked at Reid who was next to him: “Colonel, what kind of bird is that?”

Reid looked up and smiled: “Master, that’s not a bird. It is a dragon! Normally we can see them only in the black snow season.”

“Dragon?” Dudian looked at the shadow: “How come I have never heard of dragons attacking the people of the outer wall?”

Reid laughed: “Master, the dragons don’t hurt humans but bless us!”